



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 11

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001 - The Advancement to the Fifth Grade

Inside the Great Illusion Realm, Sang Ba had gone completely crazy. He was entirely trapped in his own illusion, and instead of escaping he was getting deeper and deeper into it. There was a new enemy ahead of him, but it was just a virtual existence. His real enemy was just watching him leisurely from a close distance, as if watching the show of a monkey.

“It’s time to end this.”

In a flash, he appeared before Sang Ba. The scary long sword rippled and slashed at Sang Ba’s direction. It was an absolute kill. Given Sang Ba’s current state, there was no way that he could avoid it.

“Stop!”

At this moment, there was a burst of shout coming from the Devil World. Then, a black column rushed toward the void and turned into a dark clad man who looked like 40 years old. The infinite devil flames portrayed his profound cultivation level and unshakable status in the Devil Race.

He was a mighty Ninth Grade Devil Saint, which was also called a ‘Super’ Devil Saint of the Devil Race. Due to Sang Ba being a rare genius that hardly appeared every 1,000 years and the inheritor of the Great Devil Curse, he couldn’t allow anything bad to happen on him. In other words, Sang Ba was important to the Devil Race just as Jiang Chen to Gu Palace. They were both the future of their races.

However, Gu Firmament appeared right after the appearance of the Ninth Grade Devil Saint, blocking the devil. He had been watching the movements of the devil experts. He could never give them a single chance to stop the killing.

“Is the expert of the Devil Race trying to interfere in the duel of the young generation?”

A sneer was plastered on Gu Firmament’s face. If Jiang Chen killed Sang Ba, it would help him restore his face and the reputation of the Gu Palace.

“Argh...”

Underneath, a shrill wail sounded. Sang Ba’s head was severed by Jiang Chen’s slash. The desperate Ninth Grade Devil Saint was restrained by Gu Firmament. There was nothing that he could do to prevent this, Sang Ba’s death was destined and an inevitable outcome.

“Dammit!”

The Ninth Grade Devil Saint was infuriated upon seeing the situation. Immediately, he launched a horrifying attack to Jiang Chen. Gu Firmament similarly struck out an attack to meet the devil’s strike, thus starting a new intense battle.

Jiang Chen who was underneath them ignored their battle. He was very interested in Sang Ba’s corpse. Since Sang Ba had devoured Narang Yu and Gu Shuangtan earlier, he would return the favour by using the same method. The shapeless Ancestral Dragon Pagoda opened and swallowed Sang Ba in an instant.

The essence and energy inside Sang Ba’s body was comparable to a powerful peak Seventh Grade Great Saint expert. Plus, Sang Ba’s physique consisted of overwhelming talent and potential. After Sang Ba’s corpse was completely refined, the 4th level was fully condensed and 30 percent of the 5th level was formed.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had 99 levels, and the condensation of the next level was always harder than the previous. Jiang Chen could clearly feel that the current level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was a lot stronger than before, whether it was in the aspect of firmness or the other.

Refining Sang Ba not only helped Jiang Chen condense a portion of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, but also brought a great deal of benefits to him. One hundred more dragon marks had been condensed, enhancing his combat strength further. With his present cultivation, he could easily kill any Seventh Grade Great Saint and it wouldn't be impossible for him to kill an Eighth Grade Great Saint in his half-dragon form.

After that, he joined the people of Gu Palace instead of finding Tyrant and Han Yan. At this time, he must set aside the relationship between him and them. He couldn't leave even a slightest bit of clue to the six major palaces.

In a distance, away from the battlefield, the devil expert had been in a fierce battle with Gu Firmament. He got angrier when he saw that Jiang Chen had already completely absorbed Sang Ba's corpse, however, he understood that it was virtually impossible to take revenge on Jiang Chen today.

"Brat. I have already locked on your Qi. I will kill you sooner or later!" said the devil expert ruthlessly.

Instead of getting entangled in the battle with Gu Firmament, he turned into a gust of devil wind and vanished.

Facing such threat, Jiang Chen laughed casually, as if it didn't concern him at all. His current appetite had surely grown bigger this time. Not just Sang Ba, but also the entire Devil Race had become his target, to nourish his cultivation and to condense the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He already knew that the world would soon be in chaos the moment Desolate Palace initiated their secret plan. The rebellion of the Devil Race provided him the best and only opportunity to raise his cultivation to a higher level.

Gu Firmament came before Jiang Chen and praised him, saying, "Gu Chen, you did a good job today. Not only did you restore the dignity of our race, but also greatly enhanced our morale and thwarted the Devil Race's arrogance. As such, take these two

Immortal Pills as your reward.”

In the presence of all the higher ups of Saint Origin Palace, Gu Firmament handed two Immortal Pills to Jiang Chen. Currently, Gu Firmament was really overjoyed, Jiang Chen had earned Gu Palace a high prestige and status in Saint Origin Palace. Besides, the fact that Jiang Chen got the two Immortal Pills instead of the other geniuses also delighted him.

Furthermore, he knew how powerful these two Immortal Pills were. Given Jiang Chen’s present cultivation base, it wouldn’t be a problem for him to advance to the Fifth Grade Great Saint after refining the two Immortal Pills.

“Thank you, Palace Master.”

Naturally, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be overly polite. He immediately accepted the two Immortal Pills. To him, this was truly an unexpected reward as he had no idea that there was such a reward before he fought Sang Ba, which was undoubtedly good now that he desperately needed to advance. A few days ago, he advanced to the Fourth Grade Great Saint after consuming the Immortal Yang Pill of Desolate Changfeng. Although the Immortal Pill might not be as effective compared to the first time he consumed it, there were still two Immortal Pills this time. Therefore, he had absolute certainty that he could break through into the fifth grade.

“Don’t thank me. This is what you deserve. As I’ve said before, whoever can kill Sang Be will be rewarded with two Immortal Pills,” said Gu Firmament.

Everyone’s eyes fell upon the scene with envy and hate. All of them knew how precious an Immortal Pill was. So, they figured that Gu Firmament, who seemed very delighted in giving the two Immortal Pills, didn’t consider other people’s feelings at all.

Of course, those who had the pang of envy right now was the group of peak Sixth Grade Great Saint geniuses. Seeing the two Immortal Pills in Jiang Chen’s hands, their eyes blazed with a

feeling that was greater than envy.

“Motherf*cker! Those are two Immortal Pills. This guy is really lucky. If those pills were given to me, my cultivation base will improve dramatically, breaking through into the seventh grade. It’s such a pity...”

“It’s such a pity? Could you kill that Sang Ba? Gu Chen got what he deserved since he killed him. I have to say that Gu Chen is truly abnormal. He has such a powerful combat strength despite being only a Fourth Grade Great Saint. Even Desolate Changfeng was killed by him, meaning that none of us is a match for him. Besides, he is going to advance to the fifth grade after absorbing those two Immortal Pills. By then, he will no doubt become number one genius amongst the young generation of Saint Origin Palace, outshining every one of us.”

“I will never reconcile myself to that. I will try my hardest this time in the war against the Devil Race to improve myself.”

“Agreed. However, Gu Chen killing Sang Ba has aroused the notice of the devil experts. The battlefield is going to be extremely dangerous and it’s not favourable to us.”

.....

All these geniuses were incomparably arrogant people. None of them would admit defeat. The fact that a newcomer was stronger than them had naturally made them envy.

The geniuses of Gu Palace, however, reacted differently. Ever since the incident that Gu Chen created in Gu Palace, all of them had become harmoniously united. There was no distinction between the outer and inner palace anymore. Gu Chen’s status in Gu Palace had risen to the first class position, almost surpassing the position of the virtuous elders. Today, by killing Sang Ba, Gu Chen had earned Gu Palace the highest glory. So, they, as members of Gu Palace, would naturally become proud of themselves.

The gloomiest group was the people from Desolate Palace, especially Desolate Wuleng. He felt the Qi and blood in his body weren't circulating properly and had the feeling to cough up blood, he really felt extremely frustrated. He had never thought that given his status and identity, and by putting so much effort in eliminating a mere junior, he would still fail in the process. This time, it was he who took the initiative to suggest Gu Chen in fighting Sang Ba. Now that Gu Chen had killed Sang Ba, he had nothing else to say.

“Damn this bastard! He has gotten two Immortal Pills. He'll definitely advance again and will become harder to deal. I'm afraid that by then I will no longer be his opponent. We have to think of ways to prevent him from growing rapidly.” Desolate Wuleng gritted his teeth and said.

“Don't worry. Our palace has been nurturing great killing weapons in secret. I think it's time for them to reveal themselves. You know, it's not easy to hold the title of the first genius of the young generation. We will show him what a true genius is.”

Desolate Emperor had a cold smirk all over his face. The peerless geniuses who were secretly developed by Desolate Palace had never shown themselves. No one knew how powerful and terrifying they were. These geniuses had been receiving the nourishment of the Immortal Qi for years and were raised by Immortals. It was conceivable that they would certainly be some kind of terrifying weapon.

Rumble...

In a few minutes' time, a strong wave of Qi surged out of Jiang Chen's body. The effect of the two Immortal Pills were too strong. It helped Jiang Chen condensed 900 dragon marks in this short period of time, hitting the total of 88,000 dragon marks and thus, breaking into the Fifth Grade Great Saint.

Chapter 1002 - Replacing the Abbot

Gu Chen advancing to Fifth Grade Great Saint was expected. But to the geniuses, it had caused a psychological impact on them. Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled and his face brimmed with excitement. As he had not expected to be given two Immortal Pills, his advancement to the Fifth Grade Great Saint was also an unexpected breakthrough.

When he was a Fourth Grade Great Saint, he was powerful enough to kill Seventh Grade Great Saints, and also an Eighth Grade Great Saint in his half-dragon form. After advancing to the Fifth Grade of the Great Saint realm, he need not the half-dragon form to kill an Eighth Grade Great Saint opponent. In other words, except those mighty Ninth Grade Great Saints, none of the higher ups of Saint Origin Palace could match him. If he transformed, he could even kill Eighth Grade Great Saints as easy as killing a dog.

Nevertheless, if he confronted a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint, he would be no match for the opponent even if he transformed. Every level in the Great Saint realm had a huge gap, particularly the gap between the Eighth and the Ninth grade. The Ninth Grade of Great Saint realm had always been regarded the Super Great Saint because even a powerful Eighth Grade Great Saint was merely an ant in front of a Ninth Grade.

As such, Ninth Grade Great Saints were the true superior beings in the Saint Origin World and also the true Great Saints. Regardless of how monstrous Jiang Chen was, it wasn't easy for him to kill a true Great Saint. Even if he transformed, his must need to be at least a Sixth Grade Great Saint to kill a Super Great Saint like Desolate Emperor.

If he wanted do it without the half-dragon form, he needed to at least advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint. At the moment, he was merely the strongest cultivator below Ninth Grade of Great Saint realm. So, it was imperative that he advance to the Sixth

Grade. By then, his identity no longer needed to be concealed as none of the palace masters would be a threat to him anymore. He would, however, have one enemy—Desolate Palace. Therefore, it was no longer an issue whether he was representing the identity of Gu Chen or Jiang Chen.

“Great, this is great!”

Gu Zheng’s face was filled with smile like a blooming plant. Seeing Gu Chen getting stronger exhilarated him and every expert of Gu Palace. All of them felt greatly honoured to have such a rare being appear in Gu Palace, which helped them establish a strong position in Saint Origin Palace.

“People, now that Gu Chen has killed Sang Ba and helped boost the morale of our race, let’s talk about our next move in the war. What should we do next?”

Gu Firmament looked over at the crowd and started the discussion without wanting to return to the main hall of Great Lightning Tune Temple.

“Isn’t that obvious? In my opinion, we have to take advantage of this period of their weak morale by striking them. Though it is impossible to annihilate the entire Demon Race, at least we can force them back to the Devil World.”

“That’s right. Since all of people of Saint Origin Palace have come to fight the war, we have to show the imposing demeanour of Saint Origin Palace. Let’s make a concerted effort to eliminate the entire Devil Race. In this way, we will fortify the position of Saint Origin Palace in other people’s heart.”

“Agreed. We have to strike them when their morale is at its lowest. This is the right time of eliminating them.”

.....

Discussions and comments were heard. The majority of them suggested launching an attack to the Devil Race immediately, just

like hitting the iron while it was hot. There would be a bloody war between the two races anyway, and the war had been put on hold for several days. So, it was necessary to attack the Devil Race now, to force them back into their lands. Otherwise, it would wane the morale of Human Race if the devil army continued occupying half of the land of Western Domain.

“Gu Chen, what do you think?”

Gu Firmament looked over at Gu Chen.

“From my point of view, I would say, we don’t have to rush the attack,” said Jiang Chen.

“Is this some kind of joke? We have already gained the upper hand. There’s no reason to be inactive.” Narang Yunhe said sneeringly.

“I said that we don’t have to rush the attack, instead of not attacking at all. In fact, we don’t have to attack at all. If my estimation is right, the devil army will launch an all-out attack in at most half an hour’s time,” said Jiang Chen.

“You are boasting without shame. How do you know the devil army is going to attack? With their current morale, they surely won’t attack.”

Desolate Wuleng let out a cold humph. By just seeing Jiang Chen made him feel incomparably uncomfortable, let alone hearing Jiang Chen’s voice.

“The Devil Race isn’t like the Human Race. They are a vicious race. The death of Sang Ba won’t reduce the morale of the devils in a short period of time. It will only drive them crazy because the death of the genius also meant the Great Devil Curse is gone. So, in this short period of time, instead of having low morale, their morale reached the peak. So, I am sure that in at most half an hour, the devil army will attack us. What we need now is to be prepared for it,” said Jiang Chen in a resolute and confident tone.

It was a mistake if these people were the ones anticipating the Devil Race's moves.

"How do you know that? I guess what you said are all just speculation." Someone said.

Hong Long...

But as soon as this man's voice drop, the void in the direction of the Devil World burst into a large opening. Powerful devil waves rushed out. It felt as if those were the Qi of several Super Devil Saint. The devil waves spread across, encompassing half of the Western Domain.

"It seems Gu Chen was right. The morale of the devil army didn't weaken, on the contrary, their fighting spirit are ignited. But ours aren't weak either. We have to be prepared when they attack. This time, we can't allow the war to spread across the Western Domain," said Gu Firmament, praising Jiang Chen in his heart because not even them were able to analyse the combat nature of Devil Race.

This was enough to show that Jiang Chen was a man with audacity and shrewdness instead of being a combat freak.

Desolate Emperor and Desolate Wuleng changed their impression of Jiang Chen again. Their desire to kill Jiang Chen had raised to a new peak. They couldn't deny that Jiang Chen was a rare genius that hardly appeared in 10, 000 years. He was a genius with not only heaven defying combat strength but also wisdom. A person like him was the scariest, and would become a great figure in the future, and a greater threat to them. Given the ambitious plan Desolate Palace had, if it wasn't for the disruption of the Devil Race, they would've already executed their plan.

Howl... *Howl...* *Howl...*

Howls of devils reverberated as billowy devil Qi obscured the sky in an instant. Large number of devils—among them was roughly a

dozen of Super Devil Saints—began to drift out.

“All fellow Ninth Grade Great Saints, we will fight these devils together. The rest of you, follow the commands of Gu Zheng as he is representing me now,” said Gu Firmament.

Then, he flew towards those Super Devil Saints. Simultaneously, the other Ninth Grade Great Saints followed. In a matter of blinks, all the Super Great Saint in Great Lightning Tune Temple had left, leaving only Eighth Grade Great Saint experts and below.

Both Gu Zheng and Desolate Wuleng were peak Eighth Grade Great Saints. But due to Gu Palace was taking charge in the Law Enforcement Palace, it was logical that Gu Zheng would take the place of Gu Firmament.

Hong Long...

An intense battle was immediately started between the Super Great Saints of Devil Race and Saint Origin Palace, creating a battlefield outside the domain and turning the sky dark. It seemed impossible to determine the result in such short time. Naturally, the Ninth Grade Great Saints of Saint Origin Palace weren't as many, but if they did have the same number of Ninth Grade Great Saints as the Devil Race, the Super Devil Saints would lose. Anyhow, this war would be treated as a tough training for Saint Origin Palace after 100 years of enjoyment, particularly for the juniors.

“Gu Chen, what do you think we should do next?”

Gu Zheng looked at Jiang Chen. Gu Firmament had given the authority to him. Judging by his expression, it seemed as if he was going to pass the authority to Jiang Chen.

“No doubt we are going to fight them hard. The following war will be very intense. In my opinion, the cultivators of Western Domain have suffered plenty of injuries in the previous battles. They should rest now while the high-ranked monks of Great

Lightning Tune Temple should join the front line.”

Jiang Chen turned to the abbot, whom he was not in favour of.

“Gu Chen, the Buddha Sect almost lost its defences against the ferocious and powerful devil army. We are going to suffer tremendous loss if we were placed at the front line,” said the abbot.

“Humph! Great Monk Fang Zhang, you Buddha Sect always emphasizes in saving all sentient beings, which makes you all the main force against the devil army. In the Western Domain, who doesn’t know the reputation of your Great Lightning Tune Temple? Putting aside whether you can suppress the devil army or not, you all have asked for the help of Saint Origin Palace but hidden yourself in the temple, refused to support the cultivators in the other regions of Western Domain and totally wasn’t concerned about their lives. Even now you are still receding when you are asked to fight in the front lines? This isn’t supposed to be the way the Buddha Sect handles such matters. Alright then, I don’t need you all to fight in the front lines. Instead, I want you all to suppress them.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. Due to the extreme hate he had for them, he naturally wouldn’t let go of the chance of returning the favour to Great Lightning Tune Temple.

“What are you talking about? Are you sending us all to death? We will never follow your commands as you don’t have the right to command us. In this war, everyone has to participate instead of asking us to go there on our own.”

The abbot was extremely infuriated. If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen making a great contribution of killing Sang Ba, he would’ve started a feud with him at once. What Jiang Chen suggested was not asking them to fight the war, but asking them to die in the war.

“Let me tell you this, old man. It’s not up to you to deny my orders. If you do not agree, I will immediately get a new abbot to

replace you.”

A cold smile appeared on his face. He didn't mind if he was getting strong opposition from the Great Lightning Tune Temple as Tyrant had become the strongest among the Buddha Sect of Western Domain, therefore, putting an end to the glorious Great Lightning Tune Temple.

Chapter 1003 - The Monkeys Reign when There Are No Tigers in the Mountain

Clamour

The remark was out of Gu Zheng's expectation, and instantaneously caused an uproar. Everyone's eyes fell upon Gu Chen. Now that the devil army were on their way, they were supposed to stay united. No one had thought that Gu Chen would verbally attack the Great Lightning Tune Temple at this moment.

One should know that even if the Buddha Sect had declined in power, the Great Lightning Tune Temple still symbolized the Buddha Sect, and even Saint Origin Palace had to show them respect. Gu Firmament and Desolate Emperor wouldn't even dare demand replacing the abbot.

"Gu Chen, don't go too far. You have no right to give orders here. Our temple represents the Buddha Sect and you can't just find someone to replace our abbot as you please." A high-ranked monk from the Great Lightning Tune Temple was angered, pointing his finger at Gu Chen and yelled.

"I'm sorry to say, but I am the one in charge here. I now speak on behalf of Gu Palace. Currently, our great enemy is just ahead of us. Every one of you has to obey my commands."

Gu Chen showed a stern disposition. Knowing that the Great Lightning Tune Temple had always wanted to eliminate the Greenlotus Mountain, he would exploit this opportunity to get rid of them and allow the Greenlotus Mountain to gain control over the Buddha Sect in Western Domain. He believed that Tyrant would one day restore the glory of Buddha Sect.

"What if this old man says no?" The abbot said angrily.

The Great Lightning Tune Temple was a magnificent and important existence in Western Domain. So how could it allow one

young man to command them?

“You don’t have the right to say no.”

Cold light sparkled in Jiang Chen’s eyes. In the blink of an eye, he came before the abbot, and then clutched the abbot’s neck in lightning speed. The peak Seventh Grade Great Saint monk didn’t even have the chance to resist before he was held firmly by Jiang Chen.

“What are you doing?”

Sensing the power of the youth in front, the abbot’s facial expression changed dramatically. He had to admit that he wasn’t this young man’s opponent if they fought. Also, he somehow knew that this young man could straightaway kill him if he wanted to. However, he did not believe that this young man would dare to kill him in the middle of a war, and considering how much he had contributed to Buddha Sect.

“Gu Chen, don’t be presumptuous. We of Saint Origin Palace have never been involved in the matter of Buddha Sect. Besides, the devil army is going to strike any second now. Can you afford to bear the consequences of creating an internal strife now?” Desolate Wuleng bellowed.

Many experts of Saint Origin Palace were getting a little annoyed by Jiang Chen’s action. They were clueless of why he would go against Great Lightning Tune Temple at such critical moment as it was forbidden in a war. Given Jiang Chen’s wisdom and intelligence, it was impossible that he wasn’t aware of this fact.

All the experts of Gu Palace were also confused, not knowing Jiang Chen’s true intention. However, Gu Zheng didn’t speak anything about it. He believed that Jiang Chen wasn’t a reckless person and had his own principles in doing things.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had said that he was speaking on behalf of Gu Palace. So if Gu Zheng stood in his way at this time, it

wouldn't be good to Jiang Chen, it's like denying his status in Gu Palace.

“Consequences? I am doing this for the sake of Buddha Sect. The Buddha Sect today is no longer the Buddha Sect that vows to save all sentient beings in the past. The Great Lightning Tune Temple has become greedy and the Buddha nature inside of them were getting weaker day by day. They are now merely a group of shaved-head people. The higher ups were also the reason that the Great Lightning Tune Temple has deteriorated into such an extent today. The war against the Devil Race is the best chance to change Buddha Sect. I'm replacing the abbot now to help the Buddha Sect rise,” said Gu Chen sternly and with a sense of justice.

Then, a tremendous force was exerted in his palm. Along with a cracking sound, the abbot's neck was snapped, ending the vital force in his body.

Wah...

Everyone was very shocked at the scene. None of them thought that such an event would occur. They were currently facing a great war, however Gu Chen had killed the abbot even before the war begun. This act was undoubtedly too arrogant. Looking at Gu Chen's posture right now, it showed that he was disdainful of the whole world.

It was the first time in the history of Buddha Sect that an abbot was killed before the Great Lightning Tune Temple. Across the entire Saint Origin World, they were afraid that there was only one man who could do this—Gu Chen.

“Abbot!!!” Some high-ranked monks roared.

Their red eyes glared at Gu Chen and bellowed, “Gu Chen, you devil! You are even more ferocious than the devils! Killing our abbot before our enemy will severely dampen our morale. Your action has made the relationship between Buddha Sect and you irreconcilable.”

“Irreconcilable? Then you are worthy of dying together with him.”

Without adding another word, he struck the monk's neck, causing an instant death. This was Gu Chen's style of action, it's either he do it with all of his might or not take action at all. Considering the fact that the Great Lightning Tune Temple had offended him, it was inevitable that they would face such an outcome.

“Who else wants to protest? I, Gu Chen, demand anyone from the Great Lightning Tune Temple who doesn't agree with my commands stand out because I will kill you one after another. Even if I have to annihilate the entire Great Lightning Tune Temple, I won't show any sympathy to you all. I can still fight the Devil Race even without your help.”

Jiang Chen's eyes swept across the crowd of those high-ranked monks, like a sharp blade that caused them to shiver. They felt angry inside but didn't dare to express it out because this young devil king was too fierce and domineering. He already killed two people right after he took the command. They wouldn't doubt that if they stood up against him at this time, they would meet the same end.

“Gu Chen, what are you doing? Do you think that there's no one who can control you when our palace masters are gone? The person in command right now is Gu Zheng. You don't have the right to show off your powers. By killing the abbot and a high-ranked monk of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, you have confused the people's thoughts, you are no different than the Devil Race!” Desolate Wuleng said, his eyes widened.

Many experts of Saint Origin Palace started to reject Gu Chen's actions, thinking that what Gu Chen did was wild and reckless.

“Old bastard. Who do you think you are? It's not up to you to tell what Gu Palace will do. Do you believe that I won't kill you as

well?”

Jiang Chen looked at Desolate Wuleng. His tone naturally didn't show any respect to him. As he had just advanced to the Fifth Grade Great Saint, killing Desolate Wuleng would just be a piece of cake.

There was a classic saying that fitted this situation: The monkeys reign when there are no tigers in the mountain. Jiang Chen had gone wild as soon as Gu Firmament and the other Ninth Grade Great Saints left. To Jiang Chen, this was indeed a great opportunity. None of them were his opponent. As such, it was the time to show his power.

“Exceedingly arrogant. I am going to cut this maniac myself!”

Desolate Wuleng raged, immediately striking out a palm toward Jiang Chen. Gu Zheng wanted to block it but found that Jiang Chen had already moved.

Pa!

A clear sound of a slap rang. Everyone could see that Desolate Wuleng was sent a few dozen meters away from his original spot. His face was left with a very obvious palm print.

Hiss...

A lot of experts took a deep breath of cold air. Everyone on the scene were experts with sharp eyesight, they naturally knew what had happened just now. The Eighth Grade Great Saint, Desolate Wuleng, attacked but was slapped by Gu Chen instead, which was kind of humiliating.

Looking at another angle, Jiang Chen was too strong that even Desolate Wuleng was no match for him. Logically, this gave him the right to be arrogant. Now that all the Ninth Grade Great Saints were gone, no one else here would be able to suppress Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1004 - Super Powerful

“Damn! Why is he so strong?”

Desolate Wuleng's face darkened. In addition to the slap he received from Gu Chen, he also felt shocked. He always wanted to get rid of Gu Chen and had never put this young genius in his eyes, but today, he found out that he was no longer the opponent of Gu Chen. That kind of psychological blow was unbearable to most ordinary people.

“Old bastard, if you step in my way again, I will be the first to kill you.”

Jiang Chen glared at Desolate Wuleng. Initially, he wanted to kill Desolate Wuleng but his opponent was a peak Eighth Grade Great Saint after all and he had just advanced to the fifth grade. If he wanted to eliminate this old man without the dragon transformation, it would require a lot of effort.

Moreover, the great enemy was just ahead of them; it was inappropriate to wage war on one's own ally. So now, he would let Desolate Wuleng live a little longer. Once he had the chance, he would definitely kill him.

Desolate Wuleng had gone really mad. Given his identity and status, he had never been scolded by a junior before. However, he was smart enough to know that he had to endure such humiliation, he understood that Gu Chen was a ruthless man that had already grown to a terrifying extent. If he continued to provoke him, it was highly possible that he would die in vain, just like the monks of the Great Lightning Tune Temple. As to getting rid of Gu Chen, he would need to find another way later.

The people of Gu Palace were pleasantly surprised. Jiang Chen's rate of growth was just too fast, faster than their expectation. They were incomparably relieved when Jiang Chen slapped Desolate Wuleng. Presently, Gu Zheng had a smile plastered on his face and

still remained silent. This was a world dominated by strength. Whoever was stronger would have the right to give the orders. Although Gu Firmament had given Gu Zheng the command, he tacitly approved Jiang Chen replacing him.

The experts of the other palaces didn't speak a word. They were smart enough to see the situation clearly. They better not offend Gu Chen this time, especially when he just slapped Desolate Wuleng. No one was not afraid of this young genius whose power rose constantly. Putting aside his cultivation base and strength, his methods were already enough to frighten them all. The impression they had on him right now wasn't merely in his strength. It was his ruthlessness and ferocious means. He would kill as he pleased regardless of what occasion he was in or who his opponent was. Someone like him was the scariest and most difficult to deal with.

A single man managed to shock them all, the kind of shock that carried fear. Seeing that no one dared to speak anymore, Jiang Chen looked at Tyrant in the distance and shouted. "Young monk, come over here for a talk!"

After hearing this, Tyrant, Great Monk Ran Feng and Han Yan, as well as Yan Chenyu, flew over immediately. They had seen what happened here clearly. Though they had grown accustomed to Jiang Chen's dominance, the killing of the abbot and a high-ranked monk of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, and slapping an elder of Desolate Palace were extremely satisfying, particularly to Tyrant, he had disliked the Great Lightning Tune Temple for a long time now.

Han Yan had fully comprehended the Great Devil Curse. In less than two days, he would be able to advance to the sixth grade of Great Saint realm. Both he and Tyrant were also getting stronger and were now almost unbeatable amongst the young generation of Saint Origin World.

"Young monk, are you interested in taking charge of the Great Lightning Tune Temple?" Jiang Chen said with a smile, sounding

as if the Great Lightning Tune Temple had already fallen into his hands.

In fact, he had enough power to decide who would take charge of the temple right now, even without discussing it to the monks of the temple.

“What qualities and abilities do I have to take charge of the Great Lightning Tune Temple?” said Tyrant, expressing the modesty of a monk.

“There is no need to be humble, young monk. With your current strength, you are eligible enough to be called the number one monk in Buddha Sect. Plus, you are the descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus. Everyone in the Buddha Sect knows about the reputation of Ancestor Greenlotus. You are the best candidate to take charge of Buddha Sect of Western Domain. I hope that Buddha Sect will flourish in your hands and restore it to the height it once reached,” said Jiang Chen.

“In that case, this monk won’t refuse it.”

Tyrant didn’t try to push the offer anymore. All these years, Greenlotus Mountain had been oppressed by the Great Lightning Tune Temple. Now that the day the tables had turned , he naturally wouldn’t decline this chance. Ever since the deterioration of Buddha Sect, it only got worse year after year. As a genius of Buddha Sect, if he could revive it and bring it back to its former glory, it would be a magnificent feat, and this was what he desired the most.

The high-ranked monks of the Great Lightning Tune Temple wanted to opine, but did not do so in the end. They were fooled by fate. Over the years, Greenlotus Mountain had been under their supervision and control, but now, a young monk of that place was taking over the place of the abbot. They were unsure of how this young monk would treat them.

The rest of them didn’t say anything either when this young

monk replaced the abbot of the Great Lightning Tune Temple. Like Jiang Chen said, the descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus is naturally qualified to control Buddha Sect. Moreover, the young monk had already shown his strength, even the Seventh Grade Great Saint monks of the Great Lightning Tune Temple weren't his match.

Howl... Howl... Howl...

Devil waves rushed out as the devil army approached the Great Lightning Tune Temple. The war would break out at any moment.

"Young monk, lead the Great Lightning Tune Temple to the front lines. Buddha Sect has to use this opportunity to transform itself." Jiang Chen said.

"Okay."

Tyrant's combat intent billowed up to the sky. He became high spirited looking at the oncoming devils. This time, Buddha Sect must transform itself.

"All the people of Great Lightning Tune Temple, listen up! Follow my lead to eliminate the devils and raise the prestige of Buddha Sect!"

Tyrant roared at the direction of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, and then rushed first towards the devil army. Han Yan and Yan Chenyu followed. This was the main battlefield of Han Yan, so he wouldn't miss such a great opportunity to improve himself.

"People of Saint Origin Palace. Follow me to slaughter the devil army. Today, we will hit them so hard that they can't return to the Devil World anymore!"

Jiang Chen's body was filled with golden light of dominance from top to bottom, making him look like an invincible War God. After witnessing his overbearing means, no one in Saint Origin Palace dared disobey his commands. Moreover, the devil army was

just ahead of them. It was necessary for every expert to join the war.

Desolate Wuleng was looking at the back of Gu Chen, getting more and more suspicious of Gu Chen's identity.

“That young monk and the other two were also friends of Jiang Chen. Gu Chen has killed the abbot of the Great Lightning Tune Temple just for the sake of that young monk. The two of them must have an extraordinary relationship. Besides, Jiang Chen didn't appear in this war. It is very likely that both of them are the same person. I have to find a way to eliminate him quickly. I'll send a message to Desolate Palace now, urging the hidden peerless geniuses to come to Western Domain and kill this man now.”

Desolate Wuleng's eyes sparkled with a cold light. He now felt even more certain about Jiang Chen and Gu Chen's identity. If he wanted to eliminate Jiang Chen this time, he needed the help of the secret geniuses, because none of them here could match Jiang Chen. Furthermore, the Ninth Grade Great Saints had gone to deal with the Super Devil Saints. If Jiang Chen was allowed to continue growing, the threat that they would face in the future would be immeasurable.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen wasn't as concerned about his cover like before. His current cultivation base was enough to cope with plenty of things.

Chapter 1005 - Eliminating the Eighth Grade Devil Saint

Howl... *Howl...*

Frenzied devils attacked from everywhere fiercely. It was like what Jiang Chen had expected, instead of reducing the morale of the devil army, Sang Ba's death had ignited their fury and ferocity.

The monks had entered the war zone where the devil army dominated. Devil waves billowed and rolled in the sky. Tyrant was leading his team of monks to the front line. Using his three supreme Dharma Seals, he killed each and every devil that was on his way.

As the monks were following the lead of Tyrant in the warfare, they slowly felt the glory days of Buddha Sect coming back. Back in the day when Buddha Sect was at its peak, the monks were undefeated against the Devil Race and all of the devils were suppressed intensely. At that time, Buddha Sect was enough to control the entire Devil World, unlike now where they had to hastily ask for the help of Saint Origin Palace the moment the devil race attacked the Western Domain. As disciples of Buddha Sect, they felt extremely humiliated by such action.

Tyrant's formidable power made them see the bearing of Buddha Sect once more, and also the hope and future of their sect. They gradually forgot the scene of the abbot being killed in their minds. Their combat strength began to soar and their Buddha Light rose to the sky, creating a suppressive effect on the devils.

There was a reason for everything that Jiang Chen did. The killing of the abbot in the middle of a war did not negatively affect the Human Race. The Buddha Sect would only shine again when it was in the hands of Tyrant. In addition, the disciples of Buddha Sect would only flourish after going through a life-or-death trial.

As such, this war would be the key to their transformation; Western Domain itself was the symbol of Buddha Sect. Jiang Chen wasn't the only person who believed in this change. Now, plenty of the monk of the Great Lightning Tune Temple began to believe that under the leadership of Tyrant, Buddha Sect would once again return to its former peak. Also, they were convinced of the identity that Tyrant had—he was the descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus.

Although Ancestor Greenlotus was not a member of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, no one could become as influential as him and replace his position.

No one knew how many miles the battlefield had spread across the place. Jiang Chen was unimaginably fierce while charging into the devil army. Every wave of his hand was a storm that caused countless of devils to die. Even the powerful Sixth and Seventh Grade Devil Saints couldn't withstand his stormy attacks. Their huge bodies were shattered into dust on the spot. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda in his body was like a bottomless pit that would never get full. All the corpses of the devils were absorbed dry by the pagoda.

With the continuous absorption of energy, the rest of the 5th level of the pagoda was condensed. As for Jiang Chen, he obtained lots of benefits in the process, new dragon marks were forming every now and then. Each dragon mark that was condensed would enhance his combat strength by a little. To put it bluntly, while Jiang Chen was fighting, he was growing stronger and stronger. This type of growth was beyond anyone's imagination and no one could compare his advancement speed.

“Chief Mo Zun, he was the one who killed Sang Ba!” Above the devil army, someone pointed to Jiang Chen who had been killing back and forth on the battlefield, and said.

The devil called Mo Zun was a bald middle-aged man with a look of atrocity. His Qi was incomparably strong. His cultivation base had reached a terrifying extent, an Eighth Grade Devil Saint. Not

just any Eighth Grade Devil Saint but the peak of Eighth Grade Devil Saint.

“He is extremely conceited. He dares to charge into our army by himself. He’s truly a man who doesn’t know what death is. We will kill him to avenge Sang Ba’s death. It will deal the human army a great blow if they lose such a genius.” There was another Eighth Grade Devil Saint standing beside Mo Zun. His black eyes glinted with cold light and killing intent.

“Kill him,” said the Eighth Grade Devil Saint emotionlessly.

Swoosh!

As soon as his voice faded, the Eighth Grade Devil Saint vanished. The next moment, he appeared in front of Jiang Chen. Horrifying devil waves rippled out, encompassing Jiang Chen in an instant.

“Arrogant human brat! You are seeking death for coming here all by yourself! I would like to see how strong you really are.”

The Devil Saint changed into his true form in an instant. He opened his mouth that was three meters wide and released gusts of foul air, rushing down at Jiang Chen aggressively, seeming to devour him.

“Trying to devour me? I’m afraid you don’t have the teeth for that.”

Jiang Chen was fearless. With his present strength, dealing with an Eighth Grade Devil Saint wasn’t a difficult task anymore, he had the advantage of suppression. Frankly speaking, killing an Eighth Grade Devil Saint was much easier than killing Desolate Wuleng.

Clang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a long blood-red dragon. Every inch of the void that it passed cracked. The sword light was travelling at extreme speed. Countless sword Qi wove to form the Purest Yang net of swords. The Qi of the Purest Yang alone could suppress the devils to the maximum. Under such circumstance,

even a powerful Eighth Grade Devil Saint could not fully exert all of his powers.

Pu Chi!

A lot of devils around guessed that the sword light originated from hell. Initially, they thought that this human brat was certainly going to die while facing the Eighth Grade Devil Saint. They didn't think that this would be the outcome. That Devil Saint whose mouth was wide open was slashed into half, from its mouth to the back of its skull by the Heavenly Saint Sword. The devil's blood splattered, its stench was intense.

Howl...

That Eighth Grade Devil Saint roared angrily after being injured so severely. He wasn't dead yet, after all, he was a powerful Eighth Grade Devil Saint.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda hidden in Jiang Chen's body buzzed, and started to tremble intensely. Then it sucked the Eighth Grade Devil Saint and absorbed it, completing the condensation of the 5th level.

“This sure is satisfying.”

Jiang Chen felt exalted. Although he hadn't fully discovered the secrets and functions of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he knew very well that the more levels he could condense, the greater the benefits he would gain. He had obtained a huge benefit after the completion of the 5th level. A hundred new dragon marks were formed. He could feel that his essence and Qi grew a little, and his foundation was fortified again.

Originally, he wanted to use the Edifying Light to edify the Eighth Grade Devil Saint, but that might draw the attention of some people despite being deep in the enemy's camp. Moreover, he had lost much interest in edifying Eighth Grade Devil Saints. All

these devils should be treated as his nourishment. What he needed to do right now was to advance his cultivation to a powerful extent through this war, because getting rid of Desolate Palace with his current cultivation base was nothing more but a wishful thinking.

Chapter 1006 - The Sixth Level of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda

Clamour...

A clamour broke out from the surrounding devils all of a sudden. Their faces changed dramatically. They naturally knew that this was a horrifying young man or else he wouldn't have killed Sang Ba, but they couldn't imagine that this youth had reached such incredible extent that killing an Eighth Grade Devil Saint was just a matter of seconds.

As a matter of fact, it wasn't as easy for Jiang Chen to kill an Eighth Grade Great Saint without the dragon transformation. But dealing with devils was a completely different case. He possessed the natural advantage of suppression against the devils. So, any devil who encountered him would be doomed.

“Hahaha!”

Jiang Chen laughed aloud. Terrifying waves of Qi rushed towards and attacked all the devils around him. He was like a dragon in the ocean that its casual move could overturn a portion of the sea. He was unrivalled and no one could stop his attacks.

Wails were incessant, blood was splattered all over the place. Bunch of devils were dying miserably and powerlessly. It was a one-sided massacre. Jiang Chen now looked like the incarnation of the War God. If this continued at this rate, all the devils wouldn't be enough for him to slaughter.

“Chief Mo Zun, this man is overpowering. His cultivation method seems to have special suppression effect against us, even stronger than the suppression effect of Buddha Sect.”

The higher ups of the devil army changed their expression.

“We'll eliminate this man together.”

Mo Zun's expression changed as well, but he had a noble bloodline and powerful cultivation base, so he wasn't as scared. Furthermore, they had lots of experts with them. He didn't believe that they couldn't get rid just one human brat.

A black devil weapon rushed out of his head. It was a saw-tooth mace that illuminated black light and was covered with complicated devil marks that looked dreadful. He raised the mace high, and locked on Jiang Chen's Qi before he lunged ferociously at him.

At the same time, two other Eighth Grade Devil Saints attacked. Three attacks lunged at Jiang Chen at three different directions.

"You have come at the right time. All of you will become the nourishment for my advancement."

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered out seven-colored lights. Confronting the three powerful Eighth Grade Devil Saints didn't scare him, instead, it excited him tremendously. To him, these powerful Devil Saints were the high quality fuel for the condensation of the pagoda.

Of the three Eighth Grade Devil Saints, two of them were just sidekicks that could be instantly killed by Jiang Chen. The devil chief, however, was stronger as he had reached the peak of Eighth Grade Great Saint, which was only a step away from the Ninth Grade Great Saint. Moreover, the bloodline he possessed was higher than the others. In the Devil Race, the higher the bloodline, the greater the combat power.

Of course, even greater devil bloodline couldn't escape from the suppression of Jiang Chen's dragon transformation skill and True Dragon Fire as well as True Thunderfire. Ultimately, the devil would face the one outcome which was death.

Hong Long...

As the saw-tooth mace struck down, terrifying devil waves

turned into a stretch of mountain full of evil stench that shuddered people's soul. Without the half-dragon form, Jiang Chen decided not to meet this attack head-on. He used the Spatial Shift while the Flaming Wings materialized behind his back. Under the compounded effect of both abilities, he vanished in a swoosh, fleeing out of the range of the saw-tooth mace instantly.

In the next moment, he appeared before a sidekick Eighth Grade Devil Saint. Due to he was moving too fast, the Devil Saint didn't have time to respond. A slash of the Heavenly Saint Sword was made, cutting off the head of the Eighth Grade Devil Saint with a splash. An opening was stretched from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to swallow the corpse like food.

"What?!" Seeing the situation, the other sidekick Eighth Grade Devil Saint exclaimed. Without any delay, he turned and charged.

"You too are not my opponent," said Jiang Chen indifferently.

The surface of the Heavenly Saint Sword was covered with gold-red flames. One sword strike slashed away the devil weapon the devil was holding and another sword strike impaled his skull.

Bang!

Destructive force burst out of the sword and the skull of the Devil Saint exploded, turning into a mist of blood. The whole scene looked extremely gruesome and bloody. Every essence left in the dead Eighth Grade Devil Saint was absorbed by the pagoda in just an instant.

"Dammit! This man is only a Fifth Grade Great Saint but why is he so powerful?!"

The expression of the devil chief finally changed completely. He knew that he had underestimated this human brat from the very beginning. Two out of three were killed even if they were attacking him simultaneously. Where was fairness? Judging by the youth's ferocious look, he was afraid that he couldn't stand a chance in the

fight.

Swoosh!

That devil chief wasn't a fool. Knowing that he was no match for Jiang Chen, he might as well flee now, but Jiang Chen wouldn't give him such a chance. His Five Elemental Power Spheres spread out so fast it had fully encompassed the devil chief before he could run away.

By this time, there wasn't much Jiang Chen had to be concerned of anymore though he had exposed a lot of his skills. He wasn't worried that people would discover about his true identity either. Now that the battlefield was in chaos and he was located at the center of the devil army, his identity shouldn't be exposed even if he used some powerful skill.

“What a powerful domain! It can trap me!”

The devil chief felt a strong sense of danger after falling into the Five Elemental Power Spheres. He also felt as if he had fallen into the bottom of the valley.

“You attacked first, so why are you leaving now?”

Jiang Chen stood before the devil chief holding the sword; his body was filled with dense killing intent.

“Devilish Army, attack!”

Without wasting time on the pointless conversation, the devil chief burst into a rage. The saw-tooth mace shuddered, shaking the sky above. Violent devil Qi filled the Five Elemental Power Spheres. Roars reverberated through the black devil waves as if there were tens of thousands of horrifying devils roaring at the same time. Such sound alone would make anyone feel unwell.

However, Jiang Chen was unaffected. He swiped the Heavenly Saint Sword that now carried bright flames, slashing the darkness into half. Tens of thousands of devils were pulverized immediately. The devil chief went backwards due to the impact

and a large hole appeared in his chest. Devil blood was gushing out.

“No, I won’t die so easily. I possess the Ancient Devil Bloodline.”

The devil chief turned frenzied but his combat power had been sharply reduced. He was powerless in confronting Jiang Chen who was brimming with energy.

“Die now.”

Jiang Chen moved once more. Integrating himself with the sword, they turned into a dazzling lightning. With a flash, the head of the devil chief disappeared. Then, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda opened large enough to devour the corpse of the devil.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The pagoda trembled once more. It underwent a transformation after absorbing three Eighth Grade Devil Saints. The condensation jumped from the 5th level to the 6th level. The 6th level was completely condensed. By looking at the pagoda closely, there was a lifelike dragon mark carved on the surface now. It looked ancient and noble, extraordinary and mysterious.

Chapter 1007 - Desolate Changyun

The Five Elemental Power Spheres receded back into Jiang Chen's body, like a tidal current. With him as the centre, there wasn't a single devil within a hundred miles range. To the devils, Jiang Chen was malefic, he could even kill Eighth Grade Devil Saints casually. They were completely powerless against him, unless a Ninth Grade Devil Saint was here to help, otherwise, anyone who encountered him would meet the same ending—death.

Presently, most of the Ninth Grade Devil Saints were blocked by the experts of Saint Origin Palace. Therefore, Jiang Chen had become the true conqueror of the battlefield and could do whatever he wanted.

“Another level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is condensed. My combat power is heightened once more. But this time, the pagoda needed three Eighth Grade Devil Saints to completely condense one level, which means that condensing the 7th level will be even more difficult. This thing is just like a bloodthirsty vampire. However, it brought me great benefits. I can utilize its ability to absorb all the dead devils, and at the same time, condense dragon marks, and what's great is that this won't affect my foundation at all, which is much better than directly refining devil souls,” said Jiang Chen in his mind.

With regards to the secrets of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he would explore it slowly in the future. In addition to its function as a storage, it could also help Jiang Chen refine the devils, allowing him to obtain energy without worrying about his foundation.

Thick smoke billowed upwards. The war had spread all over the Western Domain. Jiang Chen didn't stay idle. Instead, he was like a spectre that vanished in a blink. He was now in another battlefield. Wherever he went, a one-sided bloodshed occurred.

This was a Great War, the ultimate battle between men and devils. Due to the range of the battlefield being too wide and the number of devils being too great, it was unrealistic to end this war in a short time. It would be considered normal even if such a war lasted for a month.

Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Tyrant were the biggest beneficiaries of this war. Han Yan had acquired the Great Devil Curse and had advanced to the sixth grade during the war, a lot of devils were suppressed because of his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline.

Saint Origin Palace, Desolate Palace!

There was another layer of spatial zone within the spatial zone of Desolate Palace. The atmosphere here was rich with Immortal Qi, a great place for cultivation. At this moment, a youth in blue armour walked out from the spatial zone. He had a bluish hair, high nose bridge and a pair of blue eyes. He looked somewhat demonic but he wasn't from the Demon Race as the Qi he exuded was a human's Qi.

Before the blue-haired youth came to the main hall of Desolate Palace, an elder with white beard had been waiting for his arrival. The elder's cultivation base was a lot stronger. He was a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint, just like Desolate Emperor and Gu Firmament.

Ninth Grade Great Saint was the peak in the Great Saint realm and also the peak a cultivator could reach in this world.

“Supreme Elder.”

The blue-haired youth bowed to the elder respectfully.

“Changyun, you have been secretly nurtured in our palace for a long time. Now, it's time for you to contribute. The Western Domain of Saint Origin World is now in chaos and the devil army swarmed the place. I will need you to kill a person,” said the elder.

“A member of the Devil Race?” asked the blue-haired youth.

“No, a human. This is the information about that person.”

Using divine sense, he told everything related to Jiang Chen to the youth.

“Getting rid of a puny Fifth Grade Great Saint doesn’t require my assistance.”

The youth knitted his brows, looking somewhat dissatisfied.

“Don’t underestimate this man. He is a genius that rarely appears in ten thousand years. Your brother, Desolate Changfeng, died in his hands,” said the elder.

“What?”

The youth looked shocked. Anger surfaced on his face immediately. His name was Desolate Changyun, the elder brother of Desolate Changfeng. He would naturally be infuriated after hearing the news of his younger brother’s death.

“I am going to kill him now, to avenge my brother’s death.”

Changyun clenched his fist so hard that a cracking sound was heard. Then, without saying another word, he entered the spatial passageway. What was important to him right now wasn’t about how monstrous and powerful Jiang Chen was, it was about avenging the death of his brother. He promised that this revenge would be taken on his brother’s murderer.

Changyun was one of the supreme geniuses secretly nurtured by Desolate Palace. He had already reached the peak of Seventh Grade Great Saint. He was one of those whose physiques had been flushed with Immortal Qi throughout the years. A genius like him was bound to create earth-shattering events once he revealed himself. His power was enough to eliminate any powerful Eighth Grade Great Saint. No one could confront him unless except for a Ninth Grade Great Saint.

Above the battlefield of Western Domain was an overcast sky. Mountains and rivers were ruined by the war. Just after Jiang

Chen killed a whole bunch of devils, he frowned all of a sudden. A dangerous Qi was aroused inside of him before he sensed a wave of destructive energy attacking him from behind.

Someone sneak-attacked him!

The Great Soul Derivation Technique that he cultivated sharpened his senses. There was no way that others could attack him sneakily because even the Dark Shadow assassins failed in all of their attempts.

He spun around and slashed with his Heavenly Saint Sword.

Hong Long...

The unparalleled force of impact produced a large spark in the void. The surrounding spatial zone was destroyed instantly. Countless of spatial waves rage to a few hundred miles.

Deng Deng Deng...

Under the impact, Jiang Chen retreated a dozen paces before regaining his balance. He looked up and saw a youth in blue armour appearing in front of him. The youth's emotionless eyes glared at him irritatingly like a venomous snake.

“He's a Seventh Grade Great Saint. Has Desolate Palace finally sent their secret weapons?”

Jiang Chen's pupils contracted. It wasn't hard to guess the identity of the attacker just now, a Seventh Grade Great Saint that could send Jiang Chen a dozen paces backwards, he couldn't think of anyone except for the secret weapons of Desolate Palace.

After learning the identity of his opponent, instead of being scared, his combat intent was ignited. According to Ancestor Greenlotus, every genius who had been secretly nurtured by Desolate Palace were outstandingly talented. They were also called the sons of the Heavens. These geniuses' physiques were nurtured by Immortal Qi throughout the years and they were trained by the Immortals. They were the group that Jiang Chen longed to meet.

Today, the opportunity had come to him at last.

Besides, he could also guess that the arrival of this man must be the doing of Desolate Wuleng.

“Sure enough, he is extraordinary. He is still intact after blocking my attack. I didn’t expect that such a genius would appear in Gu Palace,” said Desolate Changyun to himself while staring at Jiang Chen.

His face looked calm but he felt incomparably shocked inside. Before meeting Jiang Chen, he absolutely didn’t believe that someone would be able to block his attack with just the strength of a Fifth Grade Great Saint. Although the attack just now was just a test, he knew how powerful the attack was.

Chapter 1008 - Exposing the Identity

“The great enemy is just ahead of us. So why did a supreme genius of Desolate Palace come to deal with me instead of eliminating the devils? Desolate Palace’s conduct has really rendered me speechless.” Jiang Chen’s words were filled with sarcasm.

“I, Desolate Changyun, will kill whoever I want to kill. Anything that’s happening to the world right now is unrelated to me. Gu Chen, you have created an irreconcilable conflict between me and you after you killed my brother. Today, I will personally kill you with my own hands. You should feel proud to be able to die in my hands,” said Desolate Changyun with raging arrogance.

Although Jiang Chen startled him very much, he still didn’t place Jiang Chen in his eyes, given the huge gap of their cultivation. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was already a dead man. The moment he revealed himself to the public, he must ensure that the target was eliminated just as ordered so that Desolate Palace could gain credit for having such a talented genius.

“There were a lot of people who said the same thing as you, but they all died. Thus, you will eventually end up like them. Your brother’s death is an obvious lesson for you.” Jiang Chen said casually.

The collision just now didn’t have any effect on him. After learning some things about his opponent, he understood that this battle was unavoidable. Desolate Changyun was the elder brother of Desolate Changfeng, and there was nothing that they could talk about this conflict.

In that case, he might as well fight his opponent. Anyway, he had been longing to meet the ‘secret weapons’ of Desolate Palace.

“Arrogance!”

Desolate Changyun raised his arm and stroked the void, creating a hundred miles wide independent battlefield, even the devil Qi that drifted in the air couldn't penetrate through it.

It was a sealed battlefield. Desolate Changyun had full control over the independent void, fully locking on Jiang Chen's Qi, giving him no chance of escaping.

"Gu Chen, the attack just now was just a test. You are no match for me. If you surrender now, perhaps I will show you some quarters by giving you a quick death!" Desolate Changyun's body was surrounded by a steaming Qi as he yelled at Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry. I will grant you a quick and short death."

Similarly, Jiang Chen unleashed his powerful Qi and turned into his usual dragon form. By this time, it was no longer necessary for him to hide his identity, he could still achieve what he wanted even by exposing his identity.

More importantly, he already had a rough estimate of Desolate Changyun's strength, if he didn't transform, he wouldn't be his opponent. So, he decided to use the transformation technique to eliminate Changyun.

"How can there be such a transformation technique under the Heavens?"

Desolate Changyun's face changed dramatically. He could clearly see the increase of Jiang Chen's combat power, which was now ten times stronger than before. It immediately eliminated the gap between them.

Hong Long...

Jiang Chen launched the powerful True Dragon Palm immediately after transforming. He had already decided to go all-out in this battle as he was no longer restricted by his identity. The hundred meters blood-red claw charged towards Changyun, attempting to grab hold of him.

“He’s strong.”

Desolate Changyun was shocked. In any battle, a single move was enough to see the true ability of the opponent. Just like now, the True Dragon Palm struck by Jiang Chen made Changyun feel a trace of pressure. This was hard to imagine because Changyun never felt pressured from any Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“Heaven Splitting Divine Claw!”

Desolate Changyun bellowed and struck out the signature move of Desolate Palace. Anyone in Desolate Family knew this skill, but its power and destructiveness varied from person to person. It wasn’t the first or second time that Jiang Chen faced such a skill, but he had to admit that Changyun’s Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was undoubtedly the strongest that he had ever seen.

Hong Long...

The True Dragon Palm collided with the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw. Immediately, it set off fierce waves. The hundred-mile-wide battlefield was filled with destructive waves of energy. A large portion of the void had thoroughly sunk due to the collision.

Even though the battlefield was sealed, the powerful waves that was emitted still managed to spread outside, drawing a lot of people’s attention.

“That’s a very powerful vibration of waves. I can feel that it is the combat waves sent out by an Eighth Grade Great Saint at least. But why do I feel like there are two Great Saint humans engaging in an intense fight?”

“Exactly. Why are our people fighting against each other while we are facing the Great War against the Devil Race?”

.....

The fight had aroused the attention of many people. Besides, the devil Qi in this area was extremely little. Apparently, it was an intense fight between two humans. Many people were confused,

such action should be forbidden in times of war.

On another battlefield, Desolate Wuleng who was fighting against some devil experts, felt the strong waves, then a glimmer of joy appeared all over his face. “The fight has started. I’ll go and see what’ll happen.”

He ditched the devil expert and headed towards the source of the combat waves.

By the time he arrived, he saw the both of them fighting intensely with one another. Immediately, his emotion was stirred up when he saw Jiang Chen’s half-dragon form.

“It was just as I suspected. Gu Chen is Jiang Chen. They are the same person! I should have killed that little beast earlier to prevent him from growing this strong.”

Desolate Wuleng’s eyes turned red. He had suspected Jiang Chen’s identity from the very beginning but had no proof to convict Jiang Chen. In order to gather evidence, he had sacrificed Desolate Changfeng. Now that Jiang Chen’s identity was finally revealed, it gave him the urge to shred Jiang Chen to pieces right away.

At this particular moment, numerous experts from Saint Origin Palace had arrived to check the scene out. Most of them couldn’t help but exclaim when they saw the half-dragon form Jiang Chen.

“That’s Jiang Chen. He has finally showed up. I wonder who the person he’s fighting against is.”

“He looks like a genius of Desolate Palace. I have no idea that Desolate Palace has kept such a heaven defying genius in secret and why are the two of them fighting?”

“That’s Gu Chen. So, it turns out that Gu Chen is Jiang Chen. Both of them are the same person all along. My god, this has got to be a big secret! He has killed so many experts of the six major palaces. I can’t believe that he lied his way out of the situation

using his fake identity.”

.....

Jiang Chen’s identity was exposed. Some people began to realize that Gu Chen was in fact Jiang Chen. This would soon be spread to everyone. The moment the experts of the six major palaces knew about this, they would certainly have the impulse to take revenge on Jiang Chen. However, due to the war they were facing right now against the devil army, they couldn’t lay their hands on him. Besides, it was inappropriate to start an internal war within themselves.

As for the matter of Jiang Chen, they could only wait until the war against the devil army was over. Moreover, Jiang Chen just grew too fast. They wouldn’t be his opponent even if they wanted to take revenge right now. Anyway, the intense battle between Jiang Chen and Desolate Changyun had become the spotlight of this war. Naturally, the people from the six major palaces hoped that Jiang Chen would be killed; their hatred for Jiang Chen had gone irrecoverably too deep.

Chapter 1009 - Killing Genius Once More

The battlefields across the entire Western Domain were originally in utter disorder. It worsened when Jiang Chen and Desolate Changyun started an intense battle. This was supposed to be a battle between the Human and Devil Race. So, it was in the devil army's favour when two human geniuses started an internal conflict.

And yet, no one amongst the humans did anything to stop the two combatants. Jiang Chen's identity had pushed lots of their buttons; the genius of Desolate Palace was engaged in an intense fight with him. Just like what Gu Firmament said, they wouldn't take part in battles amongst the young generation.

Learning that Gu Chen was indeed Jiang Chen, the people of the six major palaces suffered a huge blow psychologically. A lot of them were grinding their teeth right now, regretting that they lost their best chance of eliminating him. If they had known about his true identity earlier, they would have never let him walk out of Saint Origin Palace alive.

In addition to how shocking Jiang Chen's true identity was, Desolate Changyun's appearance also startled a lot of them, it even made the other seven major palaces feel very uncomfortable. According to the current status of Saint Origin Palace, the most powerful cultivation base amongst the young generation was a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint. None of them had reached the seventh grade yet. Clearly, Desolate Changyun was a figure, hidden by the Desolate Palace deliberately. He wasn't present during the fight of Sang Ba. In the past hundred years, the overall strength of Desolate Palace had been slowly increasing. Now that an unknown genius had popped out all of a sudden, they couldn't help but suspect Desolate Palace's hidden agenda. They also thought that Desolate Palace might have geniuses even stronger than Desolate Changyun.

On the battlefield, Jiang Chen and Desolate Changyun fought intensely for dozens of rounds. Under the bombardments of Jiang Chen, Desolate Changyun was repeatedly sent backwards and was almost shoved over the edge of the battlefield. The half-dragon form Jiang Chen had become more than a match for Desolate Changyun.

“Damn! How could this bastard become so horrifyingly heaven defying? How was he so powerful?” Desolate Changyun grumbled angrily.

With his present grade, he should be an invincible opponent of any cultivator below the ninth grade. Even Desolate Wuleng, who was a peak Eighth Grade Great Saint would die for certain. That was why he didn’t put Jiang Chen in his eyes from the very beginning. How frustrating was it when he was being suppressed by a Fifth Grade Great Saint? This was a scene that he had never dreamt of. Over the years, he had lost count of how many high-grade cultivation resources he had obtained. As such, it was an absolute disgrace when he couldn’t even defeat a Fifth Grade Great Saint in his first assignment.

“I don’t believe that I can’t even defeat a Fifth Grade Great Saint. Thunder Immortal Slash!”

Desolate Changyun was completely infuriated. He summoned a long and huge sword filled with Immortal marks. Apparently, the weapon had been enchanted by an Immortal to make it stronger and incomparable to any general Great Saint Weapon.

Hong Long...

The terrifyingly huge sword ripped the battlefield in half as it slashed towards Jiang Chen like a lightning. This slash contained all of the combat power that Desolate Changyun had. It was an all-out attack. The Qi that was unleashed from it made people keep a hundred mile distance from the battlefield, regardless of whether they were humans or devils. As the war against the devils were still

going on intensely, they were still preoccupied with their battles but without stepping into that critical zone. As for the experts of the six major palaces, they continued their duels against the devil army and darted a few glances on the battlefield, taking a chance to look at the development of the battle.

“Your slash isn’t bad. Too bad, it is still not enough to finish me. I’m done playing with you.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated madly. The Flaming Wings appeared on his back with a swoosh, merging itself with the dragon wings. With a gentle flutter, he vanished. Then, the more than 80, 000 dragon marks roared inside his body, inexhaustible energy was being exerted into the Heavenly Saint Sword.

At the same moment, he fused with the sword and became one. Subsequently, the Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a 300 meter blood-red dragon, while Jiang Chen turned into its tail. It rippled out curvy waves like a river that was high up in the Heavens as it rammed against Desolate Changyun’s large sword.

Hong Long...

The two astounding swords collided, and produced a very powerful impact. This strike contained their most powerful attack. So, the impact that was created from such an attack would undoubtedly be mind-blowing.

Hundreds of miles of battlefield were instantly affected. These places were completely blurred by the thick and dense smoke. Many heads turned towards their direction. Their expressions instantly turned ugly when they felt the terrifying Qi and waves coming out from the battlefield.

Desolate Wuleng had been paying attention to the battle, but when he saw the both of them creating such an impact, his expression hardened. He could clearly tell that if he were to enter the battlefield of the two, he would most likely be killed. In other words, it was an extremely easy task for Jiang Chen to kill him

back when they were still outside of the Great Lightning Tune Temple.

Jiang Chen's drastic growth left a bad taste in his mouth, it was as though he had eaten a fly. He once had a chance to eliminate Jiang Chen, but he let it pass. Now, killing Jiang Chen was already impossible, which was kind of sad to him.

"The threat of this man is becoming greater."

Desolate Wuleng couldn't help sighing. An abnormal being like Jiang Chen would certainly become a great problem sooner or later, the entire Desolate Palace might even fall into his hands if he wasn't gotten rid of as soon as possible. That was a scene that he didn't dare imagine.

Barf...

In the chaotic battlefield, Desolate Changyun spewed several mouthfuls of blood. His blue combat armour had shattered. Blood was flowing out of his wound continuously. He now looked completely miserable, which was completely different from his condition before the fight started. He received a huge blow from the collision just now which injured him severely. Although his condition hadn't reached the brink of collapse yet, it was impossible for him to continue fighting Jiang Chen anymore.

Without any hesitation, he turned and ran away. Today's battle was the greatest humiliation he suffered in his life, but being humiliated was still better than being killed. If he could live through today, he could still erase this insult in the future.

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen would not give him the chance to escape. After all this time, none of his enemies that was severely injured managed to escape his grasp.

"Running away now? It's too late for that."

Jiang Chen's voice was transmitted into Desolate Changyun's ears, like a ghost. Changyun's expression instantly changed when

he felt the surrounding void was completely sealed by something. The battlefield had turned into a cell. When he raised his head, he saw Jiang Chen, he had no idea when did his opponent appeared in front of him. With such a speed, he didn't even have the time to react. The cold sword was aimed at the centre of his brows. Although the metal wasn't pushed into his skull yet, he could already clearly feel the cold killing intent exuded from the sword. That was the Qi of death.

“D-don't kill me.”

Desolate Changyun was afraid. This was the first time that he felt frightened in the face of death. No one wanted to die, particularly people who had a bright future like him. To him, death was too ghastly.

Chapter 1010 - Desolate Wuleng Died As Well

“Damn it!”

In a far distance where Desolate Wuleng was watching, he spurted out a mouthful of blood. This was the first battle of Desolate Changyun against Jiang Chen. Although he didn't have a deep understanding of Jiang Chen, he knew pretty well how ruthless this person was. He was a genius of cruelty, and begging for mercy before him would only be useless. Desolate Changyun was basically doomed after falling into Jiang Chen's hands. He was going to be one of Jiang Chen's stepping stone.

Pu Chi!

The fact was just like what Desolate Wuleng predicted. Jiang Chen's long sword sliced through Desolate Changyun's brain without hesitation, killing him instantly. Watching Desolate Changyun die tragically in Jiang Chen's hands stirred up Desolate Wuleng's anger, but there was nothing much he could do about it. Last time, when Jiang Chen killed Desolate Changfeng, he was the first one to rush into the scene, attempting to kill Jiang Chen for revenge, but now, he have any courage to do so because he knew that if he lunged forward just like last time, it would be akin to sending himself to the gates of hell. This time, Jiang Chen wouldn't be merciful to him.

A lot of them saw Jiang Chen killing Desolate Changyun. Even the higher ups of the six major palaces couldn't help but reveal a trace of fear. They had never seen such a horrifying figure.

“Even the Seventh Grade Great Saint genius of Desolate Palace was killed by him so easily. He is now the greatest genius amongst the young generation.”

“This Jiang Chen is truly frightening. Killing a Seventh Grade

Great Saint genius with his Fifth Grade Great Saint strength was just a piece of cake to him. That is to say, even an Eighth Grade Great Saint will certainly die if they fought him. With that kind of combat power, he is virtually invincible to any opponents below the Ninth Grade Great Saint. if we can't get rid of him as soon as possible, he will grow to an extent where the six major palaces will no longer be able to take care of him."

"Rest assured. Given the overall strength of the six major palaces, it isn't a problem at all to eliminate that man. Although Jiang Chen is powerful, he can be killed by Ninth Grade Great Saints. Furthermore, there are supreme experts who are half-step away from the Immortal realm hidden in the six major palaces. So, Jiang Chen has terribly misjudged his abilities if he is thinking to confront them all. However, we can't let him continue growing, his growth is just too fast. Even without the five major palaces, Desolate Palace will still hunt him down and kill him."

.....

No one wasn't in a state of shock. A hundred years ago, there was a twisted-devil-like being that existed in Saint Origin World – he was the Greatest Saint. Today, Jiang Chen's strength was obviously many times stronger than the Greatest Saint, exceeding everyone's scope of understanding and imagination.

Jiang Chen ignored those astonished eyes. Since his identity had already been exposed, he no longer need to make any efforts to conceal himself. While he was still in his half-dragon form, he grabbed Desolate Changyun's sword and hurled his corpse from above.

"There are Immortal marks engraved on this sword. I'm afraid that only Desolate Palace has this kind of rare weapon. It must be good if this weapon is given to Xiao Yu."

Slowly, he kept the sword. He would never let go of such a precious booty.

Swoosh!

Subsequently, his eyes swept across the void, a chilling wave flowed out of his body. “Old bastard, now it’s your turn after enjoying the battle for so long.”

With a flutter of the Flaming Wings, he left the turbulent spatial zone, and closed in on Desolate Wuleng in just a few blinks. Presently, Desolate Wuleng was fighting against a powerful devil, an Eighth Grade Devil Saint. Jiang Chen was supposed to be in an intense battle. His abrupt emergence shocked the Devil Saint. Without saying a word, he spun and fled.

Whether it was in the eyes of the humans or the devils, Jiang Chen was brutally overpowering. After witnessing Jiang Chen’s horrific combat skills, the Devil Saint scraped away all the thoughts of fighting him.

Seeing the Eighth Grade Devil Saint fleeing away, Jiang Chen immediately casted the True Dragon Palm. A huge dragon claw that was blazing with True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire, instantly enshroud the Eighth Grade Devil Saint.

“Argh.....”

The Eighth Grade Devil Saint let out an agonizing wail while its body was instantly turned into ashes. Jiang Chen’s human form was enough to get rid of an Eighth Grade Devil Saint with ease, let alone when he was in his half-dragon form. Therefore, killing an Eighth Grade Devil Saint right now was as simple as slaughtering a chicken, absolutely effortless.

After killing that Devil Saint, he turned to Desolate Weleng. Now that his identity had been exposed, the first person that he really wanted to kill was this old man. In fact, he wanted to eliminate this old guy badly for plotting behind his back constantly.

“Jiang Chen, what are you trying to do?”

Desolate Wuleng’s face turned bloodless. He could feel the cold

killing intent from Jiang Chen's body, stirring up the fear inside of him.

“What am I going to do? Can't you figure it out given how smart you are? Old bastard, you have plotted against me for so many times, trying hard to find out who I really am so that you can sentence me to death. Now, you have gotten what you wanted. I am Gu Chen and Jiang Chen at the same time. I will give you the chance to kill me now.”

Jiang Chen's blood-red eyes glinted with a cold light.

“Jiang Chen, we are now facing a great enemy ahead of us. Instead of killing the devils, you came here just to kill me? Aren't you afraid of being punished by Saint Origin Palace because of this?”

Said Desolate Wuleng.

“Ha-ha! F**k Saint Origin Palace. Let me tell you this, I, Jiang Chen only has me in my eyes. Nothing and no one will be able to suppress and control me. While it is true that the Devil Race is my enemy, but Desolate Palace is also my enemy. You, Desolate Wuleng is the first person that I wanted to kill. I suppose your nonsense is done. Since you don't want to kill me, I will just kill you then.”

Jiang Chen's heroic aura surged skywards. He was crazily domineering. The scary True Dragon Palm was casted again, encompassing Desolate Wuleng entirely, like a hill-like cell wrapping him tightly.

Desolate Wuleng's face turned very ugly. Speedily, he casted all the skills

that he had and exerted all of his energy to break Jiang Chen's cell. However, he found out that the dragon claw was indestructible and unshakable.

“Jiang Chen, you frenzied maniac! Desolate Palace will never let

you go even after you kill me. You will be doomed to suffer a miserable and tragic death in the end.”

Knowing that he didn't have the chance to live anymore, he roared like a madman.

“Desolate Palace is nothing to me. Sooner or later, I will kill everyone in that palace and leave no one alive. I don't mind telling you this, I already know all the secrets of Desolate Palace. Desolate Emperor is destined to die, including all those monstrous geniuses that Desolate Palace has been concealing. The Immortals of your palace that didn't ascend to the Immortal World will eventually become dead souls in my hands. Too bad, you won't have a chance to see such a scene.”

Jiang Chen's dragon aura was magnificent, looking like a peerless god. Every word was like a sharp sword, jabbing at Desolate Wuleng's body.

“You...h-how did you know about this?”

Desolate Wuleng's eyes went wide. This time, he was truly horrified, it was impossible for anyone outside to know about the secret of Desolate Palace. However, Jiang Chen knew everything about it. So how could this not be a shocking news to him?

“Go to hell.”

Jiang Chen didn't bother to continue talking with Desolate Wuleng. With a sudden clench of his True Dragon Palm, Desolate Wuleng's body exploded from the force and turned into a mist of blood, sprinkling over the void before it disappeared.

Chapter 1011 - Transforming the Devil World

Jiang Chen returned to his original form after eliminating Desolate Wuleng, and then vanished into the warzone without leaving any trace behind. Now that his identity had been thoroughly exposed, there's no need for him to conceal it anymore. On this vast warzone of Western Domain, everyone was his enemy except for the people of the Gu Family and Demon Race. He would continue to kill the devils but if any experts from the six major palaces would dare to cause him trouble, they would meet the same result as Desolate Wuleng. Jiang Chen would never show them any quarters.

Moreover, he knew very well that there wasn't only one monstrous genius hidden in Desolate Palace. He figured that Desolate Changyun was probably the weakest among them, and the true monstrous experts hadn't revealed themselves yet. However, he didn't have the slightest fear for them. Instead, he was looking forward in meeting those geniuses, only they could make his blood boil and make fighting meaningful.

The news of Gu Chen actually being Jiang Chen spread like a storm, including the death of Desolate Wuleng and Desolate Changyun. At this rate, it wouldn't take long before the news covered the entire Western Domain. By then, all the experts of the eight major palaces would know about this.

However, it was already useless even if they heard the news. Who else from the six major palaces would dare to confront Jiang Chen when even Desolate Wuleng was killed? As for those Ninth Grade Great Saints, they were fully occupied by the Super Devil Saints and was unable to care about the news. Besides, they had created a battlefield that was outside the domain.

In other words, Jiang Chen was the conqueror of this battlefield

and also the most powerful being. Regardless of whether they are humans or devils, none of them is a match for him. Whoever faced him will only end up dead.

“This is hateful! Even Desolate Wuleng was killed. This Jiang Chen really has grown very strong. Now, only Ninth Grade Great Saints could eliminate him. Let’s not offend him at this moment or else, he would kill us without hesitation given his ruthlessness. People of Dan Palace, listen. Keep a distance away from the devils that are in close proximity to Jiang Chen. The danger he poses is a hundred times more compared to the devils!”

“Ai! We had our chance to take revenge but it already slipped away. The moment this war is over, the first thing that I’m going to do is to get rid of that man. We must not let him grow further. He has already become too terrifying. He was able to kill an Eighth Grade Great Saint with ease even if he is merely a Fifth Grade Great Saint. If he advanced to the sixth grade, wouldn’t that mean that he can kill Ninth Grade Great Saints? I’m afraid that Shi Palace will fall into his hands if he is allowed to grow further.”

“Kill him! We must kill that man. As soon as this war is over, we will gather all the Ninth Grade Great Saints and eliminate that little beast!”

.....

All the higher-ups of the six major palaces felt a jolt of fear in their spine. The existence of Jiang Chen was overly horrifying. This was a threat that indirectly caused great pressure on them. There was no one in this battlefield capable enough to eliminate Jiang Chen.

The terror that Jiang Chen projected wasn’t just because of his heaven defying combat strength, it was his speed of growth that left them no time to respond. The higher ups of the six major palaces weren’t fools. They were clear that if they allowed such a monstrous genius to continue growing, it was only a matter of time

before the six major palaces faced their end.

Bloody fights were everywhere. The void across the Western Domain had already been enshrouded by destructive energy. The spaces in the void were occupied by numerous battlefields. Layers of spatial zone were broken, this almost damaged the barrier of Saint Origin World. Such a fierce war was unprecedented in over thousands of years. In this Great War, bloodshed happened in almost every moment, but this war was a rare life-or-death experience to either the Human or Devil Race.

Of all the things in the world, including the Human, Devil, Demon or the other races, they all had one thing in common, a longing to experience battles, battles that would bring them to the brink of death. Only through this way could they improve the overall strength of their race and make their race more powerful.

After one day and one night of raging battle, Jiang Chen's cultivation base had reached the peak of the fifth grade, only a step away from the next grade. In the warzone, he was constantly obtaining benefits the entire time, and a large portion of the Seventh Level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been condensed out. At this rate, he only needed half a day more of battle before the entire Seventh Level was condensed.

Corpses of the dead were heaped up nearly everywhere. Each and every battlefield was filled with the stench of blood. On the battlefield outside the domain, some Ninth Grade Devil Saints had fallen while the Ninth Grade Great Saints from the Human Race had almost lost their lives from the war.

Although the eight major palaces of Saint Origin Palace had suffered considerable losses, many had gained from the war.

Tyrant and Han Yan were without a doubt the individuals that had gained the most besides Jiang Chen. Tyrant had edified three Eighth Grade Devil Saints and basically conquered every battlefield he went. His cultivation had already reached the peak of the Sixth

Grade Great Saint, only a step away from the seventh.

Han Yan, on the other hand, was even more terrifying. The combination of the Great Devil Curse and his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline gave him natural advantage on the devils. He had then absorbed countless of devil souls, pushing his cultivation base to the peak of the sixth grade as well.

Although Big Yellow wasn't any better than the two of them, he was quite frightening. He had drifted to various battlefield and the devil souls had become his biggest nourishment. He was a being that could eat and digest anything. Not knowing how many of those souls he had eaten, he had advanced to the peak of the Fifth Grade Great Saint. It seemed like he would be able to advance to the sixth grade once he digested all the energy in his body, which would take him a day's time at most.

These three friends were like Jiang Chen, slaughtering large number of devil experts, causing the devil army to fall pretty quick, while the others were also pushing the devils towards the direction of the Devil World continuously. If this situation continued, it wouldn't take long for the Human Race to truly defeat the Devil Race.

Howl... *Howl...*

At this moment, howls reverberated from the Devil World. It sounded ancient and deep and was unpleasant to hear. It also sounded as if it was some kind of a call from the highest level of devils.

The instant the call was made, the devil army that was in a frenzied mode retreated speedily like a tide. In just ten minutes, all of them had retreated back to the Devil World.

Not just the devils below, but also the Ninth Grade Devil Saints, retreating back to their world. Their faces were filled with shock and also certain exhilaration. Immediately, all of them ditched the experts of Saint Origin Palace and entered the Devil World in just

several blinks. Then, the door of the Devil World was completely closed.

Chapter 1012 - The Fury of the Six Major Palaces

“What happened? Why has the devil army suddenly retreated?” Narang Yunhe had a puzzled look.

“There may be something going on inside the Devil World. Just now I senses some unusual movement inside but it was deliberately concealed by them. If I’m not mistaken, the unexpected change in the Devil World has something to do with their sudden retreat, otherwise, given their ferocious nature, they wouldn’t retreat so quickly. Even though the devil army has been at a disadvantage in the war, they were still far from being truly defeated,” said Gu Firmament. He looked in the direction of the Devil World, wondering what was happening inside it.

“In my opinion, let’s enter the Devil World!”

The palace master of Shi Palace’s Qi fluctuated. As soon as his voice faded, he had flown to the giant gate of the Devil World, and struck to rip it open.

Hong Long...

The void outside the gate was destroyed instantly, but the gate remained intact and locked. Inside the Devil World, the large gate was sealed by a dozen of Super Devil Saints. Judging by how fast the devil army was summoned back to the Devil World, it seemed as if they were putting an end to the war completely.

“Something must have happened inside. Brother Gu, what are we going to do now? Should we work together to break the seal behind the giant gate?” The palace master of Dan Palace looked at Gu Firmament and asked.

The eyes of the rest fell upon him. Now that he was the one in charge of the Law Enforcement Palace, he was also the leader of Saint Origin Palace. As such, only Gu Firmament could make the

decision for such great event.

“I think no. The Devil World is different from the Western Domain. It is the nest of the devils. The environment there will suppress our combat strength. Furthermore, we don’t know what exactly has happened inside there. If we attacked forcefully, we may arouse a frenzied response from them which will not do us any good.” said Gu Firmement, shaking his head.

Considering the fact that the Devil Race had recuperated for quite a long time, they might have built strong forces and fortresses in their world. On the other hand, although Western Domain was the heartland of Buddha Sect, it didn’t make the war for the Human Race any easier. If they entered the Devil World, aside from not knowing the world’s geography, they would also be affected negatively.

“Brother Gu is right. I don’t see how we can take advantage of the land in the Devil World. Since they have retreated, I suppose they won’t be back for a period of time. I think, we should return to Saint Origin Palace first for the time being. We had made hasty preparations before the war. This time we have to make better preparations for the next war by mobilizing the top experts to our forces, so that we are always ready to face the war. As long as the devils dare to appear again, we will attack them with heavy blows.” Desolate Emperor suggested.

“It seems this is the only way given the circumstances.” Narang Yunhe nodded, agreed to what Desolate Emperor said.

“Alright. Inform everyone to withdraw from the warfield, to prepare well for the next round of war,” said Gu Firmament, nodding.

Thick smoke was rolling off the battlefields. After the eight palace masters gave the orders to retreat, all of the experts gathered at their respective camps; Han Yan and Jiang Chen gathered in the same group.

“Little Chen, what now? Your identity has already been exposed. I’m afraid the six major palaces will not let you go,” said Han Yan.

“F*ck! I have no idea what’s going on that the devil army to pull back so quickly. It has messed up my plans.” Jiang Chen couldn’t help cursing.

His original intention was that this war would continue until it was really over. In which case, he would be able to continue advancing in the midst of the war. As long as he could break through to the sixth grade, he would be able to deal with Ninth Grade Great Saints. By then, he wouldn’t be concerned about the other five major palaces anymore and only needed to focus on dealing with Desolate Palace.

The sudden retreat of the Devil Race disrupted all his plans. It was likely that those Ninth Grade Great Saints outside the domain had yet to know about his true identity, but after they found out, not even the combined strength of Gu Palace and Demon Palace could protect him given how deep the hatred the six major palaces had for him.

This was a situation which he didn’t wish to see. If he confronted them head-on, it wouldn’t bring any benefits to Demon Palace and Gu Palace but threat instead.

“I think, let’s go straight into the Devil World. First, we can temporarily evade the furious hunt of the six major palaces. Second, we can find out exactly what has happened in the Devil World. Besides, we may be able to obtain some benefits inside. Also, don’t forget that Ah Yan possesses the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and he has recently acquired the Great Devil Curse, which makes him a lineal descendant of Devil Race. That place is just a piece of cake to him.”

Big Yellow’s eyes were sparkling, eagerly anticipating the dangerous trip to the Devil World.

“But the gate of the Devil World has been sealed by the Super

Devil Saints. How are we going to get in anyway?”

Yan Chenyu was confused.

“Hehe... Ah, Xiao Yu, isn’t this the strength of Master dog? With our combined strengths and Ah Yan’s Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, it’s going to be very easy for us to penetrate through the seal, and I bet the Super Devil Saints won’t find out about us.”

Big Yellow revealed a conceited smile. He was well-versed with the Formation Holy Book, so there was basically no seals in this world he couldn’t break.

“Well then, let’s go to the Devil World,” replied Jiang Chen.

He was a man who never procrastinated and given the current situation, entering the Devil World was the best choice as there was nowhere else in Saint Origin World that he could go. But when he advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint, none of the six major palaces would be able to deal with him.

“Haha! It must be very dangerous for us to enter the Devil World at this time. There must be something big going on inside there. Plus, they must have increased their alertness to the maximum. But thinking about this excites me. So, count me in.” Tyrant laughed and said.

How could he be excluded from such stimulating event? In addition, he hadn’t fought side by side with his brothers for a long time.

Like Tyrant said, entering the Devil World at this time was undoubtedly an extremely dangerous time but people used to say that: People with great skills are highly audacious. Moreover, their cultivation base was enough to handle most of the enemies. Any one of them was able to engage in solo battle. Plus, most of them had suppressive ability against the devils. So, they didn’t need to be afraid even if they encountered danger. Throughout the Heaven and Earth, only this abnormal group of beings were bold enough to

intrude into the Devil World at this moment.

“Brother Chen, I’m not going then. I will return to the camp of Gu Family. You guys must be careful when you are in the Devil World.”

Yan Chenyu gazed at Jiang Chen, her eyes overflowed with intimate concern and love.

“Xiao Yu, take care of yourself and the people of Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Jiang Chen’s hand caressed Yan Chenyu’s cheek, revealing a rare trace of masculine tenderness. Her understanding and empathy for him made his heart ache. She knew that the fewer the people enter the Devil World, the better. Though her cultivation base wasn’t weak, her Nine Yin Meridian Physique made her the only one who didn’t have the advantage of suppression over the devils. As such, she voluntarily withdrew herself from the team fearing that Jiang Chen and the others would be distracted due to her vulnerability.

“Not to worry, Brother Chen. I’m not going to let my family get hurt.”

Yan Chenyu nodded with a little force, she then turned and vanished, heading towards the camp of Gu Family.

“Let’s go quickly before the six palace masters took action. Or else, we won’t have the chance anymore.” Big Yellow prompted.

Three men and a dog turned into four shadows and vanished without making any delays. Given their speed, they had reached the front gate of the Devil World the moment they reappeared.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

Even before they got close to it, they could feel the shivering sound of the seal coming from the other side of the gate. That sound carried a trace of gloominess that could shake one’s soul.

“This is a very simple seal. It can block any beings other than

devils. So, we don't have to waste any effort at all. Ah Yan, encompass three of us with your domain using the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. Big Yellow, Tyrant, we have to conceal our Qi for now."

Jiang Chen was able to discern the nature of the seal by one glance. This was a seal specialized at blocking the Human Race from entering, but it had no effect on devils. It was impossible for any ordinary human to cross the gate without getting any backlash from the seal, but such powerful seal wouldn't have an impact on Jiang Chen and his comrades, as the bloodline that Han Yan possessed could easily get them through the gates.

"Okay."

Han Yan nodded. He then enshrouded the three of them with his domain. Jiang Chen and the other two kept their Qi and even held their breath to prevent any Qi from getting out.

Han Yan strode forward, and entered the Devil World. It was like what Jiang Chen expected, such a seal wouldn't be a problem to Han Yan.

On the other side, the people of the eight major palaces had gathered together and the identity of Jiang Chen had spread to the Ninth Grade Great Saints.

"Not good, why is this boy so careless? Why did he expose his identity so quickly?" Gu Firmament said, frowning.

Instinctively, he was able to guess the reaction of the six major palaces. Jiang Chen had killed all of their patriarchs in Pure Land and numerous of their elders and geniuses, making all six of the major palaces his sworn enemy. Today, after exposing his true identity, Gu Firmament was afraid that not even Gu Palace and Demon Palace's joined capability could protect Jiang Chen.

"What? That Gu Chen is Jiang Chen? Damn! Where's this little beast right now? I must kill him now!"

“What the f*ck? I should have thought about this long time ago. How could there be two heaven defying geniuses appear at the same time? And how could they both have close relationship with Gu Family? It turns out that they were the same person. Where is he now? Let’s eliminate him for good. We can’t allow him to grow anymore. He has posed a huge threat to us!”

“Search for him! Search for Jiang Chen immediately! There won’t be a place in Saint Origin World for him to hide anymore. When we catch him, we are going to execute him with Ling Chi.”

.....

The Ninth Grade Great Saints of the six major palaces had gone mad. The scene had gone out of control, just like Jiang Chen anticipated.

Chapter 1013 - The News of the Devil Mountain

The people of the six major palaces were infuriated. The enemy that they wanted to get rid of was just under their noses all along. Their failure to eliminate him had given him enough time to grow, which frustrated them tremendously.

However, no one was angrier than Desolate Emperor. Ever since Jiang Chen's name emerged, Desolate Palace had suffered severe losses compared to the other five major palaces. He could get over the death of the few geniuses but not the death of the great elder, Desolate Wuleng. If this wasn't enough to stir up his anger, the death of Desolate Changyun was enough for him cough out blood. One should know that Desolate Changyun was a supreme genius that was secretly nurtured by Desolate Palace. They had expended massive amount of efforts, time and resources to train each and every one of them. So how could he stay indifferent when a supreme genius was killed by Jiang Chen today?

More importantly, the secret of their hidden geniuses had been exposed. He could explain that Desolate Changyun had just advanced to the Seventh Grade Great Saint, but Desolate Changyun's appearance had aroused the dissatisfaction and doubts of the other palaces.

This prompted Desolate Emperor to make a decision—it seemed like Desolate Palace should execute their plan ahead of time.

Fury pierced through the skies. The Ninth Grade Great Saints of the six major palaces began to unleash their terrifying divine sense to sweep across, not just the area of the Western Domain, but also the lands across the entire Saint Origin World. Unfortunately, no trace of Jiang Chen could be found, not even a breath of his Qi.

“Dammit! That bastard must have escaped again.”

“Where did that little beast gone? Why can’t we find even a trace of him, as if he had vanished completely under the Heavens?”

“That man is extremely dangerous, cunning and vicious. It is only a matter of time before he becomes a great threat to us. It is unbelievable that a mere Fifth Grade Great Saint could escape from our joint hunt.”

.....

The six palace masters were now deeply aware of the massive threat posed by Jiang Chen. As mighty Ninth Grade Great Saints, they had never felt threatened for a long time. They were always the top existences of the pyramid under the Heavens and Earth, the supreme beings of this world.

As a matter of fact, although Jiang Chen was very capable, he wasn’t as all-powerful as they had thought. Presently, even if they racked their brains, they wouldn’t be able to figure out that Jiang Chen had entered the Devil World. Before this, the palace master of Shi Family personally tried to break the huge gate of the Devil World but found his effort useless, the gates had already been completely sealed by the high ranked experts of the Devi Race. If not even a Ninth Grade Great Saint could slip through the gates unnoticeably, let alone Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s sudden disappearance had relieved the worries of the people of Gu Palace. Regardless of how much the six major palaces wanted to kill Jiang Chen, his disappearance made it impossible for them to take their revenge. However, if Jiang Chen was present, neither Gu Palace nor the Demon Palace could protect him, the six major palaces definitely wouldn’t tolerate it.

“Smart boy.”

Gu Firmament’s face was full of smile. His admiration for Jiang Chen grew again. He had known Jiang Chen’s true identity a long time ago, but he hadn’t thought that it would be revealed so soon. It seemed like Jiang Chen had already anticipated what would

happen, which explained why he had not been found anywhere.

Jiang Chen's escape also shocked Gu Firmament like the other palace masters. He was shocked by Jiang Chen's means of escaping. He wondered how did a Fifth Grade Great Saint slip through the search of so many Ninth Grade Great Saints. Furthermore, the time given was too short, it was impossible for him to flee without leaving a trace or anything.

"Gu Firmament, it must be you who hid Jiang Chen. Otherwise, how could a puny Fifth Grade Great Saint flee so swiftly?" Desolate Emperor shifted his focus to Gu Firmament.

"That's right. Gu Firmament, don't tell me that you never knew the identity of Jiang Chen all this while. Your Gu Palace have been covering up for him all this time. That means you all are going against the six major palaces. I urge you to hand over Jiang Chen right away. That man has killed so many of our people, he has to be punished for what he did!" shouted Narang Yunhe.

The six major palaces undoubtedly had a similar stance with regards to Jiang Chen.

The other four palace masters walked forth, putting more pressure on Gu Firmament. In truth, every one of them knew that Gu Firmament had been with them on the battlefield outside the Western Domain until the war ended, but they just couldn't stomach the grievance.

"It's funny that you all palace masters speak in such a childish way. We have been fighting together against the Super Devil Saints of the devil army. What makes you think that I could hide a person without being noticed by any of you? In fact, I have just learned about Jiang Chen's identity like the rest of you. It's up to you whether you believe it or not." Gu Firmament flicked his sleeve and said.

Now that the position of the Law Enforcement Palace master wasn't working on them, he might as well react perversely..

“I understand that you all desired to kill Jiang Chen, but you need to be aware of your status and identity. Brother Gu has been with us all this time. Given your capabilities, won’t any of you find out if Brother Gu has really hidden Jiang Chen?” said Heavenly Peng King loudly.

At this moment, he stood on Gu Firmament’s side unconditionally. He valued Jiang Chen’s potential and the relationship between Big Yellow and Jiang Chen; both Gu and Demon Palace were bound to form an alliance.

For a moment, Desolate Emperor was at a loss for words. Although he knew that it was impossible for Gu Firmament—the palace master of Gu Palace—to not know about Jiang Chen’s identity, he realized that it was no use to continue dwelling on this matter. Besides, Heavenly Peng King was right. Every one of them was a first class expert of Saint Origin World. None of them was any weaker than Gu Firmament. As such, there was absolutely no chance for Gu Firmament to hide Jiang Chen under their very nose.

“Very well, Gu Firmament, since you claimed that you didn’t know the identity of Jiang Chen before us, the six palaces will send supreme experts to hunt him down and no one in Gu Palace should assist that criminal. Otherwise, you will bear the unbearable fury of the six palaces,” said Desolate Emperor grimly.

Failing to eliminate Jiang Chen had resulted in heavy losses for Desolate Palace. If they rooted out this troublemaker earlier, such incidents wouldn’t have taken place.

“Provided if you can find him.” Gu Firmament shrugged and showed a face of indifference.

His confidence in Jiang Chen was incomparably high. First, it was because of Jiang Chen’s powerful cultivation base. Jiang Chen had grown to a point where he was about to surpass Gu Firmament’s strength. Second, it was because of his astuteness. He

was able to anticipate the situation in advance and take certain countermeasures. Hence, it was virtually impossible to locate Jiang Chen, even for the Ninth Grade Great Saints of the six major palaces when Jiang Chen decided to go into hiding.

“Let’s go.”

Without wasting any more time, Desolate Emperor turned and led his people back to Saint Origin Palace through the portal in Desolate Family. He looked troubled when he thought about executing Desolate Palace’s big plan that had been hidden for a hundred a years.

.....

The Devil World!

Devil waves rolled at every corner, as though the entire world had been thrown into another kind of chaos. Jiang Chen and the other two were still holding their Qi even after entering this place. The present security status of the Devil World was very tight, there were devils everywhere. Moreover, every one of these devil guards had a special signaling talisman used to inform the headquarters should any accident happened in their area.

“Little Chen, where are we going now? I feel that we will be discovered if we moved forward,” asked Han Yan.

“Get close to a mildly strong Devil Saint, then I will use the Edifying Light to subdue it and ask for some things that is happening in this world.”

Jiang Chen, who was now staying within the domain of Han Yan, said.

“Roger.”

Han Yan’s divine sense swept across the area and locked onto a Second Grade Devil Saint that wasn’t far away. There was no one around this Devil Saint, so it made him the perfect target.

If they wanted to gather information about what's happening now, they needed to look for a devil that had a position. Comparing a Devil Saint to any ordinary devils, a Devil Saint would be more likely to receive information about important matters.

Han Yan's physique was encompassed by devil Qi that had fully integrated with the Qi of the Devil World. Therefore, no one in the Devil World would doubt his identity even if he strolled around openly.

The Second Grade Devil Saint couldn't help but frown when he saw Han Yan walking towards him. To him, Han Yan was a young stranger that he had never seen before. The Devil World was densely populated and it was only normal to have Devil Saints whom he never knew or saw before, but if it was a young Sixth Grade Devil Saint, he must have seen or at least heard of him.

It was odd that such a young genius was a stranger to him. In his point of view, the youth's cultivation base was about the same as Sang Ba's and that was enough to make this genius famous to all the devils in the Devil Race. So why does a Second Grade Devil Saint like him not know about this young genius?

"Who are you?" asked the Second Grade Devil Saint.

Han Yan didn't answer but grinned, which instantly gave him a sense of foreboding. But before he could react, a beam of light shone before his face and went straight into his brain.

The Second Grade Devil Saint's body trembled before saluting to Han Yan's domain with respect. With Jiang Chen's current cultivation base, it was too easy for him to subdue a Second Grade Devil Saint and the Devil Saint wouldn't have the strength to resist at all.

"Let me ask you something, what has exactly happened in the Devil World?" Jiang Chen asked.

“My lord, something big has happened in the Devil Mountain. According to my knowledge, the long-lost supreme treasure of the Devil Race is going to reveal itself in no time,” answered the Second Grade Devil Saint respectfully.

Chapter 1014 - Three Elders of Narang Family

When they heard the words ‘supreme treasure’, their eyes sparkled with greed. They had no idea what the Devil Mountain was, but they were certain that it was a place very important to the Devil Race. The treasure must be extraordinarily precious because they were willing to give up their attack on the Western Domain for this treasure.

“Where is the Devil Mountain?” asked Jiang Chen.

“It’s located at the central region of the Devil World. Most of the devils including the higher ups have converged on the Devil Mountain waiting for the the supreme treasure to appear. That place is now heavily guarded,” said the Second Grade Devil Saint truthfully.

After being edified, his mind only recognized one master—Jiang Chen. Therefore, he would never dare to deny Jiang Chen’s demand and command.

As a matter of fact, it was in Devil Race’s favor when their devils were edified by Jiang Chen because at least until now, they were still alive, unlike those who had died the moment they encountered Jiang Chen.

“Alright. That’s all. Don’t tell anyone about us coming into the Devil World, or else, I will kill you instantly,” said Jiang Chen sternly.

“Servant won’t dare to go against master’s wishes. You must be careful my lord.” The Second Grade Devil Saint responded in panic.

Subsequently, Han Yan quickly flew towards the direction of the Devil Mountain according to the navigation of the Second Grade Devil Saint. With the protection of Han Yan’s Ancient Divine Devil

Bloodline, it wasn't hard for them to get past the high level of security. Basically, they wouldn't encounter any sort of problem.

“Little Chen, your trick is awesome! That was an unbeatable skill that can be used against devils. Being able to tame the Devil Saint instantly and make the Devil Saint follow your orders to your whims, if I did not witness it with my own eyes, I wouldn't have believed it.” Han Yan said, sighing.

Although this wasn't his first time seeing Jiang Chen use the Edifying Light, he was still shocked. To anyone who didn't understand about the essence of the Edifying Light, it was undeniably an unbelievable and incomprehensible thing.

“The Edifying Light is one of the essential skills of Buddha Sect and many have longed to acquire it because of one important reason—its natural suppressive ability against the devils just like the Great Compassion Mantra. But the power of the Edifying Light is limited to caster's power. If you use it against a devil that is a lot stronger than you, you will receive a backlash. It's a pity that I have yet to acquire the Great Compassion Mantra. It is the legendary scripture of Buddha Sect. I wonder how powerful it will be,” explained Tyrant.

Thinking about the legendary Great Compassion Mantra gave him a sense of great longing. In truth, no one in the Buddha Sect wouldn't long for having the Great Compassion Mantra.

“Let's not talk about this first. The supreme treasure of the Devil Race is going to appear. This event is huge, so huge that all the higher ups of the Devil Race were willing to give up the war. Without a doubt, it must be an extraordinary treasure. I'm afraid it takes thousands of years before a great event like this happens. It's lucky for us that we have caught up with it this time,” said Jiang Chen.

“Exactly, Ah Yan. This is a great luck that you may not encounter in thousands of years.” Big Yellow looked at Han Yan and said.

“What does it have to do with me?” Han Yan said, looking baffled.

“How can it has nothing to do with you? It has something great to do with you. I’m afraid your bloodline is the highest among the Devil Race right now. And you have acquired the Great Devil Curse. Normally, the supreme treasure of the Devil Race has a soul. If you could obtain it, the benefits that you’ll get are boundless,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“That depends on my luck.” Han Yan shrugged and said.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were right. This was no doubt a rare and valuable encounter for him.

“But we must not rush to your objective. The Devil Mountain is the most dangerous place right now. We have to remain calm. Regardless of what we do, we must not expose ourselves before the incident, because once we have revealed who we are, we will be doomed. By then, not even the gods will be able to save us.” Jiang Chen’s tone turned slightly grimmer.

Both Han Yan and Tyrant nodded. They weren’t fools and they knew Jiang Chen’s words were true. They had intruded into the nest of the devil army. If they had alerted the devil's attention, they would face an unimaginable outcome.

The Devil Mountain was located at the heart of the Devil World. It wasn’t a mountain range. It was a solitary black mountain that’s at least 3,000 meters tall. There were thick smoke rolling above it and the surroundings were filled with dense devil Qi.

At the current moment, using the Devil Mountain as the center, hundreds of miles around the mountain was occupied with devils lined according to their position and cultivation base. All of them had a grim face while staring at the peak of the Devil World. The atmosphere was so quiet that not even breathing sounds could be heard.

Nearest to the Devil Mountain was a dozen of Super Devil Saints standing upright. Despite their identity, their faces were filled with respect while facing the huge Devil Mountain.

Perhaps, Jiang Chen and his comrades didn't understand what was happening. In fact, the way the devils respected the Devil Mountain was like how the Demon Race respected the Suspended Tower. To them, the summit of the mountain was the symbol of the Devil Race. Inside the Devil Mountain was a spatial zone. Over the years, there had been a lot of inheritance appearing inside that had nurtured plenty of experts and geniuses.

Sang Ba was one of the geniuses who acquired something in the mountain—the Great Devil Curse.

Today, some unusual changes occurred in this mountain because it was time for a supreme treasure to emerge. To the Devil Race, this was something big and exciting, just like how the lighting up of the ninth floor of the Suspended Tower excited all the people of Demon Race. They were all filled with anticipation of what treasure would appear.

This treasure might be the biggest asset that could be used to change the fate of the Devil Race, or the item that could revitalize their entire race, or the weapon that could be used to conquer the entire Saint Origin World. As such, every devil was filled with incomparable excitement and imagination.

Han Yan's group arrived at one of the sides facing the Devil Mountain silently. Their arrival didn't draw any attention because his body was emitting the similar devil Qi. Moreover, there were thousands of them present on the scene and all of them were focusing on the summit of the mountain. Who would have the extra effort to pay them any attention?

Hong Long...

The top of the mountain shook again, causing the large body of the mountain to sway. Seeing the situation, countless devils were

exhilarated. This was already the fifth time that the mountain shook. The shaking got faster as the frequency increased.

In other words, they were getting closer and closer to seeing the emergence of the treasure.

Jiang Chen and his brothers noticed a glimmer of light on the top of the Devil Mountain. It was black in color. Despite being wrapped by layers of black devil Qi, the flashes of the light wasn't blocked.

“My god! This scene is so spectacular.”

Han Yan couldn't help sighing.

“Little Chen, when do you think the supreme treasure will show itself?” asked Tyrant.

“It's hard to say. The movement of the Devil Mountain isn't big enough. Judging by its look, I'm afraid it will need a little more time, maybe a few more days.”

Jiang Chen gazed at the Devil Mountain and said plainly.

“A few more days? That long? Master Dog can't wait any longer.”

Big Yellow had a look of misery on his face.

“Stupid dog. You have to wait, whether you like it or not. We have to wait and observe calmly.”

Jiang Chen glared at Big Yellow. The thing that this dog lacked the most was patience. It was imperative that they stayed unnoticed at this critical moment.

.....

Saint Origin Palace!

Immediately after returning to their palaces, the six major palaces made preparations to deal with Jiang Chen. Each of the six major palaces assigned a Ninth Grade Great Saint to hunt Jiang Chen across the world. This time, they no longer cared about their

reputation. Because no one among the young generation could match Jiang Chen and even the Eighth Grade Great Saint elder, Desolate Wuleng, was killed by him, only a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint could guarantee the kill.

.....

Narang Palace!

Deep inside a spatial zone was a few formidable Ninth Grade Great Saints gathering together. Each of them exuded noble Qi. There were three elders who had the most powerful Qi among them. There were wisps of Immortal Qi swirling around their bodies. Their cultivation base had almost exceeded the Ninth Grade Great Saint and they were considered half-step Immortals.

Human Immortal was the first realm when once reached the Immortal Realm. However, making half-step into the Immortal Realm didn't make the cultivator a true Immortal. In fundamental terms, it was because the cultivator hadn't fully detached from the Mortal Realm yet. One should know the difference between the Mortal Realm and the Immortal Realm was like the difference between the sky and the land.

They were the three powerful Supreme Elders of Narang Palace. They were half-step Immortal, the supreme experts that were respected even by the palace master of Narang Palace, Narang Yunhe. These three would never appear in normal circumstances given the level they had reached. They wouldn't dare to interfere in any matters of Narang Palace unless it was related to the life or death of the palace. These people only had one wish—that was to break through into the Immortal Realm and ascend to the legendary Immortal World.

“I have already known about that Jiang Chen kid. He's just a Fifth Grade Great Saint. No matter how heaven defying he is, he needs more room for growth. He is harmless to our palace. Besides, the six major palaces have sent their experts to hunt him down. So,

I don't think he can live much longer. Narang Yunhe, why are you getting us into the matter of this small man? I imagine that your leadership is getting worse."

An old man sitting in the middle darted Narang Yunhe a glance. He was no doubt the First Ancestor of the three Narang Elders, with the strongest cultivation base and highest position. The two sitting next to him was the Second and Third Ancestor.

Narang Yunhe's facial expression changed dramatically. Immediately, he bowed with fear and out of respect.

"Ancestors, I wouldn't have bothered the three elders if it is only about the matter of Jiang Chen. There is another thing I want to report to you all," said Narang Yunhe.

"What is it?" asked the First Ancestor.

"It's something related to Desolate Palace. During the war against the Devil Race, the strongest geniuses were at the peak Sixth Grade Great Saint but a Seventh Grade Great Saint genius of Desolate Palace has appeared out of nowhere to combat Jiang Chen, and most of all, he was at the peak of the grade. If there was someone as strong as this, we will know about it. Therefore, I can conclude that this genius is one of the geniuses hidden by Desolate Palace," said Narang Yunhe.

Chapter 1015 - The Thirteen Guardians of Desolate Palace

Narang Yunhe must be a shrewd person in order to become the controller of Narang Palace. The appearance of Desolate Changyun was like a thorn in his heart that made him feel unbearable.

“Oh?”

The three elders knitted their eyebrows.

“Try to think about it, elders. Over the years, Desolate Palace has been growing significantly and has now become the strongest among the eight major palaces. I believe that there is a hidden agenda behind all these. I can conclude that Desolate Changyun has never shown his appearance before in Saint Origin Palace. So, it was unlikely that he has just advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint, much less possible to reach the peak of the Seventh Grade. Furthermore, Desolate Palace didn't even send this genius to fight Sang Ba. It seemed like Desolate Emperor felt threatened by Jiang Chen's existence which prompted him to send the hidden genius to eliminate Jiang Chen, unfortunately, that genius was killed instead.”

Narang Yunhe paused for a while before he continued. “So, I have reason to suspect that Desolate Changyun isn't the only genius hidden by Desolate Palace. They may have stronger and larger group of geniuses. Knowing how ambitious and scheming they are, no one can tell how many experts they have hidden from us. Therefore, I have requested the the elders for a meeting to discuss whether Narang Palace should make early preparations for Desolate Palace's hidden agenda.”

The three elders immediately fell into deep contemplation. These three elderly had reached the cultivation where they were no longer ordinary mortals. They understood Narang Yunhe's words clearly, as well as the present status of Saint Origin Palace.

Although the six major palaces stood on the same side when it came to Jiang Chen, the six of them were still acting on their own will and had competition among themselves. If there was the chance to annex the other palaces, Desolate Palace clearly wouldn't miss it. In fact, if Narang Palace was presented with such an opportunity, they wouldn't let it slip away as well.

“First Ancestor, what Narang Yunhe said wasn't unreasonable. Desolate Palace may have hidden something greater besides those geniuses. All these years, they have developed rapidly, and have been in charge of the Law Enforcement Palace, and allocated lots of cultivation resources to Desolate Palace. It is impossible to deny their desire to dominate. Their current strength right now is enough to suppress all the other seven major palaces. Thus, we must prepare for it as soon as possible.”

Said the Second Ancestor.

“You're right. Whether Desolate Palace has a hidden agenda or not, we must all take reasonable precautions.”

First Ancestor nodded, agreeing that making early preparations wouldn't do the palace any harm.

A similar scene took place in Gu, Demon, Shi, Dan, Bin and Huo Palaces. The higher ups of the eight major palaces were no fools. The appearance of Desolate Changyun had raised their alertness against Desolate Palace. In any case, they must be well prepared for it to avoid any upheavals in their palace should Desolate Palace really attacked them.

Desolate Palace!

In the deep layer of a spatial zone just like the one in Narang Palace, however, this was much more powerful than the spatial zone in Narang Palace. The atmosphere of the area was filled with Immortal Qi. Just by standing and breathing here could allow one to grow stronger. It was a perfect place for cultivation.

In front of the spatial zone was a gold-red throne, an old man of around fifty years old sat on it. He looked vigorous but had a slightly thin body with a beard on his chin. His presence gave people a sense of emptiness. If one tried to sweep the entire area using divine sense, one would find the place empty.

Below the elder were a dozen of powerful experts kneeling down. Most of them were formidable Ninth Grade Great Saints, four of them were half-step Immortals; Desolate Emperor was one of them. Despite being a half-step Immortal, he wasn't exempted from kneeling down in prostration before the elder. He even had to control his breathing to avoid showing any signs of disrespect towards the elder.

This was because the elder was no mortal. He had already exceeded the Mortal Realm, he was a true Human Immortal that was high and mighty and would always be worshipped by any mortal.

"I request Ancestor to locate the whereabouts of Jiang Chen."

Desolate Emperor lifted his head and clasped his fists.

"I have already known the whereabouts of that man. He is now in the Devil World." Said the Immoral Ancestor.

"What? Devil World? That's not possible. The gates of the Devil World has already been closed and was deployed by a powerful seal. Not even a Ninth Grade Great Saint could enter it without causing a commotion."

Desolate Emperor had an incredulous look.

"Desolate Emperor, are you questioning my ability?"

The Ancestor darted Desolate Emperor a glance which sent chills down his spine, as though his soul was going to be stripped off his body. An Immortal was no doubt too terrifying. Desolate Emperor had a feeling that although he was a powerful Ninth Grade Great Saint, the Ancestor could easily kill him with just a glance.

“I wouldn’t dare to.”

Desolate Emperor looked frightened. He wouldn’t have thought that Jiang Chen would enter the Devil World or have the means to sneak into the Devil World. This meant that none of them would be able to eliminate him. The Devil World was currently closed due to some major event happening there. If they sent Ninth Grade Great Saints into the Devil World to hunt Jiang Chen, instead of finding Jiang Chen, they would be besieged by the Super Devil Saints.

However, if Ancestor was the one to search for Jiang Chen, not only could he eliminate him but also the entire Devil Race, unfortunately, it was unrealistic. Firstly, the Ancestor wouldn’t waste his time on a puny figure. Secondly, the existence of Immortals in Desolate Palace had always been a secret.

“He’s just a little figure, there’s no need to place him into your minds. Besides, that man will certainly die after entering the Devil World.”

Said the Ancestor.

“That’s true. That man has expended all of his efforts just to enter the Devil World. He failed to realize the danger that lies behind those gates. Once he was found by the devils, he is going to die for sure. That will save us the effort to hunt him down.”

Desolate Emperor nodded.

“Some puny being like Jiang Chen isn’t much of a concern, but the appearance of Desolate Changyun has aroused the suspicion of the other seven major palaces. After many years of hard work, the geniuses that we have secretly trained have now grown very strong. As such, there is no need to delay our plan any longer.”

The Ancestor’s eyes sparkled.

The others’ eyes also glittered after hearing this. They had waited for far too long for this day to come. All these years, they

had been dreaming of dominating Saint Origin Palace.

“Ancestor, we’ve waited for a long time for this day to come, but the other seven palaces aren’t easy to deal with. With the seven of them combined, they have a significant number of half-step Immortals in total. I’m afraid that we will suffer a great loss during the battle.”

Said Desolate Emperor.

“So what? Do you think the few of us were just enjoying our sweet time all these years? We have selected rare geniuses and secretly nurtured a large batch of formidable geniuses. You all come out now.”

The Ancestor revealed a smirk. He waved his hand, creating a small opening in the void. Subsequently, the Qi of more than twenty individuals rushed out before roughly twenty youths appeared on the scene. Each and every one of them had a look of pride on their faces. Their cultivation base ranged from Seventh Grade to Eighth Grade Great Saints.

“Each and every one of them can jump one grade, meaning that an Eighth Grade Great Saint was as strong as a Ninth Grade Great Saint. Of course, this group is the weakest. The strongest group is them.”

The Ancestor waved again, then another group of people descended. There were a total of twelve cultivators. Ten were males and two were females. They had been staying in the dark for many years until today.

The sudden emergence of these twelve individuals solidified the air in the atmosphere. Each of them emitted a Qi that gave people the creeps. Even Desolate Emperor – a peak Ninth Grade Great Saint – felt a great deal of pressure from these people.

“All of them are Ninth Grade Great Saints...”

Desolate Emperor, as well as the other higher ups were startled.

A few of the half-step Immortals left their mouths wide open upon seeing the appearance of these twelve people. They only knew that the Ancestors had secretly trained peerless geniuses. They had never expected that these geniuses would be this strong. They had also never expected to see a batch of Ninth Grade Great Saints. Who would believe this even if it was spread across the entire Saint Origin Palace? Releasing any one of them to the public could shake the entire world. If the one who went to get rid of Jiang Chen wasn't Desolate Changyun but one of these twelve geniuses, they were afraid that Jiang Chen would've been turned to ashes by now.

“They are the true geniuses that we have trained and nurtured. They have lost their original names. From now on, they are called the Thirteen Guardians. Any one of them is strong enough to fight against a half-step Immortal. The most powerful among them is the Second Guardian, not even a half-step Immortal could be his match.”

Said the Ancestor proudly.

Hiss.....

All the higher ups of Desolate Palace gasped, feeling the horrifyingness of this new group. With so many half-step Immortals, it would be effortless to annihilate any one of the seven major palaces.

“Ancestor, you said Thirteen Guardians? But why are there only twelve of them?”

Asked Desolate Emperor.

“It's because the Big Guardian is about to break through into the half-step Immortal. I might as well tell you this, once the Big Guardian reaches that level, his power will be the same as an early-stage Human Immortal, and won't be affected by the law of Immortal World given his talent. It won't take him long to ascend to the Immortal World after this break through.”

Said the Ancestor. His proud-looking face intensified when he mentioned about the Big Guardian. This young genius was their true secret killing weapon. Once this genius was released, no one in Saint Origin World would be able to defeat him.

“Ha-ha! Great, this is great. With such forces, I believe that Desolate Palace will be powerful enough to annihilate the other palaces. The day of Desolate Palace reigning over the Saint Origin Palace has finally arrived.”

“That’s right. The existence of the Thirteen Guardians is the greatest of all the peerless young generation and only we, the Desolate Palace is able to produce such geniuses. Even if Jiang Chen was to be compared to them, he is only as weak as an ant.”

“Let’s begin the war. Where should we start from? I’m getting a little impatient.”

.....

The higher ups were stirred up, it was as though the entire Saint Origin World was already theirs for the taking.

Chapter 1016 - The Supreme Devil Wand

Undeniably, the overall strength of Desolate Palace was too powerful even if the few Human Immortals were excluded. Neither of the seven major palaces could hold a candle to their combat strength. The question was who, in this world, would be as powerful as the Thirteen Guardians? With such forces, it would take them less than a day to annihilate one palace.

It couldn't be helped when Desolate Emperor and the others had completely pushed Jiang Chen out of their minds after seeing the Thirteen Guardians. There was no one under the Heavens and Earth that could be compared with any one of them, let alone these 13. The Fifth Grade Great Saint Jiang Chen was just like an insect in front of the Thirteen Guardians. Any one of the guardian could pinch him to death.

However, Desolate Palace's decision to give up on Jiang Chen would prove to be a terrible mistake eventually. When the time came that Jiang Chen would annihilate Desolate Palace, those immortal ancestors regretted it enormously. Of course, that would be a later story.

"Thirteen Guardians, you all have to follow the orders of Desolate Emperor from now on. We will strike three days later. I hope that you all can show the majestic spirit of Desolate Palace by conquering the entire Saint Origin Palace in the shortest time possible." The Ancestor said to the Thirteen Guardians.

"Yes, Ancestor."

The Thirteen Guardians bowed simultaneously and responsively to avoid showing any signs of disrespect to the high and mighty Human Immortal.

Though everything was going calmly in Saint Origin Palace, the atmosphere made people feel as if a storm was coming, especially for the higher ups. Currently, the seven major palaces were

working against the clock to prepare for the upcoming chaos.

Meanwhile, in the Devil World.

The shaking of the mountain was becoming stronger. Countless of devils had focused all their concentration on it. The whole scene was extremely quiet, not a single one spoke or moved.

A day later!

Hong Long...

The Devil World shook violently all of a sudden while the black light above the summit turned denser. If one looked closely, one could see that something was being condensed in the thick cloud of illumination. It was the embryonic shape of a wand. Even though it was only an embryonic form, everyone could feel its grandeur.

“Look, what is that?”

“It looks like a scepter. Could this be the supreme treasure?”

“Oh Lord! That’s the Supreme Devil Wand! That’s the embryonic form of the legendary Supreme Devil Wand! Our entire race will be overjoyed to see this falling into our possession.”

“Exactly. It is the legendary Supreme Devil Wand. It symbolizes the power of the highest ruler. Only the noblest bloodline in the Devil Race could wield that wand. As far as I know, the power of the wand is boundless. If our race could use this wand, our overall strength will grow to an unimaginable extent in the next 100 years. By then, we will reign over the entire Saint Origin World and no one will be able to stop us!”

“Quiet! Making noise in front of the Supreme Devil King is a blasphemy. Listen up, fellow devils, be on your knees now!”

.....

Astonishment filled everyone’s mind when they discerned the shape of the supreme treasure. A Ninth Grade Devil Saint immediately urged the other devils to kneel down as a form of

respect for the Supreme Devil Wand.

Han Yan fell on his knees too. Now that they had reached the most critical moment of the event, he couldn't afford to expose their identities at this time. It was already imaginable what the consequences would be if they did reveal their true identities; they might be instantly ripped apart by the devil experts.

"Little Chen, do you have any idea about that Supreme Devil Wand? Is it very powerful?" Big Yellow asked, puzzled.

"I don't know how powerful the Supreme Devil Wand is, but that item is a symbol of something to the Devil Race. To put it in another way, that Supreme Devil Wand is akin to the Totem Divine Seal of the Demon Race. Try to recall how the people of Demon Race reacted back when the Totem Divine Seal descended upon you," replied Jiang Chen.

In fact, he didn't imagine that such a legendary wand would emerge in the Devil Race. Even those formidable devils wouldn't show the slightest bit of disrespect to the Supreme Devil Wand because that was their belief. They believed that the Supreme Devil Wand symbolized authority and supremacy.

"A precious item like this consisted of souls. Only the noblest bloodline in the Devil Race can be recognized by the Supreme Devil Wand. Then, the individual will wield the Supreme Devil Wand and become the ruler of the Devil Race. Ah Yan, your golden opportunity has come. If you can wield the Supreme Devil Wand, everyone in the Devil Race will need to follow your commands." Tyrant said, his eyes were about to glitter like spotlight.

"What the h*ll? Rule the entire Devil Race? Isn't that too much? The Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and the Great Devil Curse in Ah Yan's physique will make it possible for him to wield that Supreme Devil Wand. If he can really conquer the entire Devil Race, the outcome would surely be unimaginable."

Big Yellow seemed tremendously excited, as if Han Yan had

already acquired the Supreme Devil Wand.

Han Yan didn't speak but his eyes were fixed on the embryonic form of the wand with a sense of longing. As the possessor of the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, he knew very clearly how great the wand was to him. It would be his great luck if he could acquire this item.

Nevertheless, such an item couldn't be obtained by force. The Supreme Devil Wand had its own soul and would find its own master. As such, getting this item would only depend on his luck.

Hong Long...

The Devil Mountain shook even more intensely, looking as if it was going to collapse at any moment, while the image of the wand above the summit got clearer. Traces of majestic devil aura that could shock one's soul and heart was released. Gusts of devil winds rippled in the air, bending the void and producing crackling sounds. Thousands of devils were kneeling on the ground in perfect silence, waiting to witness the birth of the Supreme Devil Wand, waiting to see the arrival of a miracle.

Another hour of waiting passed. At last, an opening was blown on the Devil Mountain accompanied by a loud roar. Then, a wand drifted out from the opening. Countless beams of black light radiated from the wand to every corner of the Devil World. The black light was sacred to the devils.

At this particular moment, everyone raised their heads and gazed at the drifting black wand overhead. Without a doubt, the wand was the legendary Supreme Devil Wand.

The wand was as dark as ink and with the length of three meters. The surface was engraved with lines of unfathomable devil marks. It looked ancient and noble that no one dared to stare directly at it.

The legendary Supreme Devil Wand symbolized power, status and belief. Now that it has emerged in the world, it will symbolize

the fate and future of the Devil Race. No one in the scene didn't feel excited about it.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The wand trembled and produced buzzing sounds before it turned and moved downwards, to the devils below. Beams of black light radiated once more from the wand, falling upon every devil.

At this moment, even the half-step Devil Immortals were on the scene. There were four of them, kneeling like the others and receiving the black beams of light. The atmosphere was awfully quiet. Not a single sound was heard. This was because they knew that this moment was the most sacred moment of all—the Supreme Devil Wand was looking for or selecting its master.

Neither of the devils dared disrespect the wand. Even the half-step Devil Immortals didn't dare to snatch the wand directly because now was the time for the wand to choose its master instead of the master snatching it.

The hearts of thousands of devils pounded excitedly, including those devils who had inferior bloodline. Each of them were filled with longing. If they were chosen by the Supreme Devil Wand, their position and status would instantly skyrocket. Additionally, the devil's cultivation would surely advance by leaps and bounds after obtaining the inheritance of the wand. This was a great opportunity that wouldn't appear even in 10, 000 years.

The black light swept through the crowd of devils, including those formidable half-step Devil Immortals and Super Devil Saints, but unfortunately, the wand didn't stop. This disappointed them very much. Anyway, they were already mentally prepared for such a result. After all, things like this depended mostly on one's luck instead of power.

“Ah Yan, stealthily circulate your bloodline and Great Devil Curse now.” Jiang Chen reminded.

“Alright.” Han Yan replied.

Quickly, he circulated his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline to the maximum along with the Great Devil Curse. Suddenly, a black beam of light shot out from the Supreme Devil Wand towards Han Yan, encompassing him.

At the same time, the Supreme Devil Wand made another response. High above the Devil Mountain, a black pillar of light drifted below until it reached Han Yan’s head; his entire body was now enshrouded by the black light.

Clamor...

Countless eyes looked over to Han Yan. Each one of them were smart enough to know that this situation meant that some lucky devil had been recognized by the Supreme Devil Wand.

“Haha! It worked!” Big Yellow screamed excitedly.

“This is really special.” Jiang Chen was full of smile.

He was not surprised that Han Yan was able to obtain the Supreme Devil Wand because the wand had no reason not to choose someone with such a noble bloodline and talent.

“Who’s he? I have never seen this Devil Saint before. But he has a strong bloodline, I think it’s the legendary Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. No wonder the Supreme Devil Wand recognized him,” someone exclaimed.

This time, Han Yan had become the focus of all attention.

Chapter 1017 - The Heaven Defying Fortune

“That’s the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline from the supreme lineage of Devil Race! Why haven’t I seen this man before? And he has already reached the sixth grade of the Great Saint realm at such a young age. A genius like him shouldn’t be unknown to everyone.”

“No, he doesn’t belong to our race. He’s a human that has intruded into our land. However, how could a human possess the complete Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline? This is unbelievable!”

“He’s a human! How can a human obtain our Supreme Devil Wand? Kill him!”

.....

The Devil Race was equipped with a unique eyesight that could straightaway identify Han Yan’s complete Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, however they could also see through his origin, and that he wasn’t a devil. This had made them hostile. Some experts even released killing intent, but none of them dared to make a move because of the Supreme Devil Wand.

“Stay where you are.” Then, a half-step Devil Immortal said.

His gaze fell upon Han Yan and the Supreme Devil Wand before sweeping around the area. He said, “No one in our race is allowed to desecrate the dignity of the Supreme Devil Wand. Although he’s a human, he possesses the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and that makes him one of us. The Supreme Devil Wand must have its own reason for choosing him. We should observe the situation calmly. If he was fully recognized by the Supreme Devil Wand, he will become the supreme ruler of the our race. By that time, everyone, regardless of what rank or position they had, has to obey his commands, because the Supreme Devil Wand is the faith of the our race. However, if he failed to take full control of the Supreme Devil Wand, we will kill him immediately.”

Neither of the devils dared to say another word after his speech. Actually, what the half-step Devil Immortal said was undeniably correct. The present situation wasn't just about humans or devils. With the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, Han Yan would be regarded as one of the members in the Devil Race. More importantly, the decision was up to the Supreme Devil Wand.

The Supreme Devil Wand was the highest belief of the Devil Race. It symbolized the power of the supreme ruler. Anyone in the Devil Race was forbidden to disrespect it. If Han Yan really could wield the Supreme Devil Wand, every devil in the entire Devil Race was obliged to follow his command despite his origin.

Han Yan was submerged by the black light. Currently, he was having another feeling. He had already been recognized by the Supreme Devil Wand and was communicating with it.

“Ha!” All of a sudden, Han Yan shouted.

He extended his palm towards the direction of the Supreme Devil Wand above. Then, the wand immediately flew to his grip as if it had been summoned. It was bouncing incessantly in his palm. The wand felt joyful for finding its rightful master. No one would be able to imagine the joy that it was feeling.

“He succeeded.”

Inside the domain of Han Yan, Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. Delight was revealed on the faces of the two men and dog, and at the same time, they heaved a sigh of relief. One should know that they were now at an incomparably dangerous situation. They were completely surrounded by the Devil Race. Just taking the half-step Devil Immortal into consideration, anyone would admit their scary combat power. If Han Yan failed to wield the Supreme Devil Wand, they were afraid that the devils would immediately attack them. Even if Jiang Chen had three extra heads and six extra arms, all of them would have to die.

Han Yan burst into laughter, and immediately, he whispered to

Jiang Chen and the others via divine sense. “It turns out that my Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline isn’t the only reason I can wield this Supreme Devil Wand. It made me the perfect candidate after I fused the Great Devil Curse into my bloodline. In fact, the Great Devil Curse originated from the Supreme Devil Wand. When Sang Ba acquired the Great Devil Curse, it must be one of the inheritances of the Supreme Devil Wand. The wand will only reveal itself when the Great Devil Curse is successfully cultivated. Therefore, this wand should be Sang Ba’s, too bad that he’s already dead while I have also cultivated the Great Devil Curse. In the end, it became mine. Isn’t this my good fortune?”

After hearing Han Yan’s words, Jiang Chen and Tyrant couldn’t help sighing. Indeed, this was a great fortune that couldn’t be described as coincidental. Back when Sang Ba acquired the Great Devil Curse, it provided a sign for the birth of the Supreme Devil Wand. The master that the wand was looking for was a devil with supreme bloodline and had cultivated the Great Devil Curse. That made Sang Ba the perfect candidate to be the bearer of the wand, but he was dead.

It just so happened that Han Yan had cultivated the Great Devil Curse recently, and his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline was nobler than Sang Ba’s. Thus, he became the true bearer of the Supreme Devil Wand. A fortune like this could only be described as heaven defying. If Sang Ba knew about this, his spirit would certainly cough out blood due to anger, and would die again.

“Little Chen, I’m going to integrate the Supreme Devil Wand completely, which will also tremendously improve my cultivation base. The moment I have taken full control of the wand, I will become the belief of the Devil Race and all of the devils will be under my control. But this may take some time. So you guys would have to continue hiding inside my domain while holding your Qi. When I have fully integrated the Supreme Devil Wand, all of us will be safe. By that time, the entire Devil Race will belong to us.”

Han Yan said.

Then, his body slowly rose to the sky while the Supreme Devil Wand flew up once more and suspended above his head, constantly radiating black light into his body. It was obvious that Han Yan's power was increasing unceasingly as the black light was entering his body.

“Dang! He has really succeeded. We are going to rule the whole Devil Race. How ambitious! Have you all seen them? Not just the Super Devil Saints, but the few half-step Devil Immortals. If we truly ruled the Devil Race, we don't have to worry about Saint Origin Palace when we go there, let alone the six major palaces.”

Big Yellow had gotten carried away.

“Indeed. If we can gain full control of the Devil Race, we don't have to fear the six major palaces anymore.”

Tyrant smiled and nodded. Imagining about the outcome exhilarated him.

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curled to a smile. He didn't speak because he didn't put the five major palaces in his eyes, except for Desolate Palace which had Human Immortals. Even if they have half-step Devil Immortals, it wasn't worth mentioning before Desolate Palace.

Nevertheless, it would bring them enormous benefits if they could rule the whole Devil Race. Their overall strength would grow astronomically with this much devil army. No one had any idea how much chaos this devil army could create in Saint Origin World if they were all sent to the battlefield.

The integration process between Han Yan and the Supreme Devil Wand was destined to be a slow process. All the devil experts were watching Han Yan. They were all witnessing the miracle that had never appeared in the last thousand years.

A day later, Han Yan's cultivation base rushed to the Seventh

Grade Great Saint. It showed how tremendous the benefits he obtained from the Supreme Devil Wand, but he obviously hadn't reached the end of the advancement. His cultivation base was still increasing while integrating the Supreme Devil Wand.

"Darn it! He has broken through the Seventh Grade Great Saint. At this rate, he is going to break through into the Eighth Grade Great Saint." said Big Yellow, clearly annoyed.

"This is the great fortune of Ah Yan. When the integration is complete, he won't have a problem advancing to the Eighth Grade Great Saint." Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Seeing Han Yan's achievements, he naturally felt very happy. After all, they were sworn brothers. They had established their friendship when they were still in Eastern Continent.

Before going through so many things along the way, he didn't expect that they would achieve what they had today. Nangong Wentian, on the other hand, had gone into seclusion in the deepest layer of a spatial zone at the time in Nebula Sect, and wasn't even out yet. Clearly, the gap between them and him had been pulled wider.

Another day passed like the blink of an eye. Han Yan's current cultivation base had hit the peak of Seventh Grade Great Saint, only a step more to reach the next grade. Additionally, the integration between him and the wand was reaching the final stage.

Meanwhile in Saint Origin Palace!

The Ancestor of Desolate Palace had given three days' time before executing the plan. Today was the day that their big plan would be carried out. All the selected experts stood in formation, ready for the next command. The army was headed by Desolate Emperor. There were four half-step Human Immortal, a dozen powerful Ninth Grade Great Saints and a group of Seventh and Eighth Grade Great Saint geniuses.

What was more frightening about this army was the twelve experts of the Thirteen Guardians. Each and every one of them had the combat strength of a half-step Human Immortal, the strongest was the Second Guardian who was powerful enough to kill a half-step Human Immortal. With these powerful forces, the other seven major palaces wouldn't be able to stop them even if they had done the necessary preparation.

“Desolate Emperor, our great plan is finally executed. The moment Desolate Palace dominates the entire Saint Origin World will arrive soon and this will create a new chapter for Saint Origin World. Where shall we begin, commander?” A half-step Human Immortal elder said.

His identity and status were both above Desolate Emperor, but due to the Ancestor having appointed Desolate Emperor to lead the army, all the half-step Human Immortals were required to ask for Desolate Emperor's advice.

“We are closest to Narang Palace, so we shall start from there first. We will use our massive combat power to suppress them. If they are smart enough, they will surrender to us. But if they refuse to do so, we shall not be lenient to them.”

Desolate Emperor's Qi fluctuated majestically. He had been waiting for this day to arrive for far too long.

“Well, let's start from Narang Palace then.” The supreme elder nodded.

To them, it didn't matter which palace they start with because all of the seven major palaces were within their scope of attack. Their objective was to rule the entire Saint Origin Palace. None of them would be spared. As Narang Palace was the closest to them, they would begin there first before devouring the next major palace.

Chapter 1018 - The Overpowering Second Guardian

Narang Palace.

When the three Narang elders walked out of the deep layer of the spatial zone, their facial expression hardened. They had an ominous feeling in their hearts, which was rare. Moreover, the three of them felt the same, indicating that something bad is going to happen.

“First Ancestor, it’s been many years but I haven’t felt this uneasy. It seems like something big is going to happen.” Second Ancestor said.

“I have the same feeling. It seems like Narang Palace is in danger. Is it because Desolate Palace is going to strike us?” Third Ancestor said, looking over at the direction of Desolate Palace.

Suddenly, winds and clouds changed its course. Innumerable silhouettes emerged from sight. They were moving at extreme speed, arriving at Narang Palace in just a few blinks. There weren’t a lot of them, only a few dozens, but the aura emitted from this group was countless folds stronger than tens of thousands of experts together.

The three elders’ facial expression changed dramatically, they could feel a strong killing intent from these people. Even if they thought that Desolate Palace was strong, they had still underestimated them. The strength of Desolate Palace had gone beyond their imagination which suffocated them, like a huge mountain had crushed down from above.

“Quick! Hold up the defensive grand formation!” First Ancestor yelled.

Such a great movement from Desolate Palace struck them like a storm. It not only shocked the three Narang elders but also the

disciples and elders in Narang Palace. Everyone was looking up at the uninvited guests. Some weaker disciples began to shiver.

“What’s going on? They are the people of Desolate Palace. How can they have this many experts?”

“Why did these Desolate Palace experts came here? They don’t seem kind and polite. Are they going to wage war against us?”

“That’s a very strong camp of experts. I wonder how did they have so many experts.”

.....

Everyone was startled and their faces turned ugly. Many of them felt that something wasn’t right. The aura emitted by the uninvited guests was too strong and irresistible. Also, a defensive grand formation was deployed over the sky above Narang Palace. This was the first time that this grand formation was deployed since the establishment of Narang Palace.

Such a grand formation would only be deployed when Narang Palace was facing a very critical situation. In other words, the present situation had reached the most dangerous point. Clearly, the intention of Desolate Palace for coming here was to deal with Narang Palace.

Swoosh... *Swoosh...* *Swoosh...*

Every Great Saint expert of Narang Palace flew to the sky to meet the three Narang elders. Their gazes fell upon the opposite group of experts, and fear bloomed in their hearts.

“They have a very strong formation. So, this is the true strength of Desolate Palace.” Narang Yunhe sighed, he couldn’t believe what he was seeing.

“Desolate Emperor, what do your Desolate Palace intend to do?” Narang Yunhe took a step forth and said loudly.

As the palace master of Narang Palace and the true patriarch of

Narang Family, he was obliged to stand up to these uninvited guests.

“Haha! Narang Yunhe, can’t you see what we are trying to do? Our palace has hidden our true forces for a very long time just for this day. Our plan is to rule Saint Origin Palace and dominate the entire Saint Origin World, and we will start from your palace. After annihilating your palace, we will continue to eliminate Huo, Shi, Dan, Bin, Gu and Demon Palace. Now, listen up every cultivator of Narang Palace. I hope that you all will surrender to us without making any meaningless resistance. From then on, you all will submit yourself to Desolate Palace and will be exempted from being exterminated.”

The loud voice of Desolate Emperor burst out like a thunder beside the ears of all the listeners. His attitude and intentions were incomparably clear, no extra explanation was needed.

“What?”

An uproar rippled through the crowd below. They were one of the dignified palaces in Saint Origin World. They had never thought of the day they would face annihilation. Even the three Narang elders hadn’t thought that this day would come. Before this, they viewed Desolate Palace equal to the other six major palaces. They thought that Desolate Palace might be strong if confronting them alone, but with the seven palaces combined, Desolate Palace wouldn’t stand a chance.

Today’s situation had gone completely out of their expectation. Desolate Palace’s strength had exceeded their imagination entirely.

“Damn! Desolate Palace sure is ambitious. They want to rule the entire Saint Origin Palace? That’s a savage ambition.”

“But how can they have this many experts? Did you realize that all of these experts emerge out of nowhere? Every one of them is a supreme genius. The weakest among them is a Seventh Grade Great Saint. It seems like Desolate Changyun was just one of the

weakest geniuses. Look at the twelve experts around Desolate Emperor, they are simply too powerful. Each of them is a Ninth Grade Great Saint and I can feel tremendous pressure coming from each one of them. That is to say, every one of these twelve experts has the combat power to match a half-step Human Immortal. In addition, there are still a few more half-step Human Immortals, including Desolate Emperor. How are we going to fight this war?”

“How did Desolate Palace nurture this many supreme experts? What kind of astonishing secret did they hide from us?”

.....

All the higher ups of Narang Palace were shocked. Even the three Narang elders were at a loss for words. They had never imagined that Desolate Palace would become so powerful that they had no room to resist at all.

If the seven major palaces would unite to deal with Desolate Palace, there may still be a chance. Unfortunately, such chance no longer existed at the moment. Even if it existed, given the grudges and disagreements among them, it wouldn't be easy to get the seven of them to cooperate. Plus, Desolate Palace acted too quickly. They didn't even have the time to respond. It was too late to seek cooperation from the other palaces.

“Narang Yunhe, after seeing how strong we are, I believe you all know the repercussion of going against us. This is the submissive contract. As long as Narang Palace signs this contract, you all will become our subordinates, continuing your usual lives under the protection of Desolate Palace.”

Desolate Emperor waved his hand. A piece of golden contract appeared and floated in the air.

*Hong... *Hong...*

Innumerable anger surged out from every one of Narang Palace. Third Ancestor was the first to express his outrage. A submissive

contract? That was no different than being a slave. After signing the contract, all of them would become slaves of Desolate Palace that followed their every single command and order obediently.

Narang Palace was a noble and prestigious family across Saint Origin World. How could they accept to be someone else's slaves? It was outrageous.

“Haha! Desolate Emperor, Desolate Palace is truly ridiculous. We will never sign that contract even if it will cost our entire palace. If you want to annihilate Narang Palace so badly, I suggest you to do it now. I would like to see whether your palace will suffer great losses after the war.”

First Ancestor burst into laughter. As an old ancestor of Narang Palace, he would never allow anyone to trample upon the dignity of their palace.

“Humph!”

At this moment, a cold humph was heard from Desolate Palace's camp. Subsequently, a scholar with a jade-white face walked forth. He looked over thirty years old but his real age was probably a lot older. He had a casual and elegant bearing, and was dressed in white robe. His hand was holding a folding fan which emphasized the gentle and polite demeanor of a scholar.

When one really treated him as a scholar, one would suffer unthinkable consequences. This man was the Second Guardian amongst the thirteen. He was a peak Ninth Grade Great Saint expert. For the time being, he was the strongest amongst their camp.

His eyes fell upon the First Ancestor and said in a cold tone, “What qualification does an old man like you have to talk terms with us? You and I will have a battle. If you win, we will withdraw immediately and from then on, we will never offend Narang Palace again. If you lose, I will kill everyone of Narang Palace and leave no survivors behind.”

The Second Guardian's tone carried no emotions. He was like a demon that specialized in killing. His casual gesture was already enough to petrify a person.

“Okay. I’ll fight you.”

First Ancestor made a step forward and came outside the defensive grand formation.

“Ancestor!”

Narang Yunhe and the other higher ups exclaimed.

“Don’t worry.”

First Ancestor raised his hand, signaling them not to panic. Given the present situation, he knew it very clearly that it was impossible for Narang Palace to escape this attack. If their experts launched an attack together, Narang Palace’s grand formation wouldn’t be able to stand for long. So, he might as well accept the challenge with the Second Guardian. Perhaps that would give Narang Palace a chance to live.

Even if there was no chance, they would have to fight for their palace’s dignity.

“Mixed-Elemental Thunderbolt Palm!” First Ancestor bellowed, striking out his powerful palm strike.

Massive light energy was instantly condensed, turning into a dazzling giant palm that covered the sky, slamming against Second Guardian.

Hong Long...

Second Guardian struck with the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw but the power of this strike was many times stronger than any previous experts of Desolate Palace. His massive palm collided with First Ancestor’s Mixed-Elemental Thunderbolt Palm, creating a huge hole in the void. Under such ferocious attack, First Ancestor’s attack was pulverized before he was sent flying away.

Chapter 1019 - The Slavery Contract

Barf...

First Ancestor regained his balance and coughed out several mouthfuls of blood. His expression turned very ugly. Comparing his physical condition with his psychological status, the shock he felt was greater than his physical injuries. He lifted his head to gaze at the composed scholar, Second Guardian. Raging waves surged inside of him.

He was a half-step Human Immortal. Half of his foot had already stepped into the Immortal Realm. That was how strong he really was. He would never put any ordinary Ninth Grade Great Saint in his eyes because he could pinch any of them to death with a casual move. However, he hadn't imagined that Desolate Palace would produce a genius so powerful that he was not even his opponent.

“First Ancestor!” Many people exclaimed.

They could hardly believe what was happening before them. Their pale faces were filled with dread and despair. First Ancestor was the strongest expert in Narang Palace. Today, not even him could fight the Ninth Grade Great Saint genius, which made the entire Narang Palace look pitiful.

“It's over. Our palace is finished. The experts of Desolate Palace is too strong. How can we compete with them if even the First Ancestor can't fight them?”

“I have never expected that our dignified Narang Palace will end up so miserably today. Where's fairness?! All this time, Desolate Palace has been hiding their geniuses but none of us was able to discover it.”

“First Ancestor is defeated. Today's our end...”

.....

Despair and desperation rippled through the crowd inside

Narang Palace. That was a feeling which they had never felt before. They felt as if they had fallen from high above the sky and into the bottom of the valley.

On the other side, except for the eleven guardians, all of the higher ups of Desolate Palace, including Desolate Emperor, were shocked. A sense of fear was revealed in their eyes when they looked at Second Guardian. Although they had already anticipated his powerful strength, they had still not expected him to be this powerful, so powerful that even a half-step Human Immortal wasn't a match for him. One could imagine how terrifying his power was.

Clang!

On the other hand, the defeated First Ancestor didn't retreat. A razor-sharp combat weapon materialized in his hand with a swoosh. It looked unique and radiated glints of sharpness.

“Eliminate him!”

First Ancestor struck once more. The sharp blade shot out of his hand, slashing out a bright and earth-shattering blade light that cut the void into half. Innumerable cold waves gusted out from the interior of the void.

The blade light was like a heavenly river suspended in the sky, carrying endless destructive energy. It was created by the combination of a Super Saint Weapon and a powerful skill to eliminate the opponent, which made it tremendously stronger than the previous Mixed-Elemental Thunderbolt Palm. It reached Second Guardian in a blink.

Unfortunately, such a domineering skill was useless in front of Second Guardian. Second Guardian looked calm, totally not putting the strike in his eyes, as if this so-called devastating blow was just a normal and insignificant attack.

Hua La...

Second Guardian unfolded his fan and turned it into a giant fan of three hundred meters. Countless rays of golden lights were emitted out from the large fan, forming a peerless barrier that pressed against the incoming blade light. Suddenly, the blade light broke apart with a sound of 'Ka Cha' due to the pressure of the barrier. The strength of the barrier was stronger than the attack.

Hong Long...

The giant-sized fan continued crushing downwards, heavily pressing against First Ancestor.

Argh...

First Ancestor uttered an agonizing wail while bearing the unknown amount of pressure. Despite being a half-step Human Immortal, he couldn't defend against such a terrifying attack. One of his arms was crushed on the spot. This single attack made First Ancestor smell the stench of death.

Hua La...

Second Guardian turned over his palm and kept his giant fan. His face brimmed with cold pride as he gazed downwards at the First Ancestor. Currently, First Ancestor's body was full of blood. He was nothing more than a spent force. Second Guardian could send him to hell right away by just lifting his hand again casually.

However, First Ancestor was a half-step Human Immortal after all. He was still standing, alive, even after receiving such a serious injury.

Second Guardian struck again. His killing intent was overwhelming, seeming to kill First Ancestor with this attack, however, he was immediately stopped by Desolate Emperor.

Second Guardian frowned in dissatisfaction after being blocked by Desolate Emperor. He had already put Desolate Emperor out of his eyes given how powerful he was, but back in Desolate Palace, Ancestor had explicitly told them that Desolate Emperor would be

in command. Therefore, he stopped despite his reluctance.

In order to save Second Guardian's face, Desolate Emperor quickly added with a smile, "Second Guardian, if we can make Narang Palace sign the slave contract smoothly, it will be the best thing to do. There's no need to rush the killings. You know, we still have six more palaces to handle after this. If we are too mean to Narang Palace, it will make the others fight back relentlessly, which is something we don't wish to see. Our objective is to become the highest ruler of Saint Origin Palace and all the people of seven major palaces will become our slaves." Hearing what Desolate Emperor said, Second Guardian nodded and retreated back to the camp without saying a word.

"First Ancestor, you are a wise person. I think you don't wish to see Narang Palace fall into an irrevocable state. Although you are the strongest expert in Narang Palace, you aren't comparable to our experts. Let me warn you this, the Thirteen Guardians doesn't have very good temper. With their strength, I won't be able to stop them if they start slaughtering you all. So, I urge you to sign the slave contract and obey all of our orders from now on. Otherwise, everyone in Narang Palace will end tragically and would go extinct. Try to ponder hard about it. We won't give you too much time to reconsider as we have a very limited time."

Desolate Emperor struck out a ray of light, sending the slave contract directly to First Ancestor. He would leave the choice to the elder. If his opponent refused to submit themselves to Desolate Palace, no further discussion was needed besides annihilation. At this moment, there was nothing or no one in the world that could stop Desolate Palace from reaching their final objective.

The scene was in dead silence as everyone's gazes fell upon First Ancestor. This was the critical juncture where Narang Palace would either live or be exterminated.

First Ancestor took the contract in his hand. Both of his hands began to tremble as though the contract weighed a billion tons. On

the contract, it stated ‘Submissive Contract’, but in actual fact, it was a slave contract. Once they signed this contract, it would become the biggest disgrace recorded in the history of Narang Palace, which would make them lose the courage to raise their heads.

Nevertheless, refusing to sign the contract would bring extinction to Narang Palace. To put it bluntly, Narang Palace would disappear completely from the world and would become the past of Saint Origin World. More importantly, how could First Ancestor watch tens of thousands of his descendants die before him? It was a price that he cannot afford to pay.

“Ai! The Heaven wants our family to be annihilated...”

First Ancestor let out a mournful sigh while facing the sky, tears trickled down on his face.

“First Ancestor, we’ll fight with them. We won’t become slaves of Desolate Palace, even it means making the ultimate sacrifice!” Narang Yunhe said, his eyes had already turned red.

“That’s right. We have our own dignity. We will defend our dignity with our lives!”

“First Ancestor, give the orders now, we are willing to sacrifice our lives!”

.....

The people of Narang Palace was stirred up. None of them wanted to die, but neither of them wished to be someone else’s slaves either.

Amongst the Desolate camp, cold pairs of eyes were staring at Narang Palace. The eyes of the twelve guardians were emotionless. They were killing machines trained by Desolate Palace. The reason of their existence was to aid Desolate Palace in achieving its final objective.

The fate and the survival of the family had reached its final

moment. As long as Narang Palace rejected the contract, destruction would be upon them and would be erased from this world once and for all.

“Silence!”

First Ancestor glared at them, and then spurted out a mouthful of blood. It was his blood essence and the blood of Narang Palace. He was the strongest expert in Narang Palace, his blood ranked the highest among all the members of Narang Palace. Therefore, as long as his blood essence landed on the contract, every one of Narang Palace would be affected by the contract. Henceforth, they would have to obey the commands of Desolate Palace.

“First Ancestor!”

Seeing what happened, plenty of them shed tears.

“We only have hope by staying alive.”

First Ancestor uttered his last words before splashing his blood on the contract.

Buzz...

All of a sudden, the contract shook violently. A red halo appeared above everyone’s head. It was like the power of a curse that would follow them for the rest of their lives.

All kinds of negative emotions—reluctance, anger, frustration, humiliation, etc.—emerged in the sky above Narang Palace, but neither of them could do anything to change the situation.

Desolate Emperor stuck out his arms to grab the contract. His face was overflowed with delight. Conquering a palace without using weapons and attacks was the best way for Desolate Palace.

“First Ancestor of Narang Palace, you are a shrewd person. Don’t worry, Narang Palace will have a bright future just by following Desolate Palace. I, Desolate Emperor, will never treat any of you badly.” said Desolate Emperor aloud.

“Haha! I’m the sinner of Narang Palace. I’m the sinner of Narang Palace...”

First Ancestor shed a trickle of tears, he then yelled at the sky before his body burst into a mist of blood, and died...

The First Ancestor had ended his own life after saving Narang Palace in the most humiliating way. As the old ancestor of Narang Palace, he couldn’t bear to see his own descendants end up being annihilated, so he had to sign the contract. But after signing the contract, he had become the sinner, death was the only way out...

Chapter 1020 - Forming Alliances

“First Ancestor!”

Many high ranked elders of Narang Palace screamed mournfully. Tens of thousands of them fell on their knees. The pain of losing First Ancestor was heart-wrenching. It was indescribable and couldn't be understood by ordinary people. Second and Third Ancestor were staring at where First Ancestor disappeared with a helpless face. They were helpless against First Ancestor's action.

We will only have hopes by staying alive!

This was the last words said by First Ancestor, which would leave an eternal mark on their hearts. It sounded helpless but it was the truth. While lingering on with his last breath, he still chose the descendants. If he was confronting the enemy alone, they believed that he would not straight away end his own life. In fact, this was what he intended to do, but he needed to fight for the survival of the whole family first before heading to the path of death.

An individual and a family were both entirely different things. The former was about one's life whereas the latter was all about responsibility. First Ancestor couldn't decide the death of his family members. This created the greatest disgrace for Narang Palace throughout its history. It was a disgrace which they could never forget it. As long as the blood of Narang family remained, there was still hope for a turnaround despite being slaves of someone else.

“That Narang old man is a man with sentiments. He's worthy of respect even after he died.”

A half-step Human Immortal elder couldn't help but sigh. Even after First Ancestor died, he was still a respected figure among the rest of the people. As an expert of the older generation, he had been in touch with the three Narang elders during the old days. While they were still young geniuses, they had once travelled

around the world unhindered and experienced numerous battles together. Although they were hostile towards each other now, there was still a mutual respect between the two of them.

“First Ancestor is admirable. Don’t worry, after becoming the followers of Desolate Palace, you will not be treated unkindly. Now, listen up. All experts who are eighth grade and above, follow my lead to Shi Palace.”

Desolate Emperor gave the order promptly. First Ancestor’s death didn’t have any impact on their plans. Moreover, Narang Palace had already been subdued. So, all the experts of Narang Palace had been turned into Desolate Palace’s army, aiding to attack their next target—Shi Palace.

“Roger.”

Second and Third Ancestor nodded. All experts who were eighth grade and above stood out. Since the contract had already been signed, they were obliged to obey the orders of Desolate Palace unconditionally. This was a fact that couldn’t be changed for a period of time.

After subduing Narang Palace, Desolate Palace’s forces had grown stronger. It was already imaginable what kind of outcome Shi Palace would face after the arrival of this army.

Furthermore, Desolate Palace only spent a dozen minutes to subdue Narang Palace. They were afraid that Shi Palace hadn’t made sufficient preparations yet. In truth, any preparations was pointless if faced by their overpowering experts. The overall strength of Desolate Palace had already reached the extent where they could shake the world. Adding the experts of Narang Palace, Shi Palace only had two choices, either to be annihilated or be forced to sign the contract, just like what Narang Palace did.

In a distance, outside Shi Palace, a defensive grand formation was deployed. The half-step Human Immortals of Shi Palace, as well as their palace master stayed in their position, waiting for the war to

come. Clearly, Shi Palace was the first to know about what happened in Narang Palace. Given the relatively small area of Saint Origin Palace, it was not hard to know what was going on in the other palaces.

At this critical moment, there may still be a chance if the six major palaces united to defend their existence, but the time given was just too little and their relationship weren't very good. So, it was impossible to form an alliance within such a short period of time, Desolate Palace acted just too quickly.

The atmosphere in Shi Palace had become unusually tense, it was as though they were waiting for doomsday to befall them. Three old ancestors were present on the scene, standing beside the palace master with grim faces. They were determined to defend the palace against Desolate Palace, even if it meant sacrificing their own lives.

However, the arrival of Desolate experts crushed their determination instantaneously, because they found out that they weren't even qualified to fight them. Confronting such a powerful enemy formation, all they could do was to stay stunned, they were absolutely powerless to resist or defend.

Ultimately, Shi Palace couldn't escape their fate. The old ancestor with the highest cultivation signed the contract. The condition of the battle was very obvious. Any attempt to resist would be meaningless. The old ancestor couldn't watch his palace being annihilated, and thousands of disciples dying. It would be a scene of absolute tragedy.

Like what First Ancestor said, the family would only have hopes by staying alive.

Desolate Palace subdued Shi Palace after breaking their will, even without using any weapons and attacks. Two palaces had already submitted to Desolate Palace and this was only the beginning.

“All the experts of Shi Palace who are eighth grade and above,

join the army immediately. We'll head to Huo Palace now."

Desolate Emperor was resolute and incisive in his actions. He was going to subdue all the major palaces in a day and form a single unit, making him a legend and a supreme ruler of Saint Origin Palace which will be recorded in history.

Bin Palace!

Three old ancestors walked out and joined the elders. Each and every one of their faces looked incomparably grim. At this point, it would be impossible not to sense the crisis that was about to befall them. This would be the biggest crisis that Bin Palace ever faced in its history. It was a crisis that would lead to extinction.

"Old ancestor, what should we do now? Narang and Shi Palace have already fallen into Desolate Palace's hands. I heard they have signed the contract and are now considered as part of Desolate Palace's army. Do you think we can defend against them?"

"Exactly, Desolate Palace's next target is Huo Palace. Once they surrendered, Dan Palace will be next. Given the strength of Dan Palace's forces, it is very likely that they'll surrender immediately. Then, it will be our turn."

.....

The palace master of Bin Palace and a group of higher ups got very tensed. It all happened too sudden. No one had ever thought that Desolate Palace would act so aggressively, and had also become so strong.

"It seems like we only have two options."

The palace master of Bin Palace named Bin Changxiao said solemnly.

"Changxiao, what do you have in mind?" asked the old ancestor.

"The situation is already obvious. As long as Huo Palace and Dan Palace perished, we will be next. Considering all of our cultivation

bases, we will have no choice but to submit ourselves without resisting. However, I'm not willing to see Bin Palace be erased from this world after so many years. What we can do now is to form an alliance with the other major palaces to fight against Desolate Palace. Although our chances are small, it is still better than waiting for the end to befall us," said Bin Changxiao with a smile.

"Palace master's right. Forming an alliance with the other major palaces may not be able to change the outcome, but it's better than confronting the enemy alone."

Someone nodded.

"Then, let's go to the other major palaces. I believe they are well aware of the crisis, forming an alliance is our only chance of survival."

An old ancestor of Bin Palace nodded. At this point, there was no other way to respond to the incoming attack.

"It's too late to join forces with Huo Palace and Dan Palace now. Ancestor, we will head over to Gu Palace at once. I believe that Gu and Demon Palace already have an alliance. Once these two major palaces agreed to our alliance, we will immediately open a passageway between Gu and Bin Palace, letting all of our forces join the army in Gu Palace," said Bin Changxiao.

"But palace master, because of that Jiang Chen, I'm afraid that we can't get along with Gu Palace." An elder said worriedly.

"We have reached a point where Jiang Chen's issue is no longer a problem. What we need to do now is protect our existence. We have to ignore whatever misunderstanding or grudges we have towards Jiang Chen. Ancestor, we will go now, or else, it'll be too late," replied Bin Changxiao.

The ancestors had to admit that Bin Changxiao was a shrewd man who knows what to do in critical situations. Today, Desolate

Palace had risen, intending to rule the other seven major palaces, which made Jiang Chen the least of his worries. If Jiang Chen appeared and saved Bin Palace at this moment, not only would he dispel all of their grudges, he would even kneel before Jiang Chen as a sign of respect without hesitation.

“Okay.”

The three ancestors of Bin Palace nodded and left without any delay towards Gu Palace. They must take advantage of the time when Desolate Palace was still attacking Huo and Dan Palace to join forces with Gu Palace and Demon Palace. As for Huo Palace and Dan Palace, their fate had already been decided.

Gu Palace!

The atmosphere here was as tense as the atmosphere in Bin Palace. Like what Bin Changxiao said, Gu and Demon Palace already had an alliance. All the experts of Demon Palace were now in Gu Palace. Together, their armies had already deployed a defensive grand formation. Despite these two forces joining together, it still didn't give them any sense of security.

The experts of Gu and Demon Palace had gathered in the hall, discussing about the countermeasures.

At this moment, Bin Changxiao and the three ancestors entered the hall.

“Brother Gu, the situation is already pretty obvious. We, Bin Palace, is seeking to join forces with your palaces.” Bin Changxiao said straightforwardly.

Their time was running out, he couldn't afford to beat around the bush.

“If you sincerely want to join forces with us, we will certainly welcome you. However, I would like to ask whether you could dispel the grudges and conflicts between you and Jiang Chen,” said Gu Firmament.

He was surprised that Bin Palace came here to seek alliance with them. Everyone on the scene was no fool. All of them understood how much was at stake here. At this time, only by forming alliances could they help one another. If the seven major palaces united before Desolate Palace struck, Desolate Palace might not have acted so arrogantly and wouldn't have subdued several major palaces so quickly.

“As far as the fate of Bin Palace is concerned, our grudges against Jiang Chen has become the least of our worries. As long as we can survive through this crisis, we will forget the grudges between us and Jiang Chen. Brother Gu, we have no time to delay. I will create a passageway so that my people could come over now.” Bin Changxiao said.

Chapter 1021 - The Variable

Bin Changxiao was also a man with resoluteness and knew his priorities. The only barrier between Bin Palace and Gu Palace was Jiang Chen. Once the matter with Jiang Chen was resolved, there would be no more grudge they would hold against each other.

“Okay.”

Gu Firmament agreed immediately; the half-step Human Immortal ancestors of Gu Palace and Demon Palace also nodded. Given the present circumstances, Bin Palace’s initiative to join forces would bring tremendous benefits to both major palaces, because Desolate Palace was getting stronger, and harder to defeat as they continued to devour and subdue the other major palaces.

Regardless of whether it was Bin Palace or Gu Palace, which had existed in this world for a long period of time, neither of them would hope to see their palace’s destruction. Thought they still had no idea what the result would be, forming an alliance with other major palaces standing on similar side was the best thing to do since it would increase their overall strength.

There were nine of half-step Human Immortal present in the hall. With them combining their strength, it was effortless to create a passageway. So, Bin Changxiao had returned to Bin Palace with the quickest possible speed and led all of his people back to Gu Palace via the passageway.

While the three major palaces formed an alliance, Huo Palace couldn’t resist the strong pressure of Desolate army and was forced to sign the submissive contract in the end. By now, Desolate Palace had subdued Narang, Shi, and Huo Palace, and was on their way to Dan Palace. It seemed they were going to make Dan Palace surrender to them without difficulty. If they subdued the seven major palaces, Desolate Palace would be the only ruler of Saint Origin Palace.

In Gu Palace, despite three major palaces had joined forces, the atmosphere was still as tense as before. No one in the meeting hall talked. All kind of defensive measures had already been taken but it didn't make any of them feel safer.

Every powerful Great Saint expert in the meeting hall knew the gap between the two forces. There were only nine half-step Human Immortals in their camp and comparing that to the enemy's camp would show a tremendous difference.

Just the forces of the major palaces conquered by Desolate Palace was enough to deal a fatal damage to them.

"Everyone, the situation today has been clear. Although we have joined forces, it won't change the outcome at all. After gaining control over Dan Palace, they will come to deal with us. I'm afraid our defensive grand formation is not strong enough to withstand even a single attack of the twelve guardians," said Heavenly Peng King.

"According to the news, Desolate Palace has nurtured a group of talent which consists of one peak Ninth Grade Great Saint named Second Guardian. He was simply invincible. He was able to defeat Narang's First Ancestor in one strike. Although we have nine half-step Human Immortal here, none of us can match him." Bin Changxiao said with a frown.

Now that they were facing a very critical moment, they had to think of a workable countermeasures as soon as possible, or else the consequences would be unthinkable even after they had formed an alliance.

"Do you all still remember Jiang Chen?" said Gu Firmament.

Even at this moment, he couldn't help thinking about that rare genius who could constantly create miracles.

"We don't know where he is now. Besides, even if he appears, he can't help at all. I can't deny the fact that he is a talent that rarely

emerges in ten thousand years but too bad, his cultivation base is too low. He can't even defeat a Ninth Grade Great Saint, so how is he going to confront the twelve guardians?" Bin Changxiao said, shaking his head.

Jiang Chen was no doubt a rare genius but he was still too weak.

"No, we can never underestimate Jiang Chen. I have once analyzed him. He will be the greatest variable in this major crisis. If our palaces are able to survive this, it will all be because of Jiang Chen's contribution, because in my calculation, Jiang Chen is the only possible person that can change the situation." A half-step Human Immortal said.

He wasn't very good in fighting but he was well-versed in calculation and prediction. While he was racking his brain to calculate whether there was still a chance for Gu Palace and Demon Palace to survive, he suddenly discovered that Jiang Chen was the largest variable. To put it in another way, if Gu Palace and Demon Palace were able to stay intact after the catastrophe, it would be Jiang Chen who altered the situation.

"It's true that he is a miraculous man. If there really is a variable in this catastrophe, it will be him." Heavenly Peng King nodded and said.

He was a man with sharp eyesight. He was able to tell that Jiang Chen was the dragon among his peers, a man that couldn't be judged with common sense because the truth had always proved that he created miracles.

"Even if Jiang Chen is a variable, we don't know where he is right now. I'm afraid he doesn't even have a clue on what is happening in Saint Origin Palace. So, how could he come back in time?" said Bin Changxiao.

As soon as he finished speaking, Gu Firmament knitted his eyebrows. Presently, Jiang Chen had gone missing, not even he could get in touch with him. With this short window of time, it

was still unknown whether Jiang Chen could make any changes about the situation before Desolate Palace arrived Gu Palace.

“I have a plan,” said Heavenly Peng King with a smile.

“Heavenly Peng King, you know how to find Jiang Chen?” Gu Firmament looked at Heavenly Peng King.

“I won’t be able to locate Jiang Chen but I can find Big Yellow. I have once left him our most mysterious talisman. Wherever he is right now, he will be able to receive my messages. If I’m not mistaken, Big Yellow should be together with Jiang Chen right now,” said Heavenly Peng King.

“In that case, I hope Heavenly Peng King will send a message to him now as time is of the essence,” said Bin Changxiao.

Meanwhile in the Devil World!

Further away from the Devil Mountain, Han Yan had already gained full control on the Supreme Devil Wand after being recognized by the wand. His cultivation soared like a rocket until he reached the peak of Eighth Grade of Great Saint, leaving him only one step away from the Ninth Grade. Moreover, by wielding the Supreme Devil Wand, he could kill Ninth Grade Great Saint with ease.

“Greetings, Your Highness.”

Tens of thousands of devils were kneeling down before Han Yan. Even the formidable half-step Devil Immortals were no exception in showing their respect and admiration towards him. In their hearts, Han Yan was no longer a human, but a member of Devil Race. No, as a matter of fact, he wasn’t just a member, but the faith of Devil Race.

For any descendants of their race that could wield the Supreme Devil Wand would be given the right to command the entire race. In every devils’ eyes, Han Yan was the highest existence that no one would dare to deny his order as it was equivalent to denying

the order of the Supreme Devil Wand.

“Hahahaha!”

Han Yan burst into wild laughter while holding the Supreme Devil Wand. He had never dreamt of a day like today.

Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Tyrant walked out of Han Yan’s domain. At this time, they no longer had to hide themselves.

Seeing their sudden emergence, agitation spread instantly across the swarm of devils. Some recognized them, especially Tyrant, because he was the monk whom they hated the most.

“Humans! These humans have broken into our land! Take them down!”

A Super Devil Saint yelled, “Halt!”

Han Yan bellowed, “They are my brothers! We are on the same side. Don’t act rashly.”

Chapter 1022 - Despair Befall

One word from Han Yan had suppressed all the agitated devils. The Devil Race had professed their deep reverence for their belief—the Supreme Devil Wand which represented authority. Even the half-step Devil Immortals didn't dare have the slightest bit of reluctance and disobedience towards the Supreme Devil Wand. Han Yan had now become the supreme conqueror of Devil Race. He represented the highest authority, and every word he said was equivalent to a decree.

“Dang! He's too powerful. The Supreme Devil Wand is even stronger than my Totem Divine Seal. Ah Yan is undeniably awesome.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but sigh. If he didn't see it with his own eyes, he certainly wouldn't believe it even if he was threatened to death. A human controlling the entire Devil Race and even the half-step Devil Immortals? Anyone could imagine how exhilarating that was.

Suddenly, Big Yellow's body trembled and his ears twitched two times as his expression changed.

“What happened Big Yellow?”

Jiang Chen had the sharpest perception. He was able to detect the irregularities from Big Yellow right after it happened.

“Something big has happened in Saint Origin Palace.”

Said Big Yellow.

“Desolate Palace has already attacked?”

Jiang Chen's expression hardened. He was the only one who knew about Desolate Palace's overall strength and their secret plan. So, he could instantly imagine the seriousness of the matter.

“Yes. This news came from Heavenly Peng King. Desolate Palace

is overpowering. They have already taken down Narang, Shi and Huo Palace and are currently dealing with Dan Palace. Though the Gu, Demon and Bin Palace have formed an alliance, Desolate Palace is too strong for them to fight. According to him, there are twelve guardians in Desolate army, each of them were as powerful as a Ninth Grade Great Saint. There was a guy called Second Guardian who has defeated a half-step Human Immortal ancestor with just one move. Currently, the situation there is really critical. Once Desolate Palace subdued Dan Palace, the next will be the last three palaces. They won't stand a chance against Desolate Palace despite their alliance. An old ancestor of Gu Palace said that you are the key factor in this catastrophe. So, they hope that you can return as soon as possible. Otherwise, it will be too late to save them."

Big Yellow's tone was unprecedentedly solemn while conveying what Heavenly Peng King said to Jiang Chen.

"What's going on?"

Tyrant seemed a little confused. He and Han Yan had never been to Saint Origin Palace before. So they were not very familiar with anything related to Saint Origin Palace, but he wasn't a fool. He could tell from Big Yellow's tone that Desolate Palace's really had an ambition to rule this world, putting the Gu and the other palaces in a very precarious position. Therefore, they badly needed Jiang Chen's presence right now.

"The twelve guardians. This is the killing weapon that Desolate Palace secretly trained. Every one of them is equivalent to a half-step Human Immortal. If I were to return with my current strength, I won't be able to fight against them. In order to confront them, I must advance to the Sixth Grade Great Saint realm first."

Jiang Chen knitted his brows.

"Little Chen, not to worry. I can bring all the devil experts to aid them in Saint Origin Palace."

Said Han Yan confidently.

“Ah Yan, don’t underestimate the strength of Desolate Palace. Even if the entire devil army went there, it won’t be enough to kill them. There is a secret which I haven’t told you all yet. In the last hundred years, all the Immortals of Desolate Palace didn’t ascend to the Immortal World. They had hidden themselves up. Those twelve guardians were the peerless geniuses secretly trained by them. I have once sneaked into a deep layer of a spatial zone and found Ancestor Greenlotus. He was imprisoned by the Immortals of Desolate Palace because he had once discovered the Immortal mark. By using the power of the Immortal mark, these Immortals were able to stay in Saint Origin World without being affected by the summoning of the Immortal World.....”

Jiang Chen spat the information that he knew about Desolate Palace out. At this time, it was no longer necessary for him to hide them.

“What?!”

After listening to Jiang Chen’s words, Han Yan and the others exclaimed, it was too startling. If this didn’t come from Jiang Chen’s mouth, they definitely wouldn’t believe it. One should know that those were powerful Human Immortals. How could they possibly fight against those beings?

Tyrant gritted his teeth, his hatred towards Desolate Palace soared instantly when he heard about the news of Ancestor Greenlotus.

“However, you guys don’t have to worry too much. Human Immortals usually won’t interfere in these kind of matters because the barrier of Saint Origin World can’t stand their power. So, we only have to deal those twelve guardians. Time is running out. I must advance to the Sixth Grade Great Saint now. only then would it be possible for me to fight them in my half-dragon form. Ah Yan, can you ask the half-step Devil Immortals to take out some energy treasures of the Devil Race for me to absorb?”

Said Jiang Chen.

Han Yan appeared next to a half-step Devil Immortal and requested what Jiang Chen asked.

“Your Highness. Our race has a top-grade Devil Element. It is full of energy and pure devil essence.”

The half-step Devil Immortal didn’t dare show any signs of neglect. He turned his palm, a black Devil Element appeared. It was the size of a palm, but the energy that was emitted from it trembled the void around.

Han Yan took the top-grade Devil Element, turned and handed it to Jiang Chen. “Little Chen, take a look at this treasure. Does it allow you to advance to the Sixth Grade straightaway?”

“Great, this is a good piece of treasure. After refining it, not only would I be able to advance to the Sixth Grade Great Saint, I will also reach the peak of Sixth Grade Great Saint, which is enough to deal with those twelve guardians.”

Delight and surprise was revealed in his eyes. One should know that the gap between an Eighth Grade and Ninth Grade Great Saint was too great. Even if Jiang Chen advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint, he probably wouldn’t stand a chance against those twelve guardians, but if he could reach the peak of Sixth Grade Great Saint, it would certainly give him enough combat power to fight them.

As time was running out, he immediately took the Devil Element from Han Yan and started to refine it. Subsequently, his cultivation base began to rise and new dragon marks began to form in his body.

“Ah Yan, I have to do this on the way back to Gu Palace. Otherwise, we will be late. Now, order the devil experts with Seventh Grade and above cultivation to follow us there. They will become our powerful army.”

Said Jiang Chen.

A while later, under the lead of Han Yan, hundreds of devils rushed out of the Devil World towards the Gu Family. They had to use the spatial passageway of the Gu Family to enter Gu Palace.

After so many years of recuperation, the devil forces had grown strong. Its force was powerful enough to strike any of the eight major palaces. Therefore, this force would provide a huge help to Gu Palace.

By the time they arrived at the Gu Family, Jiang Chen had already advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint. The dragon marks in his body had exceeded 90 000. However, the energy of the Dark Element has not yet been depleted. New dragon marks was still forming incessantly in his body.

As a matter of fact, despite hitting the peak Sixth Grade Great Saint, he wouldn't be able to change the situation unless he advanced into the Seventh Grade Great Saint, the twelve guardians were no doubt very powerful.

However, it was too late for that now. He had to reach Gu Palace as quickly as possible with his group of devil army to increase the overall strength of their forces. It would already be too late if Gu and Demon Palace were forced to sign the contract or be annihilated.

He must get to Gu Palace in time by hook or by crook. He didn't want to have any regrets in this life.

Gu Xuantian was informed about the incidents in Saint Origin Palace. Knowing how critical the situation was, he immediately opened the spatial passageway connecting to Gu Palace without asking Jiang Chen anything. Then, Jiang Chen and Han Yan led a big group of devil army into the spatial passageway, heading towards Gu Palace in maximum speed.

The atmosphere in Gu Palace became even more tensed. Plenty of

them had lost the hope that Jiang Chen would return on time. Even if he arrived before Desolate Palace attacks, he wouldn't be of any help because Desolate Palace was just too powerful. Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to change anything no matter how talented he was.

“What's the status now?”

Gu Firmament asked.

“The huge army of Desolate Palace is presently dealing with Dan Palace. It seems like Dan Palace didn't have any plans of defending their territory, resisting would only be pointless. As long as the person in charge of Dan Palace isn't a fool, they will straightaway sign the contract, surrendering to Desolate Palace.”

A Ninth Grade Great Saint expert of Gu Palace said in a helplessness and despaired tone.

“Hasn't Jiang Chen returned yet?”

Heavenly Peng King frowned. This had now become the thing that he was most worried and also the thing that he anticipated the most. Everyone on the scene knew their situation very well. Despite the three of them joining their forces together, it was undoubtedly not enough if they were to defeat Desolate Palace, unless Jiang Chen, the only variable would return on time.

“He will return on time. I believe him.”

Gu Firmament said confidently despite the uncertainty in his heart. As their leader, he needed to maintain his composure and confidence no matter how uncertain he felt.

Hong Long.....

At this moment, outside of Gu Palace, innumerable waves of powerful Qi gust forth, like a giant and majestic cloud hanging over the sky above Gu Palace. It gave everyone the feeling of unpleasantness.

“They are here. So fast.....”

“Dan Palace has surrendered to them so quickly.”

“Darn! Whatever destined to come will come in the end, we can’t escape from this. Let’s go and have a look.”

.....

Desolate Palace had arrived in Gu Palace, as expected. Even Gu Firmament would have to confront them personally.

The experts of Gu, Demon and Bin Palace had gathered in the sky above Gu Palace. What they saw was the huge army of Desolate Palace. There were numerous experts standing closely to one another, making it look congested and thick. They were the experts of the five major palaces. There were roughly a dozen half-step Human Immortals, the twelve guardians and around ten powerful Ninth Grade Great Saints. This was a one-sided battle. Compared to their enemy’s army, it was totally incomparable.

That’s right. Despair was the only thing that they felt right now. There was no way for them to not feel desperate right now.

Chapter 1023 - The Creator of Miracle

Under such great disparity, the outcome was mostly unchangeable. The overwhelming strength of the armed forces of the five major palaces had basically decided the fate of the other three palaces.

“How can the forces of Desolate Palace become so great? How did they produce those geniuses of such caliber?”

Bin Changxiao seemed powerless. Although it was his idea to unite the three places, now it seemed he couldn't change their fate at all. What surprised him the most was the group of peerless geniuses that had been trained by Desolate Palace in secrecy.

According to their knowledge and experience, they were clear about the allocation of the cultivation resources. It was considered good when a place could produce Sixth Grade Great Saint genius, but Desolate Palace was able to create Ninth Grade Great Saint geniuses and it wasn't just one or two. This made them wonder how Desolate Palace did it. They wondered if Desolate Palace had hidden some kind of a great secret.

“Ninth Grade Great Saint geniuses? It isn't an easy job to train these geniuses. It seems Desolate Palace has already prepared for this day to come. Too bad, it's too late that we have only discovered it today.” Gu Firmament said, and couldn't help shaking his head.

After witnessing the true strength of Desolate Palace, he felt despair deep inside his heart despite how positive he might think as a palace master.

“Humph! So what even if you all are strong? Our race will fight till the end even it means sacrificing ourselves. We will never sign the slavery contract or whatever you call it.”

Heavenly Peng King let out a cold humph. Demon Race had

always been wild and unruly, and had tremendous pride. Heavenly Peng King was an outspoken man with resoluteness. Even if all of the people had submitted themselves to Desolate Palace, he and his people would never give in. They would rather spend their last moments fighting the battle and be annihilated than become someone else's slaves.

Among the Desolate army, Desolate Emperor strode out into the scene. Currently, his face was full of complacency and delight; his mouth curled into a smile that couldn't close. There was no way he wouldn't feel happy after subduing four palaces in a row, and their wish to dominate Saint Origin Palace was about to be realized.

"Gu Firmament, Heavenly Peng King, and Bin Changxiao, do you think by forming an alliance makes you all strong enough to defend against us? That's ridiculous. I suggest you all to be the smart ones in your present circumstances. Surrender now to avoid suffering any further losses. It will do you no harm by submitting yourselves to Desolate Palace. With our protection, you all will still be able to survive and grow well," said Desolate Emperor loudly.

"Go and f*ck yourself, Desolate Emperor! Stop your senseless dream! My Demon Race will never surrender to the likes of you. You can attack with all your might to enlighten me of how lawless Desolate Palace can be." Heavenly Peng King rebuked.

"Humph! Heavenly Peng King, don't think too highly of yourself. With our current strength, we can flatten your Demon Race in an instant without leaving a single survivor!"

Desolate Emperor was infuriated, depicting a look of a merciless and invincible killer that gave no quarters to those who blocked his hegemonic path. Desolate Palace had risen to an unstoppable stage where anyone who disobeyed their demands would lead to only one outcome—death. If Heavenly Peng King refused to give in, then today would be their end.

"You have ten breaths to consider it. After that, if you're still

unwilling to surrender, we will strike with all that we have. Everything here will be destroyed into rubble and all of you will die.” Desolate Emperor sounded dead serious.

His palace had now dominated a majority of the forces in Saint Origin Palace, so it was impossible that they would be held back by these three palaces. He had to fulfil the hegemonic desire of Desolate Palace in the fastest way as a way to show his competence to the Ancestor.

The experts of the three major palaces had fallen into silence. They definitely wouldn’t doubt the word of Desolate Emperor. Judging by how he treated all of them just now, he wouldn’t show any quarters to them. If they failed to surrender after ten breaths’ of time, Desolate Palace would strike at once. This would be the final moment before Desolate Palace became the only ruler in Saint Origin Palace. Therefore, Desolate Palace would do whatever they could to get what they wanted even if they had to create a scene of bloodshed in Gu Palace.

“What now? Do we have to end in this way? Where’s that variable named Jiang Chen? It seems he won’t arrive.” Bin Changxiao said, revealing a face of despair.

Gu Firmament’s expression didn’t look much better either. Nine of the half-step Human Immortals began to heave a sigh of sorrow. The outcome was immutable even after they had done so much preparation. The situation was now very dire to all the three palaces.

Ten breaths’ time passed very quickly. This short period of time was no doubt a torment for the people of the three palaces.

“Time’s up. Demon Palace is looking towards the path of death but that doesn’t mean you all have to follow them, Gu Firmament, Bin Changxiao. I urge you to sign the submissive contract at once.”

Desolate Emperor stared at Gu Firmament and Bin Changxiao.

Hong...

As soon as Desolate Emperor's voice faded, a loud noise rang from above. Then, a palm as large as the sky emerged on top of Desolate Emperor's head, grabbing him around. That was a blood-red dragon claw 30 meters in size.

The sudden change shocked everyone because not even half-step Human Immortals of Desolate Palace could sense this man's Qi before the strike.

“Not good.”

Desolate Emperor panicked. Despite being a Ninth Grade Great Saint, he felt danger from the blood-red dragon claw. The boundless pressure created by the dragon claw suffocated him. This was too startling when the powerful Ninth Grade Great Saint and also the palace master of Desolate Palace was instantly suppressed by a stranger.

Ka Cha!

The giant dragon claw turned into a cell, imprisoning Desolate Emperor within. Then, a being that looked like a half-human and half-dragon appeared. He was no stranger, he was none other than Jiang Chen.

“Dammit!”

Second Guardian was the quickest to react. He struck out a palm strike violently and at the same time sealed off the surrounding void, leaving no room for Jiang Chen to escape.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. His actions had always been watertight. He would always have backup plans before making any move.. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda wrapped his body instantly. The seventh level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had already been condensed out due to the top-grade Devil Element. It glittered a golden brilliance, looking like a peerless treasure.

Bang!

Second Guardian's palm landed on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, producing a loud 'bang', and lines of cracks appeared on the surface of the pagoda.

"Sure enough, this man is strong, even stronger than a half-step Human Immortal. But my Ancestral Dragon Pagoda didn't disappoint me either. Blocking his one strike will suffice."

Jiang Chen was startled for a bit and darted a glance at Second Guardian, but all of this was within his anticipation. He had taken a great risk when he decided to attack Desolate Emperor. One should know that making an attempt on the palace master in front of the half-step Human Immortals was indeed a very difficult task.

Though Second Guardian had powerful means to seal off the void, it wouldn't be a problem for Jiang Chen at all. With the combination of Spatial Shift and Flaming Wings, there was nothing that could stop him. His body flashed, escaping from the sealed void like a fish gliding in the water, coming to the Gu Palace's camp with Desolate Emperor in his custody.

"Bastard Jiang Chen, release me at once!" Desolate Emperor roared.

"Release you? That's ridiculous. You should feel lucky and blessed for you are still alive."

Sneer filled Jiang Chen's smile.

Clamour...

The whole scene was filled with shock as if a great explosion had occurred on the scene. Jiang Chen moved too quickly and at the right timing. The time he used to capture Desolate Emperor and deflected the attack of Second Guardian was just in a breath's time. Plenty of them started regain their senses at this moment.

"God dammit! Let our palace master go!"

“Son of a b*ch, Jiang Chen! Do you have any idea what you are doing? You are seeking death. Do you know that?”

“How did this little beast appear? And he has grown so much at an astounding pace, not even Palace Master could match him.”

.....

An uproar was provoked from the Desolate camp. Although Desolate Emperor was not the strongest among them, his position was beyond the reach of many people. He was the backbone and the foundation of Desolate Palace. How could they accept it when the backbone was snatched away by their enemy?

On the other hand, Gu Palace had become the scene of a jubilant celebration. Many of them cheered with joy. Jiang Chen’s timely appearance had undoubtedly given a shot of dopamine to all the people of three palaces. The despair in their hearts vanished when Jiang Chen captured the leader of their enemy. Without a doubt, Jiang Chen had become their super ace card.

Capturing Desolate Emperor? It was something that only Jiang Chen was able to do.

Considering how many half-step Human Immortal the enemy had, no one would dare to make a sneak-attack. Even the half-step Human Immortals of Gu Palace couldn’t do what Jiang Chen did.

“He’s getting more and more powerful. It seems the ancestor of Gu Palace is right. This man sure is a variable. It is a ruthless move to seize Desolate Emperor, and also extremely difficult to complete. I really have no idea how he did it.” Bin Changxiao said, looking at the overpowering Jiang Chen.

His heart palpitated with excitement. He had to admit that it was a very wise decision to unite with Gu Palace.

“Haha! I knew this kid will show up. He has given us another big surprise.” Gu Firmament laughed out loud.

Now that Desolate Emperor was in their grip, he would like to see

whether Desolate Palace still had the guts to attack them.

All half-step Human Immortal ancestors of the three palaces gazed at Jiang Chen. They couldn't help but feel astonished by this young man—a Sixth Grade Great Saint that could seize Desolate Emperor from the very noses of their enemy. If they weren't seeing this with their own eyes, how would they believe it?

Jiang Chen's Spatial Shift and the stealthy Ancestral Dragon Pagoda allowed him to appear above Desolate Emperor's head stealthily. He had anticipated that Desolate experts would attack him, so he had betted on using the seven-storey Ancestral Dragon Pagoda as the defensive barrier. As long as it could withstand one strike, he would succeed in seizing Desolate Emperor. Facts proved that not only he had succeeded, but also done it flawlessly.

Chapter 1024 - Second Guardian Is Getting Annoyed

Everyone was flooded with tremendous astonishment. Jiang Chen was indeed the variable that could create a flawless miracle once more during this time of crisis. After having Desolate Emperor in custody, they had obtained the greatest bargaining chip against Desolate Palace.

However, that was not the only surprise brought by Jiang Chen, it was far more than that. At this instant, rumbles exploded inside of Gu Palace. These deep noises came from the billowy Qi unleashed from some beings. Many of them turned their heads towards the source of the noise, they saw hundreds of devils emerging out of nowhere, heading towards their direction.

The leaders weren't strangers, they were Han Yan, Tyrant and Big Yellow.

"Why have so many devil experts appeared all of a sudden?"

"My god! Saint Origin Palace has been in a mess and now the devil army is here. Eh! No. The young monk and Big Yellow are together with the devil army!"

"Could they be the army brought by Jiang Chen?"

.....

The experts of the three palaces were shocked, but some seniors who had sharp eyesight, especially the seniors of Gu Palace. They found it odd that the devil army would suddenly appear in Gu Palace because the only way to get here was through the spatial passageway from Gu Family in the Pure Land. Adding the fact that they came together with Big Yellow and Jiang Chen's friends, it only meant that they were on the same side.

"Don't panic, everyone. We have already controlled the Devil Race. They are here to help us fight Desolate Palace," said Jiang

Chen plainly.

“What? How is it possible for so many devil experts to come and aid us?”

“Ruled the Devil Race? Are you kidding? Who had the power to control all of them? It’s impossible.”

“However, these devils look undeniably obedient and I don’t sense any killing intent from them. It seems like Jiang Chen is right. It’s just that, what kind of method did he use to make these devils listen to them?”

.....

Astonishment and shock filled everyone once again after Jiang Chen told them that the devil army belonged to them. This shock was on par with the astonishment they received when Jiang Chen seized Desolate Emperor. If they didn’t see these with their own eyes, they would never believe it.

Clamour...

Under the lead of Han Yan, the devil army flanked at one side in an orderly manner.

“Palace masters, this is my brother. His name is Han Yan. He possessed the complete Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and is well versed in the Great Devil Curse. During the war last time, we have entered the Devil World after the devil army withdrew themselves from the war all of a sudden. Later, we found out that the Supreme Devil Wand emerged inside the Devil World, which was then obtained by Han Yan. The entire Devil Race is in his command now and neither of them will dare disobey his order. This time, we have brought them here to help us defend against Desolate Palace.” Jiang Chen explained.

For a moment, a lot of people’s gazes fell upon Han Yan, especially the powerful experts from the three major palaces. They were knowledgeable individuals and had had a lot of dealings with

the Devil Race. They knew about the history of the Devil Race and also the Supreme Devil Wand compared to others. It's particularly so for the experts of Demon Palace. They knew that the Supreme Devil Wand was very important to the Devil Race, just like how important the totem was to the Demon Race. It was their faith. It was their belief.

“Well, that's great, isn't it? Although we did not collude with the Devil Race, they are under our control now. With their help, our strength will increase once more.”

“Making friends with Jiang Chen seems to be a very wise choice at that time. This man can create miracles all the time. I didn't think that he could turn this situation around when we were all helpless.”

“I have helped Bin Palace make the right choice this time. He is an outstandingly rare genius among the young generation, and going against him won't bring any favourable outcome.”

.....

The experts of the three palaces sighed, feeling impressed and also lucky that they had befriended Jiang Chen, he had given them a miracle and a glimmer of hope to survive. Bin Palace in particular felt delighted for making the sensible choice of burying their grudges against Jiang Chen.

“You son of a b*tch, Jiang Chen! You maniac! And you, Gu Firmament, I didn't imagine that you three palaces have associated yourselves with the Devil Race. That means you all are now the common enemy of mankind...” Desolate Emperor, who was imprisoned by Jiang Chen, roared angrily.

Pa!

A slap hit Desolate Emperor's face, interrupting his following words. Jiang Chen would never show politeness to someone like Desolate Emperor.

“Little beast! How dare you hit me?”

Desolate Emperor gritted his teeth, feeling choked with frustration before spurring out a mouthful of blood.

Today was an awful day. He was the majestic Desolate Emperor who was about to rule the entire Saint Origin Palace, but he had unexpectedly fallen into the hands of a disrespectful young kid and was slapped violently on the face. How could he possibly stand such an act?

“Hit you? You should be glad that you are still alive. When you’ve become useless, I will straightaway kill you myself so that you can continue your hegemonic dream in the underworld. Listen closely, the Devil Race is in our full control, like the control you have on Narang Palace, and they would absolutely obey our instructions. Therefore, it was totally different from associating with the Devil Race. After gaining full control of the Devil Race, none of them could trouble us in the future. Saint Origin World will become peaceful and safe, this is absolutely beneficial to mankind. I can’t understand why you’re berating our kind and good deeds. Furthermore, even if I have associated with the Devil Race, it is my own business. You aren’t even capable enough to protect yourself, let alone minding other people’s business.”

Jiang Chen looked at Desolate Emperor coldly. Every word that he said was like a sharp knife, stabbing into Desolate Emperor’s heart. It annoyed him so much that he wanted to explode.

“Little beast, you dare to go against me?! You will pay an awful price...”

Desolate Emperor’s eyes turned red.

Pa!

Another slap was sent by Jiang Chen without saying a word.

“Damn your blaring complaints! If you dare to say one more word, I’ll cut off your tongue, then your limbs. You can try

threaten me again if you don't believe me."

Jiang Chen couldn't stand the threats given by his opponent. The situation was under his control, it was only a matter of will if he really wanted Desolate Emperor to die.

Barf!

Desolate Emperor was tongue-tied due to extreme anger. The next second, he couldn't help spurt another mouthful of blood. He could tell from Jiang Chen's eyes that he wasn't joking.

"Haha! Desolate Emperor, didn't you act very arrogant a moment before? Do that one more time, haha..."

Heavenly Peng King came closer to Desolate Emperor. He would never let the chance of insulting his adversary slip. Compared to the arrogant face that Desolate Emperor had, his face looked extremely pitiful now, it was entirely different. To Heavenly Peng King, it was too enjoyable and pleasing to see this.

On the Desolate camp's side, they began to recover from their daze state. Anger started to surface on each and every one of their faces. It was too humiliating, particularly to the half-step Human Immortals, their palace master had been seized under their very nose. This situation was no different than slapping them straight on their faces.

"I've never thought that there is such a young genius in Gu Palace."

Second Guardian narrowed his eyes as he stared at Jiang Chen. He was surprised by Jiang Chen's emergence. In his point of view, the Thirteen Guardians were the scariest geniuses in Saint Origin World, he hadn't expected to meet a terrifying genius today. Although Jiang Chen's appearance didn't concern him, he had to admit that not even the Big Guardian, who was in seclusion right now could do what Jiang Chen did—suppressing a Ninth Grade Great Saint while being only a Sixth Grade Great Saint.

To put it bluntly, the Thirteen Guardians lost to Jiang Chen in terms of talent.

“You are called Jiang Chen?” asked Second Guardian.

“That’s right.”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders while analysing Second Guardian’s strength. Desolate Palace must have put in lots of effort to produce such a genius.

“Jiang Chen, I suggest you not to be silly. What you are doing now is pushing the three major palaces into the abyss. We are unstoppable, so you should conform to the Heaven’s will. If you let Desolate Emperor go now, you may still have a chance to live, but if you continue with your stubbornness, the three major palaces will lose their chance to sign the contract. At that time, blood will flow like river and tens of thousands will die,” said Second Guardian in a plain tone.

He could still remain calm even though Desolate Emperor was in the custody of his enemy. Judging from this, it only showed that the geniuses trained by Desolate Palace were no doubt very uncommon.

“Really? Then you should try and see. I don’t know whether the three palaces will turn into a river of blood, but I am sure that your Desolate Emperor will die first, in a very tragic and miserable way. If you don’t care about his life, then go ahead and attack.”

Jiang Chen showed an indifferent look. It had to be a serious joke to let Desolate Emperor go now. Given the temperament of Desolate Emperor, he would surely be outraged after receiving such a tremendous humiliation. At that time, the three palaces would definitely turn into a river of blood.

Even with the help of the devil army, it was still not enough to confront their enemy, the gap was just too great to fill.

“Jiang Chen, do you think that I won’t dare to attack?”

Cold light flashed in Second Guardian's eyes. He had never been threatened before by others. It was undeniably frustrating when he was restrained by someone. Moreover, it was impossible for him to ignore the life of Desolate Emperor. In any case, Desolate Emperor was the supreme leader of this mission. He held a pivotal position in Desolate Palace.

"That's right. I'm sure you won't dare to attack." Jiang Chen retorted bluntly.

It showed his disdain for Second Guardian and challenged him to attack. Such a response was definitely irritating, but there was no way other than swallowing it up.

The present situation made Second Guardian feel so unpleasant that he like had swallowed a house fly. They were supposed to have the advantage where they could annihilate their opponents with ease, however, all they could do now was to wallow in frustration.

Chapter 1025 - Battling the Eighth Guardian

Second Guardian was feeling extremely annoyed because Jiang Chen was right. Despite being the strongest cultivator in Desolate army, he wouldn't dare to attack and put Desolate Emperor's life at stake. Although he was seeing Jiang Chen for the first time, he could tell that Jiang Chen was a man that was absolutely ruthless. So, arguing with him using reasons wouldn't work. Moreover, he wouldn't doubt that Jiang Chen would kill Desolate Emperor the moment he attacked.

“Jiang Chen, this stalemate isn't doing you any good either. You are a smart person, you should be able to see the current situation clearly. Desolate Palace has already dominated the majority of the palaces. What you are doing is just making unnecessary struggle. It is totally pointless.”

A half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elder of Desolate Palace spoke. In the seven major palaces, half-step Human Immortals would be regarded as old ancestor, but in Desolate Palace, half-step Human Immortal was called Supreme Elder.

“This stalemate really is pointless. I do have a good solution to this problem.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Try and enlighten me.”

Said the Supreme Elder.

“I heard that Desolate Palace has secretly trained a large number of peerless geniuses. I would like to see how strong they really are. Among the young generation of Desolate Palace, you can pick anyone to fight me except for Second Guardian, because I'm not a fool. I won't choose an opponent I can't defeat. What do you think?”

Said Jiang Chen. There was slyness hidden deep in his eyes.

Anyone who understood him would know that he was up to some kind of scheme.

His words stunned all the higher ups from both sides. No one would imagine that Jiang Chen would declare a challenge against their geniuses at this point in time.

“Jiang Chen, don’t act recklessly. Now that Desolate Emperor is in our hands, we have a bargaining chip. Although you are powerful enough to defeat Ninth Grade Great Saint, it doesn’t mean that your strength is enough to match the Twelve Guardians.”

Gu Firmament murmured.

“That’s right Jiang Chen. It’s not wise to fight their geniuses at this time.”

Heavenly Peng King warned.

Jiang Chen waved his hand to stop Bin Changxiao who was about to blurt out another word. He had his own plans because he was crystal clear about the internal forces of Desolate Palace. With the existence of Human Immortal behind their backs, they wouldn’t give up their plan to dominate Saint Origin World easily. Therefore, it was a joke to stop their footsteps using Desolate Emperor.

Gu Firmament didn’t know about the Human Immortal in Desolate Palace, so they would think that having Desolate Emperor in custody would allow them to negotiate with Desolate Palace. In truth, Desolate Emperor might not weigh as heavy as they thought. So, he needed to use other methods to stall for time which would allow him to grow further.

Additionally, as a competitive cultivator, he wanted to see how strong the Twelve Guardians were. Though he didn’t have high confidence in defeating Second Guardian, he was sure that he could fight against the other geniuses.

After seeing what happened, Gu Firmament and the others stopped talking. Even though they were clueless about why Jiang Chen was doing this, they understood that Jiang Chen wasn't a reckless man. He was a man who always acted cautiously. Plus, not even the old ancestor calculated that he was the decisive variable. As such, all they could do was watch how Jiang Chen deal with these geniuses.

“Ha-ha! Jiang Chen, I never thought that you would come up with such a solution. And you seem very confident, which makes it incomparably laughable. Do you think you can fight against the Thirteen Guardians? It seems like you don't have any idea of the horror of the Thirteen Guardians.”

Second Guardian laughed aloud. After listening to Jiang Chen's solution, he couldn't help but sneer at him. The thirteen guardians grew up together. So he knew very well how strong they were. Describing every guardian as a half-step Human Immortal wasn't excessive at all. If Jiang Chen thought that he had the power to defeat the Thirteen Guardians after defeating Desolate Emperor, it would only sound exceedingly ridiculous.

Not just Second Guardian, even the half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elders smiled delightfully. He wanted to fight the guardians of Desolate Palace? They really had no idea what was he thinking. Was it because he was overly confident or was his brain cells already fried up?

“I just want to see how powerful your guardians are. I hope they won't disappoint me.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He then continued. “If I win, Desolate Palace must withdraw themselves from the war, and never come back to invade the three major palaces again. If I lose, I will release Desolate Emperor and the fate of the three major palaces will follow the Heaven's will. What do you think?”

Jiang Chen set out his own terms. Judging from the current

situation, Jiang Chen's terms and conditions sounded logical and reasonable. So, Desolate Palace wouldn't be able to see through his plans. As Jiang Chen was standing on the three palaces' side, the terms he set naturally would be in their favor.

"Alright then, let's do it as you suggested. If the guardian loses the fight, Desolate Palace will retreat. If you lose, hand over Desolate Emperor and the three palaces will suffer a terrible fate."

The half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elder agreed to the terms without hesitation. They had great confidence in the twelve guardians. If their Ninth Grade Great Saint guardian couldn't even take down a Sixth Grade Great Saint like Jiang Chen, the only explanation was that Jiang Chen was too heaven defying, but they certainly didn't believe that Jiang Chen could be so heaven defying.

"Bring it on."

Jiang Chen's body flashed, stepping out of Gu Palace' camp. He handed Desolate Emperor to a Supreme Elder of Bin Palace. With the half-step Human Immortal watching Desolate Emperor, he wouldn't worry that the palace master would create any trouble.

In his half-dragon form, his combat power increased tenfold. The total number of dragon marks in his body was 91 500, five hundred more to advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint. His current cultivation base had hit the peak of the Sixth Grade Great Saint. Therefore, his cultivation base combined with the dragon transformation, he outmatched all the Ninth Grade Great Saints. He wouldn't even put those guardians who had the combat power of half-step Human Immortal in his eyes. With his endless techniques and mountains of combat experience, it was enough to cope with these guardians. Besides, it was also his desire to fight these guardians.

"Who will come and fight me?"

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. A blood-red Qi hovered above his

head. It was no doubt the living blood-red dragon. He just stood there, looking so domineering that no one could ignore his existence. At this moment, it seemed like Jiang Chen had become the only existence under the Heavens. A brilliant light radiated out from his body that the onlookers couldn't look at him directly.

“I will fight you.”

One of the twelve guardians stood out. Amongst the thirteen guardians, there were two female guardians. The one who stood out was a female in red dress. She was the Eighth Guardian. She had a slender and graceful figure. Her fair face was filled with pride. Undeniably, she was a rare beauty.

However, she was a prickly beauty. It was hard enough to stay near her. Her might made people around her dared not to disrespect her. So, the people around her could only look at her in awe and respect.

“This kid is finished. Eighth Sister's Red Rhomboid Flute has reached the acme of perfection, the sound and rhythm are so unpredictable that they can penetrate the enemy's soul. Most people simply can't bear it.”

One guardian among the twelve said sneeringly.

Chapter 1026 - Unaffected

A jade flute appeared in the hands of Eighth Guardian. The surface of the flute was engraved with patterns that made it look mystical. Jiang Chen was able to tell that this jade flute was no ordinary item with just a single glance. It was a powerful Great Saint Weapon, but because of this, a hint of smile flashed past his mouth.

He didn't have much knowledge about rhythm. Every man who could cast rhythmic attacks were supreme geniuses. They were the true geniuses as mastering such a skill required profound foundation and extraordinary talent.

In addition to its powerful attack, the rhythmic attack could also disrupt the opponent using vibrations, causing the opponent's mind to tremble or even damaging the opponent's soul, causing them to fall into an irrecoverable state.

An attack like this was the scariest as it was impossible to guard against. Commonly, people would never be willing to confront a cultivator that was rhythmic savvy. Even if the opponent tried his best to defeat the cultivator who was well-versed in rhythms, he might make a slip and fell into the torture of the rhythm.

This, however, relieved Jiang Chen's worries. If the opponent he was facing was a combative guardian, he might not have any certainty in defeating him. Facing Eighth Guardian gave him the confidence in defeating her, the scariness of his Great Soul Derivation Technique was beyond anyone's imagination, it made his soul unpredictably strong. Anyone who tried to affect his mind would only end up in a self-inflicted torture and misery.

Last time, when someone tried to influence his mind using the Great Illusion Realm, the opponent got what he started—dying in his own illusion realm. The same thing happened to Sang Ba. The Great Devil Curse he used couldn't even affect Jiang Chen in the

slightest bit. Jiang Chen's Great Soul Derivation Technique was like an indestructible door erected in his innermost soul, unbreakable.

Moreover, Jiang Chen had fought Wu Ningzhu before. He was very well versed how to resist a rhythmic attack. However, people who were proficient in rhythm normally had weak combat strength. So they would lose their advantage completely if their rhythmic skills couldn't affect their opponent.

The advantage that Eighth Guardian had was destined to be turned into a disadvantage when she decided to fight Jiang Chen.

"You arrogant brat! You have humiliated our palace master. What you did today will bring you a tragic fate. You should feel blessed to die under my Red Rhomboid Flute." Eighth Guardian sounded extremely cold.

She was a haughty woman that disdained everything in front of her.

"Really? Then you should do it now because I won't show any tenderness towards women." Jiang Chen replied in a flat tone, totally not putting Eighth Guardian in his eyes.

"Be careful, Jiang Chen." Gu Firmament reminded.

Grimness was shown on all of the three major palaces' people's faces. The guardians of Desolate Emperor were too strong, they could already tell when they saw Second Guardian. Although Eighth Guardian wasn't on par with Second Guardian, her power shouldn't be far away from Second Guardian's. Therefore, it would be extremely difficult to fight her, Jiang Chen was only a Sixth Grade Great Saint after all.

What relieved their worries was that Desolate Emperor was captured and was incapable of fighting back, which made them think that Jiang Chen still had a chance while confronting Eighth Guardian.

Whoosh! *Whoosh!*

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen and Eighth Guardian flew up to the sky. Immediately, a new battlefield was created. When their Qi exploded, intense killing intent filled every corner of the battlefield, extending for a hundred miles. Sparks burst out even before they started to fight. It was astonishing because it was only the collision of their Qi. If an Eighth Grade Great Saint accidentally fell into that zone, that person would immediately be crushed into powder by the intense Qi.

One should know there was a large gap between the sixth grade and peak Sixth Grade Great Saint. Jiang Chen was currently at the peak Sixth Grade Great Saint which gave him the confidence to fight Eighth Guardian.

Clang!

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword. A blood-red dragon sword sparkled with endless radiance that turned the darkness into light. As the Heavenly Saint Sword was the natal weapon of Jiang Chen, it grew stronger whenever he advanced. The present power of the weapon had already reached a terrifying extent. If the last piece fragment was found and merged with the sword, the true divine power of the Heavenly Saint Sword would be unleashed.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced a shrill howl. A brilliant sword light was slashed out by Jiang Chen, slashing off the horizon in extreme speed and appeared before Eighth Guardian in a blink.

“He has some tricks.”

Eighth Guardian's eyes sparkled. After seeing Jiang Chen's attack, she immediately erased the underestimation in her mind and admitted that Jiang Chen was a worthy opponent.

Hua La...

Eighth Guardian moved. She raised the jade flute and swiped at the void, creating countless of rhythmic talisman that rushed towards Jiang Chen's sword light.

Hong Long...

It was the first time that the two of them fought. The mighty Qi waves unleashed by these two super combat weapons intertwined, ripping apart the void and almost causing the battlefield to overturn.

Eventually, the collision exploded into beautiful colors, just like a fireworks display, however, the destructive power was beyond people's imagination.

The violent impact shook Eighth Guardian's body, prompting her to let out an annoyed humph. Jiang Chen on the other hand remained standing as steady as before. There was no disruption in his Qi, it was like he wasn't affected by the impact at all.

On the surface, Jiang Chen had, without a doubt, gained the upper hand in this exchange of blows, whereas Eighth Guardian was on the losing side. Anyone with sensible eyesight could see it clearly.

"Good, Jiang Chen sure is powerful. He is more powerful than we had imagined."

"Haha! What a genius! I'm really surprised. I believe that he must have some other more powerful hidden moves. It explained why he dared to challenge the twelve guardians. He is already so scary even though he's only a Sixth Grade Great Saint. If he's to continue to grow, who else in this world can suppress him?"

"Let's not feel too happy about it first. That was just their first round. Eighth Guardian has yet to use her most powerful attack. Rhythmic attacks were the most deadly attacks, it can penetrate into the depths of human soul and is very difficult to defend against."

.....

The people from the three major palaces were exhilarated. Although Eighth Guardian hadn't shown her strongest attack yet, Jiang Chen had gained the upper hand in the first round which had boosted the morale of the three palaces very much and alleviated their worries for Jiang Chen.

"What a good Jiang Chen punk, having such a terrifying technique! I really didn't think of that. Eighth Sister, don't show him any quarters. Use your ultimate technique to eliminate him."

Second Guardian's facial expression changed after knowing that he had underestimated Jiang Chen. He knew pretty well how powerful Eighth Guardian was, but she didn't have any advantage over Jiang Chen. Although he was surprised by the incident, he wasn't worried about it. He knew the strength of Eighth Guardian was rhythmic attack, so her combat power would be relatively weaker compared to Jiang Chen's. Under the disturbance of the Red Rhomboid Flute, Jiang Chen's combat power and mind would inevitably be affected, causing him to die in the hands of Eighth Guardian tragically.

Red lines appeared on Eighth Guardian's eyes due to anger. She wouldn't have thought that her body would be affected by a Sixth Grade Great Saint's attack.

"Jiang Chen, I truly have underestimated you. But don't feel complacent because of that. I have yet to cast my trump card. You still have some time to surrender," said Eighth Guardian.

"Women just love to talk nonsense."

Jiang Chen didn't bother to continue conversing with her. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand swung, slashing out another strike. This slash rippled out hundreds of beams of sword light, woven into a brilliant sword net, locking on Eighth Guardian's Qi and enshrouding her entirely.

Humph!

Eighth Guardian let out a cold humph. Then, a wavy sound fluttered out from the jade flute. Although it was a flute, the terrifying sound came not from the mouth but from the flute itself. Only expert who had reached great heights could do this.

Hong Long...

Innumerable musical notes wove itself into a picture of the jade flute. Red Rhomboid Flute wasn't just the name of the flute, it was also the name of the scary rhythmic skill that couldn't be defended against.

The battlefield was filled with horrific energy waves, crumbling all the sword nets created by Jiang Chen.

Bo *Bo* *Bo* *Bo* *Bo* *Bo...*

The sound waves produced by the flute were getting faster and fiercer. Every note was like a sharp blade, cutting everything, including the void, to pieces. What was even more terrifying was the force of the sound waves. It would attack the opponent's nervous system continuously. So if her opponent let off his guard by a little, his nerves would be filled with the sound vibration and his fate would be doomed.

The sword in Jiang Chen's hand swiped, slashing out layers of sword waves. A smile was on his face, seeming relaxed and casual. Under the blessing of the Great Soul Derivation Technique, the sound waves of Eighth Guardian didn't have any effect on him. Those nerve-destructing rhythms were just a common rhythm of music when it entered Jiang Chen's ears. Instead of being harmed by it, he was actually enjoying it.

"How is that possible?"

Seeing this incident, Eighth Guardian's facial expression changed completely. Her pretty face now looked fiery red. Casting the rhythmic technique fiercely would consume large amount of

energy. Furthermore, it had dealt a huge blow to her mentally when her deadly technique, which she had been practicing for many years, couldn't even affect her opponent.

“Haha! Woman, your sound waves are useless against me. Do you still have any better techniques? So, this is how strong the guardians of Desolate Palace are. All of you all have overrated yourself!”

Jiang Chen laughed aloud to provoke Eighth Guardian.

“I don't believe that you won't be affected by it at all. Tidal Casualty!”

Eighth Guardian was completely infuriated, and casted her ultimate technique. Layers of sound waves rolled out like tidal waves.

Chapter 1027 - Capture Without Killing

Hong Long Long...

The atmosphere on the battlefield rolled violently. The billowy sound waves was as if the surging waves of beast rushing forth incessantly. All the onlookers outside the battlefield looked pale. It was hard to imagine how Jiang Chen could cope with these horrifying sound waves.

In the battlefield, Eighth Guardian had launched her most powerful sonic attack. Layers of sound waves turned into rapid stream that carried melancholic emotion. Sometimes, people called it the stream of fatality, the fatality of the opponent, it could easily cause the opponent to be trapped in an illusion. That's right. The area covered by the sonic attack had become an illusion that made anyone who fell into the zone extremely vulnerable.

“Eight Sister has casted the Tidal Casualty. That brat sure couldn't stand this. No one in this world would stay unaffected after receiving this attack.”

“That's correct. This is the scariest ultimate skill of Eighth Sister. Even if that Jiang Chen is a rare talent, he will still end up dead in her hands.”

“We'll see. This wild and overconfident brat is surely going to die tragically. He has provoked Eighth Sister. Anyone in this world who provokes her will die miserably in the end.”

.....

When the Twelve Guardians saw Eighth Guardian casting the Tidal Casualty, they got high-spirited, as if they had already pictured the tragic death of Jiang Chen caused by the sonic wave.

However, the next thing that happened would remain unforgettable in their lives.

On the battlefield, the Tidal Casualty had been fully formed. It

surged to every corner of the battlefield, giving Jiang Chen no chance to dodge and escape.

In truth, Jiang Chen didn't have the intention of dodging.

"True Dragon Palm, rip it apart!" Jiang Chen bellowed, striking out the powerful True Dragon Palm.

A giant blood-red dragon claw tore the sonic waves ahead into two halves. As for the those waves that could affect one's soul and nerves, Jiang Chen wasn't affected by it due to his Great Soul Derivation Technique being too strong, stronger than what Eighth Guardian could imagine.

Barf!

The overwhelming attack was broken by Jiang Chen so easily and fiercely. The sound waves that tried to impinge his mind like a needle failed as well. The backlash of these two attacks caused Eighth Guardian to cough out a mouthful of blood immediately. Her face turned deathly pale.

"How is that possible? How could he stay unaffected after my attack? It is literally impossible."

Eighth Guardian couldn't believe what was happening. Ever since she cultivated the rhythmic skill, she had never suffered such a severe blow, it was too much for her to handle.

As a result of the backlash, her combat strength began to decline drastically. Adding the fact that her ultimate skill couldn't affect the enemy even by a slightest bit, she was dazed and had lost her direction.

"The time is up."

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled with a cold light on the opposite side. It was too easy for him to deal with an opponent like Eighth Guardian because geniuses like her had never suffered any major setbacks in their life. When the situation differed from their expectation, they would find it very difficult to accept. Just like

now, Eighth Guardian was fazed as she couldn't accept the fact in front of her. The powerful rhythm was originally used to distort one's mind. However, she was the one affected instead.

Whoosh!

Jiang Chen's speed increased to the maximum. He travelled like the world's fastest jet stream, using the Spatial Shift along with Flaming Wings. In a few breaths' of time, he reached Eighth Guardian. Then, he spread out the Five Elemental Spheres, encompassing her completely.

Eighth Guardian felt a sense of danger that she had never felt before from the formidable domain. Before she had the time to recover from her daze, Jiang Chen swiped his sword.

Pu Chi!

The slash chopped off an arm of Eighth Guardian. A second later, Jiang Chen struck out the True Dragon Palm once more, grabbing her and sent her into his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Jiang Chen didn't kill Eighth Guardian. Given the current situation, it was better to hold more people of Desolate Palace in custody. Besides, these were experts that played an important role in Desolate Palace. So capturing one more was equivalent to gaining one more bargaining chip.

Moreover, given Jiang Chen's unusual cultivation method, these hostages might provide him the greatest help in critical situations. Thus, he decided to imprison them in his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Hua La...

The battlefield crumbled and Jiang Chen returned to Gu Palace's camp with a flash. The entire battle happened too fast, especially the moment when Jiang Chen captured Eighth Guardian. Most of them only started to regain their senses now.

An uproar exploded from Desolate camp. The Twelve Guardians

became agitated, fury started to surface on their faces.

“Beast, let Eighth Sister go!”

“Damn! Why is this little beast so strong? Not even Eighth Sister is a match for him?”

“It is our biggest mistake for allowing Eighth Sister to fight. I have no idea what this brat has cultivated. Eighth Sister’s sonic attack couldn’t even make an impact on him. She was defeated.”

.....

The Twelve Guardians couldn’t maintain their calmness anymore because the outcome was too sudden and unexpected. They initially thought that using Eighth Guardian to eliminate Jiang Chen was too easy. Who would’ve thought that Eighth Guardian would fall into Jiang Chen’s hands instead?

The facial expression of Second Guardian and the Supreme Elder turned grim. Not only had they lost Eighth Guardian, Desolate Palace was now placed in a dilemma.

On the contrary, the crowd in Gu Palace burst into cheers. In many people’s eyes, Jiang Chen was a godlike existence, like an all-powerful War God.

“That’s amazing! He is merely a Sixth Grade Great Saint, but he was able to get rid of Eighth Guardian so quickly. That’s totally unbelievable.”

“He’s really a monstrous genius... He’s truly a monstrous genius... It is no wonder that old ancestor of Gu Palace predicted that he was the biggest variable of this major crisis. Sure enough, the fates of our major palaces are now in his hands. Befriending him is truly the most sensible choice we have ever made.”

“Jiang Chen is both audacious and crafty. Now, he has even captured Eighth Guardian without killing her, adding another bargaining chip to us.”

.....

All the experts of the three major palaces were impressed by Jiang Chen to the very core. Before meeting him, they absolutely wouldn't believe that someone so terrifying would exist in this world. Any shining genius would grow dim and eventually fade in front of Jiang Chen.

"Second Guardian, we have to honor our previous agreement. Your army have to retreat now."

Jiang Chen returned to his human form and spoke in a plain tone. He knew very well that he had the highest bargaining power at this moment. Since they had already agreed with the terms before the fight, it would damage a great deal of Desolate Palace's reputation if they chose to break the agreement.

"Jiang Chen, let Eighth Guardian go and we will retreat," said Second Guardian.

"No. This is a life-or-death battle. I'm already kind enough to spare her. I will never let Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian go. They are my bargaining chips. Besides, neither of us agreed of letting them go."

Jiang Chen rejected his request. How could a heaven defying being like him be restricted by his opponent?

Chapter 1028 - The Crisis Has Just Started

In truth, Second Guardian wasn't surprised by Jiang Chen's response. It would be unexpected if Jiang Chen agreed to let Eighth Guardian and Desolate Emperor go. He had fallen into Jiang Chen's trap when he offered the terms of the battle. Now that the terms were mutually agreed and the battle was over, they were in a dilemma whether to retreat or advance.

"Second Brother, what now? Eighth Sister and Palace Master have already fallen into Jiang Chen's custody which makes it hard for us to advance." A guardian neared Second Guardian and spoke.

At this time, few of the half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elders approached Second Guardian.

"Second Guardian, I think we should retreat first. Then we will discuss about how we will deal with these three major palaces. They won't be able to create any waves of chaos even if they have a few more days of time. The outcome will be the same. There's no one that can stop our palace from ruling the entire Saint Origin Palace." A Supreme Elder said.

"Alright. We'll let them live two more days. Tear off the submissive contract. They won't have the chance to sign this contract anymore. Soon, they will be greeted by extinction and complete destruction." Second Guardian said maliciously.

He had not expected to encounter such a large obstacle in his first battle after the succeeding in his cultivation. It made him feel as if a thorn was jabbed into his heart. It was the greatest humiliation he had ever suffered.

"Jiang Chen, this will be your last chance. If you let Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian go now and submit yourselves to us, I guarantee Desolate Palace will never create trouble for you all anymore. If you decline my offer, you should be able to imagine the outcome of such action. Our forces is unstoppable. The three

palaces will lose the only chance of signing the submissive contract. Then, whatever awaits you all in the end will be annihilation,” said Second Guardian sternly.

“I don’t think the annihilation of both armies will be a big deal. I am waiting for it,” replied Jiang Chen incisively.

This was the first direct confrontation he had against Desolate Palace. He would never show any quarters to them. To him, the submissive contract was totally ridiculous. He was the majestic world’s Greatest Saint and the greatest cultivator in his past life. In this life, he would return to the height he once reached by stepping on all his formidable and powerful enemies ruthlessly. Presently, Desolate Palace was the strongest enemy he had faced so far.

“Very well. You three palaces will pay a high price for what you decided today.”

Second Guardian tore off three submissive contracts immediately, showing them that they had lost their chance to live. Desolate Palace would deal with them with the cruelest means, ensuring that they wouldn’t have the chance to survive.

“Retreat!”

Second Guardian waved, and disappeared with the army.

Seeing what happened, all the experts of three major palaces cheered once more. Their despair disappeared in an instant. Previously, they had almost lost their hopes until Jiang Chen emerged, reversing the critical situation. This had raised their impression of him. Everyone including Bin Changxiao was staring at him with respect.

“Jiang Chen, from today onwards we will scrape off the grudge and revenge between you and our palace. Bin Palace owes you a great kindness for saving our lives.” Bin Changxiao neared Jiang Chen and spoke earnestly.

“It is very wise for Bin palace master to ally yourself with us. I,

Jiang Chen, always liked to mix with people who are sensible.” Jiang Chen smiled and said.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen hadn't gained anything from Bin Palace, but he had killed many of their people. Naturally, he wouldn't decline them when they had decided to form an alliance with the two palaces during a moment of crisis. In addition, he believed that Bin Changxiao was sincere.

“Jiang Chen, with Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian in our grasp right now, I believe Desolate Palace won't dare to act rashly.” Gu Firmament said with a smile.

His current mood was totally different from his previous gloomy mood.

“It's too early to celebrate now. Our crisis hasn't passed yet. We were just able to obtain a few days' time. Now, all of you follow me into the meeting hall for discussion.” Jiang Chen's tone turned solemn suddenly.

Later, he led the experts back to the meeting hall.

Those who had heaved a long sigh of relief felt uneasy once more; they could never ignore Jiang Chen's words.

In the meeting hall of Gu Palace, Jiang Chen sat on the seat of honor. Even the half-step Human Immortal old ancestors sat below his two sides willingly. Everyone in the hall was clear that this youth in white was the backbone of the three major palaces. Every one of them was obliged to follow Jiang Chen's arrangements and orders. Only this could minimize the risk of getting annihilated.

“Jiang Chen, Desolate Emperor holds the highest position and power in Desolate Palace. Despite Desolate Palace has longed to rule the entire Saint Origin Palace, they can't possibly ignore the life of Desolate Emperor,” said Gu Firmament.

“You all have underestimated the forces of Desolate Palace and overrated the role of Desolate Emperor. Let me tell you all their

secret now. Did you ever doubt how those peerless geniuses were produced? Despite the strength of Desolate Palace now, they were relatively similar to any of you. But why could they nurture so many terrifying geniuses?” asked Jiang Chen grimly.

“This is a question which we have been thinking about, but we found no answer to that. Jiang Chen, what’s their secret of nurturing all these peerless geniuses?” An old ancestor of Gu Palace asked.

He was a half-step Human Immortal expert. Even if he expended a lifetime’s worth of effort to produce a peerless genius, he wouldn’t be able to nurture a genius as powerful as any of those twelve guardians.

“That’s because in the last hundred years, those Human Immortal ancestors who were supposed to ascend to the Immortal World had secretly hidden in Desolate Palace.”

Jiang Chen’s words sent shocking waves to their mind, causing a clamor. Everyone’s facial expression changed instantly.

“What? All the Human Immortals didn’t ascend to the Immortal World? That’s absolutely impossible. Take us for example, if we were to break through to the Human Immortal realm, we will break away from the Mortal realm and become a true Immortal, and would no longer be able to stay in Saint Origin World. Even if we insist to stay, the traction force of the Immortal World will pull us up. So how could the Human Immortals of Desolate Palace remain in the Mortal World?” The old ancestor of Gu Palace shook his head.

“That’s right. This is the law of nature. No one can break it.”

The old ancestors of Demon Palace and Bin Palace agreed with what the old ancestor of Gu Palace said. It was impossible to remain in Saint Origin World after breaking through to the Immortal realm.

“You all are right about that. But I have to mention one man—Ancestor Greenlotus,” said Jiang Chen.

“Ancestor Greenlotus died tragically under the heavenly tribulation while he was ascending to the Immortal World. What does this have to do with him?” Someone asked.

“What a joke! Given Ancestor Greenlotus’ ability, how could he die tragically under the heavenly tribulation while ascending to the Immortal World? Tell me, which of the old ancestor of the eight major palaces is on par with Ancestor Greenlotus’ strength? He wasn’t dead at all. There was once when he discovered a treasure in the Immortal Possessive Mountain that could deceive the law of Heaven. After Desolate Palace learned about his great encounter, they plotted against him and captured him during the time of his heavenly tribulation. All these years, Ancestor Greenlotus had been kept in the cell inside Desolate Palace. That was how those Human Immortal experts could stay in Saint Origin Palace over the past 100 years,” said Jiang Chen.

At this point in time, it was no longer necessary for him to hide the secret from them.

“What? I can’t believe there was such a thing.”

“Yeah. Ancestor Greenlotus was a fine and consummate monk of Buddha Sect. There was no reason he would fail when even our old ancestors could succeed the heavenly tribulation. So it turns out that Desolate Palace has hidden such a big secret from us.”

“Dang it! Desolate Palace does have a huge scheme. It seems the purpose of training those guardians secretly is for the rise of Desolate Palace.”

“Human Immortal experts can never attack because their power was too strong. This world won’t be able to stand it and that might trigger the traction force of the Immortal World. Basically, they were forbidden to attack. That was why they secretly trained those geniuses. They wanted Desolate Palace to become strong enough to

conquer the entire Saint Origin Palace.”

.....

Neither of them in the hall was a fool. They were able to draw a conclusion after listening to Jiang Chen. They were astonished to their core. No one would be able or would dare to figure out that Desolate Palace had hidden their Human Immortals.

To them, this was literally an impossible thing, but they had reason to believe it when it was coming from Jiang Chen’s mouth.

No one asked Jiang Chen how he knew about the secret because they had viewed Jiang Chen as an omnipotent being. Therefore, it wasn’t very surprising for him to know a big secret like this.

“That’s correct. Desolate Palace’s intention is clear. So if you all think that relying solely on Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian can stop Desolate Palace, you all are simply too naïve. Those Human Immortal old ancestors have been planning for this day for a hundred years, how can they possibly give up just because of Desolate Emperor? Besides, Desolate Emperor’s role isn’t as important as you thought. As such, I estimate that Desolate Palace will strike back after at most three days’ time. By that time, Desolate Emperor will be a useless hostage.”

As soon as Jiang Chen’s voice dropped, tense atmosphere rippled through the whole meeting hall. All their facial expression turned ugly again because they knew Jiang Chen was right. If Desolate Palace’s secret was real, Desolate Emperor wouldn’t weigh so much to them and holding him hostage could never stop their footsteps.

Three days’ time was going to be the countdown to their extinction. No, they were afraid that these three days’ of time was just a tentative prediction.

So, what are they going to do now?

Chapter 1029 - Returning To the Saint Cliff Once More

After learning the real secret of Desolate Palace, all their confident looks faded. They thought that by holding Desolate Emperor hostage Desolate Palace would stop from making the next move, which now seemed impossible. There were still mighty Human Immortal old ancestors behind Desolate Emperor. They had spent a hundred years of effort just to realize today's plan. Therefore, it was impossible for them to give up all their plans because of one person – Desolate Emperor.

“But, there's not need to worry. Although Desolate Palace has the mighty Human Immortal old ancestors backing them, they won't get involved in the war personally. So they haven't really reached a point where they could no longer fight back. The situation will reveal itself bit by bit. What I am worried about now is the Big Guardian which has been absent since the very beginning,” said Jiang Chen.

Saying these two words drew everyone's attention instantly. This was the person whom they had all forgotten. The youth who fought them just now was merely the Second Guardian. It was imaginable that Big Guardian was a lot stronger than him. All the experts began to feel powerless and helpless just like before, the forces of Desolate Palace was just too strong, so strong that it was unreachable.

“Jiang Chen, what countermeasures do you have?” asked Gu Firmament.

Everyone started looking at Jiang Chen. At this time, it was true that all of them were out of wits. So, they could only rely on Jiang Chen, hoping that he would continue to bring them miracles.

“Any good strategies is useless because the gap in power is just too wide. The only thing that we can do now is to improve our

strength,” said Jiang Chen.

“Ai! It is literally impossible to improve our strength without a few days’ time.”

Bin Changxiao heaved a sigh. Everyone’s face turned very unpleasant but they were very clear that although Jiang Chen sounded senseless, what he said was true. Any kinds of techniques or strategies was futile in the face of such an overpowering enemy. Therefore, the only way to confront such enemy was to improve their own strength.

“You all can’t, but I can. As long as my cultivation base breaks through to the Seventh Grade Great Saint, that Second Guardian will be no match for me. At that time, he is going to be killed by me. Additionally, since Big Guardian hasn’t appeared yet, we don’t have to worry much about him. We will move a step at a time. It won’t be easy for Desolate Palace to devour us. They are destined to become the stepping stones of my path.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. He stood up from his seat. Dense superior Qi emitted from his body, stirring up their admiration for him.

“There are only three days left. Advancing from Sixth Grade to the Seventh Grade won’t be an easy task, even for you.”

An old ancestor from the Bin Family said. They had no doubts about Jiang Chen’s strength. They also wouldn’t doubt that Jiang Chen could beat Second Guardian to death if Jiang Chen advanced to the Seventh Grade Great Saint, but the problem was the process of advancement. Improving the cultivation base from the Sixth Grade to the Seventh Grade Great Saint was almost an unachievable task.

“I have my own ways. I’m going to leave Saint Origin Palace and will return three days later. If no accident happens along the way, it won’t be a problem for me to advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint. But before I departure, I need to do one more thing.”

After he finished speaking, he looked over to where Big Yellow and Tyrant were standing. “Big Yellow, Tyrant, you two are needed again. Do you still remember the time when we fought against Nan Bei chao in Nebula Sect?”

“You mean the Five Elemental Tisura Formation?”

Tyrant’s eyes sparkled.

“That’s right. Three of us will deploy the Five Elemental Tisura Formation around Gu Palace. All Ninth Grade Great Saints are required to assume control of the formation. I will contribute the five elements, Tyrant will use the Blood Red Monument and Big Yellow will use his knowledge from the Formation Holy Book. Adding all other experts' support to the formation, it will be able to last for a period of time if Desolate Palace launches a sudden attack.”

Said Jiang Chen.

“Okay. Time is of the essence, let’s do it now.”

Tyrant said. Given the tenseness of the situation, everyone would agree that any measures must be implemented without delay.

Very soon, two men and a dog completed the deployment of the Five Elemental Tisura Formation, using the Five Elements as the foundation. The Blood Red Monument was suspended in the void at the center of the grand formation, emitting a dazzling light. It was a very powerful stone monument. Until now, Tyrant still wasn’t able to discover the secrets of this stone monument, but he was certain about the usage of the stone monument.

The experts of the three palaces stared at the Five Elemental Tisura Formation. Everyone’s eyes went wide. Almost every one of them were renowned experts. They had powerful cultivation base, were proficient in plentiful of formations and were considered the peak existence in the pyramid of life. Even the greatest Formation Master among them couldn’t help but praise upon seeing the Five

Elemental Tisura Formation.

“This formation is incredible. It’s a miracle that Jiang Chen possesses all five elements.”

“A monstrous existence like him is a miracle. Without this miracle, I’m afraid that we have no choice but to follow the example of Narang Palace. With this formation, it is indeed possible to effectively resist the attack of Desolate Palace. However, it still all depend on Jiang Chen whether he can advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint in a short period of time.”

“I’m now very confident in Jiang Chen. This man has created countless of miracles. He has been making an amazingly rapid progress. Currently, the fate of our three major palaces are tied to him.”

.....

Everyone marveled at Jiang Chen’s capabilities. Ever since they knew Jiang Chen, they realized that everything Jiang Chen did was big.

“Big Yellow, the Five Elemental Tisura Formation will be controlled by the half-step Human Immortals, which is enough to guarantee the safety of Gu Palace. I need you to come with me.”

Jiang Chen left bringing Big Yellow along. They went back to the Pure Land through the spatial passageway in Gu Palace.

“Little Chen, where are we going now?”

Big Yellow asked curiously.

“To Saint Cliff.”

Answered Jiang Chen.

“The place where you had fallen? We have been there once but there was nothing to be found there. Besides, the interior of the Saint Cliff has been blocked by a heavenly barrier. We won’t be able to get in.”

Big Yellow doubted.

“That’s right. We couldn’t last time, but I’m afraid that we can, now. Perhaps the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda can help us do so.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. He hadn’t thought about it last time but he recalled the time when he sneaked in Ancestor Greenlotus cell. As such, he thought that the pagoda might be able to slip past the heavenly barrier as well.

“I have left an earth-shattering treasures in the Saint Cliff. I predict that many of those treasures may be of great use to you. Also, I have a hunch that the last fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword is just behind the heavenly barrier. This palace is located right at the center of Saint Cliff. If we are able to get past the barrier, not only would my cultivation base advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint, your cultivation base will also improve by a leaps and bounds, which may arouse the power of the Totem Divine Seal, pushing your cultivation base even further to a terrifying extent.”

Said Jiang Chen. The Saint Cliff was a place of great significance to him and it was time for him to return there once more.

Chapter 1030 - The Seventh Fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword

The word ‘treasure’ made Big Yellow’s eyes glitter. There was nothing in this world more fascinating than treasures.

“Wakaka! Not bad kid! Master Dog is really interested in those treasures left by the World’s Greatest Saint. I would also like to see what’s behind the heavenly barrier.” Big Yellow laughed and said.

He knew that Jiang Chen was the World’s Greatest Saint. He felt that it would be worthwhile to go hunt for the treasure left by the him.

Soon, both of them had arrived in Gu Family through the spatial passageway. Instead of informing anyone in Gu Family, they headed straight to the Saint Cliff. Saint Origin World had returned to its usual peace after the Great War with the Devil Race.

Now that the Devil Race had already been fully controlled by Han Yan, there was no need to worry that there would be any invasion from the devil army. The people of Pure Land had still yet to know about the chaos that was happening in Saint Origin Palace despite the calm look of Saint Origin World. They were clueless that Narang Palace and the other three palaces had submitted themselves to Desolate Palace by signing the submissive contract. Because it just happened a while ago, the bondage of the contract hadn’t spread across to the four major families in Pure Land yet. However, it was believed that it wouldn’t be long before they felt the power of the bondage. This had become the tragedy for these four major families and palaces. They would never have freedom until one day when Desolate Palace was annihilated.

The Saint Cliff!

Sinister wind blew past them. The cliff that was once called the Saint Cliff had now become completely barren. It was basically a

place of desolation, and there were hardly people appearing in this place. This was the second time Jiang Chen returned to this place after his reincarnation. Although he had lived here once, he wasn't able to ease his emotion because this place meant so much to him. This was a place where he had left behind his glory, the endless legend and the greatest pain and unwillingness.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow approached the heavenly barrier. Though they couldn't see the barrier clearly, they could clearly sense the scariness of it. This was a barrier of nature that could block everything, even formidable half-step Human Immortals.

"Do you think your pagoda can penetrate into it?" asked Big Yellow with doubtfully.

"I once used the pagoda to penetrate through the deep layer of spatial zone in Desolate Palace. Then, I saw Ancestor Greenlotus imprisoned in a spatial cell built by Human Immortals, and I was able to slip into the spatial cell easily using it. So I think the pagoda can slip past this barrier as well. In any case, we have to try it first," replied Jiang Chen.

He had very high confidence in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Furthermore, this was his last chance. The last fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword might just be inside the Saint Cliff. In fact, given Jiang Chen's cultivation base, all the treasures left by his previous self weren't useful to him anymore, except the last remnant of the Heavenly Saint Sword. If he failed to find the last piece, the sword would still be incomplete even after he had ascended to the Immortal World.

As the Heavenly Saint Sword was his natal weapon, he naturally wished that he could make it a perfect weapon. If this weapon couldn't achieve its perfection before he left Saint Origin World, it might negatively affect him in the future—something which he didn't wish to see.

"I will open the pagoda now. You will go in first."

Jiang Chen ripped open an entrance for Big Yellow to enter, he then followed. Under his control, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda went nearer to the shapeless heavenly barrier stealthily. Both of them got tensed up when the pagoda was inching the barrier. This would be their last chance. If they failed, they wouldn't be able to defeat Desolate Palace.

Bo!

When the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda collided with the heavenly barrier, it shook slightly, creating a light sound. Jiang Chen got more tensed up. He held his breath but to his surprise, the pagoda didn't bounce back from the heavenly barrier.

"I think it worked."

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled.

"Not yet."

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth, trying his best to control the movement of the pagoda while it penetrated itself into the interior of the heavenly barrier. Then, with a puff, the ancient dragon marks on the surface of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda began to churn as though they had received some kind of stimulation, and a surprising scene appeared ahead of them.

The divine Ancestral Dragon Pagoda penetrated into the interior of the Saint Cliff without being blocked by the heavenly barrier.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow walked out of the pagoda, looking astonished. They had come into the interior of the Saint Cliff at last.

"Ancestral Dragon Pagoda sure is extraordinary and has many wonderful uses. The higher the level the pagoda got, the more uses it has."

Jiang Chen started to pay more attention to the pagoda. It was a

supreme treasure of the Ancestral Dragon. It was a treasure full of divinity. It certainly had been very useful to him. It was conceivable that the pagoda would become more powerful and useful as his cultivation base grew.

The atmosphere of the surrounding was filled with gloomy Qi. Sinister wind that chilled people's spine was blowing incessantly. Rubbles and half-crumbled hills could be found everywhere. It looked a desolate area that didn't look even the least bit like where a treasure would be found. But there was full confidence radiating from Jiang Chen's face instead of nervousness.

"Are you right about this? Where did you keep those treasures? I don't see even a hair here."

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen, speechless.

"Did you think I will simply place my treasures in noticeable places, given the means I have? Watch closely," replied Jiang Chen.

He took several steps towards south west. After confirming the coordinates, he ripped apart the void. For a moment, countless of golden rays streamed out falling upon Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's body. Jiang Chen looked calm whereas Big Yellow had gone excited.

"This is the Qi of Saint Rank Restoration Pills, of other precious spiritual herbs, of all kinds of powerful demon souls, devil souls and many other combat weapons and treasures. It turns out that you have created a new spatial zone just to keep these treasures. That's awesome!"

Big Yellow had a keen sense of smell. He could detect the types of the treasures by just smelling them.

These treasures left by Jiang Chen 100 years ago were definitely the greatest treasures of Saint Origin World. Anyone who could

discover this vault of treasure would bring prosperity to their sect. Big Yellow was no doubt impressed by Jiang Chen's means of keeping these treasures, admitting in his heart that Jiang Chen was worthy of being called the World's Greatest Saint. Despite it was a new spatial zone, it was fully connected to the world's barrier which made it extremely hard for even mighty Ninth Grade Great Saints to find.

One hundred years ago, the World's Greatest Saint was the peak existence with excellent and flawless means. Other people would not be able to find these treasures. He, on the other hand, could sense and identify its location casually as the spatial zone was built by him.

"Let's go." Jiang Chen said, leading the way.

Big Yellow followed him. As this was a spatial zone personally created by Jiang Chen, he wouldn't need to raise his alertness against it. He was certain that Jiang Chen wouldn't harm him.

Nevertheless, he gaped the moment he entered the zone. It was a small spatial zone with roughly a mile wide, which was still smaller than an average palace. But within this small and congested spatial zone was full of all sorts of formations—Trapping Formation, Killing Formation, Deluding Formation and so forth—that were densely intertwined with one another. In general, people who entered this place would faint due to dizziness.

"Darn you f*cking genius! You are worthy to be called the World's Greatest Saint!" Big Yellow yelled.

He was now totally impressed by Jiang Chen. He was afraid that only Jiang Chen had the ability to keep these much of treasures.

"Too bad, that was my past."

Jiang Chen smiled bitterly. He waved and those formations disappeared without a trace as though they had received some kind of command. Then, the treasures in the vault revealed itself

completely. There were various kinds of spatial rings, other kinds of treasures that could store things, precious spiritual herbs and etc. Floating around in the void was at least a few hundred combat weapons. Big Yellow saw some Fifth Grade Demon Soul being thrown on the floor like trash. There were also pills that looked strange and rare. Every one of these treasures was a priceless. But they were placed everywhere in this place casually, like they didn't worth even a penny.

“Wakaka! Little Chen! Master Dog didn't expect you to have kept so much treasures. Master dog is getting rich this time! Master Dog is going to have a hell lot of precious meal.”

Big Yellow bounced up vigorously. Immediately, he took in a deep breath like how the whale sucked in water, and sucked in enormous amount of spiritual herbs and pills. It made him seem like a being that could digest almost everything.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen couldn't help laughing. The reason he brought Big Yellow along was to allow him to devour these treasures. He was clear how many treasures he had left but none of them was significant enough to draw his attention. All he wanted right now was the last fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

However, his sword wasn't broken during the time he created this treasure vault. Anyhow, he had been searching for traces that could lead him to the last fragment and found none in Saint Origin World or Saint Origin Palace. So, his final guess was that the fragment might be left in this spatial zone. Although this was just a guess, it wasn't a groundless guess. After all, this was the place where he had fallen a hundred years ago.

Buzz...

Sure enough, as he was inspecting the hundreds of combat weapons floating in the void, a buzzing sound was heard somewhere around. Immediately, he identified a broken sword out

of the countless of combat weapons. This broken sword was where the buzzing sound came from.

“Haha! Here it is!”

Jiang Chen laughed in delight. That was no doubt the last piece of Heavenly Saint Sword fragment. It seemed he had made the right guess this time that the last fragment was in this treasure vault. The Heavenly Saint Sword would return to its peak after integrating with this sword fragment. The effect of this integration would be a lot greater than all the previous integrations. As such, it would not be a problem at all for him to directly advance to the peak of the seventh grade.

Chapter 1031 - The Completion of the Heavenly Saint Sword

With a flick, the last piece flew automatically to his hands and rippled pleasantly, as if it was summoned by its master.

“Big Yellow, there are innumerable spiritual herbs and demon souls here. There are also some Ninth Grade Great Saint demon souls and devil souls. So, consume and absorb as much of them as you can. With the strength of your Divine Beast Bloodline and blessings of Totem Divine Seal, you virtually have limitless absorption capacity. This is a golden opportunity which you cannot miss. As for me, I’m going to refine the last fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and I’m afraid the process will probably take at least one day to complete,” said Jiang Chen to Big Yellow.

“Don’t worry. I won’t give a damn to any of your precious treasures, especially those devil and demon souls. Once the Totem Divine Seal and my bloodline successfully absorb all of these things, my cultivation base will skyrocket to the eighth grade.”

Big Yellow had gotten very excited. He was afraid that he would only encounter such a great opportunity once in his lifetime. Only fools would never appreciate such opportunity, and Big Yellow was no fool.

A man and a dog started their refinement without any delay because they didn’t have much time to waste. A great crisis was going to explode in Saint Origin Palace at any moment. The only person who could alter the fate of the three major palaces was Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen sat cross-legged. He drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword and started fusing the last piece of the sword, and because it was the last piece, it would take a lot longer than before. It would need at least a day’s time.

As for their safety, this place was too safe to be at. There was no need for any defense at all. With the heavenly barrier outside, no one would be able to enter, even those Human Immortals of Desolate Palace, and no one was able to guess that he was now at the most central part of the Saint Cliff.

Meanwhile in Desolate Palace!

The old ancestor Human Immortal had gotten very furious. The twelve Guardians and the higher ups of Desolate Palace were silent, and trembling in fear.

“You all are a bunch of trash! How could you allow one brat to mess up our plan? Even our palace master is being held captive by them. This is disgraceful!”

That Human Immortal eyes swept across everyone present. Immediately, all of them felt a strong pressure that even made their souls tremble. That was a pressure emitted from a formidable Human Immortal. Even those half-step Human Immortals couldn't bear it.

“Old Ancestor, what should we do now?” Second Guardian asked boldly.

“Humph! Jiang Chen thinks that he can stop our plan by himself? That's ridiculous. How could we give up our hundred-year-old plan so easily?”

The old ancestor let out a cold humph.

“But Old Ancestor, Desolate Emperor is still in their hands. If we attack by force, I'm afraid Desolate Emperor's life will be in danger. He represents an important position in Desolate Palace. If something were to happen to him, I'm afraid the impact would hit us hard.” A half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elder said worriedly.

“Go to Gu Palace and tell them that I will only give them a day's time to release Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian. Once the

time is over, they will lose the chance of signing the contract and Desolate Palace will launch a massive attack, killing everyone and destroying everything there. We will let them feel the pain of extinction.” Old Ancestor said with a ruthless face. His tone carried no emotions.

“But...”

The half-step Human Immortal Supreme Elder knitted his brows. They had spent longer time with Desolate Emperor than any other elders and disciples, which made their relationship closer. They didn’t wish to see any accident happen on him, but they also understood the character of Jiang Chen clearly. It was simply impossible for a ruthless man to let Desolate Emperor so easily.

“There’s no ‘buts’. We can’t allow any hindrance to our grand plan. Desolate Emperor is the leader of the army, but was the first to be captured by the enemy. It is a great shame to Desolate Palace. If he died, another palace master will take his place. Go now.”

Old ancestor waved his sleeve. No one present dared to disobey his command. His words had the absolute authority.

Jiang Chen’s guess was right. Those Human Immortals of Desolate Palace had stayed in Saint Origin Palace in the last hundred years just to realize their grand plan, the realization of conquering the whole Saint Origin World. No one would be able to stop their footsteps, not even the palace master of Desolate Palace—Desolate Emperor. In the eyes of those old ancestors, the life of Desolate Emperor couldn’t be compared to the fate of Desolate Palace.

“Yes, old ancestor.”

Second Guardian clasped his fists, turned and left.

He arrived outside Gu Palace and yelled, “Jiang Chen and every one of the three palaces, listen up! We, Desolate Palace, will only give you all a day’s time to hand over Desolate Emperor and Eighth

Guardian. In which case, you all will be granted the chance to surrender and sign the contract. If they aren't released, Desolate Palace will launch a large-scale attack on Gu Palace, annihilating all of your palaces."

The world 'annihilated' reverberated over the void and into everyone's ears. Their mood had fallen from hopeful to despair. A day's time... it seemed like this was the last period they had left.

"What? A day's time?"

"It seems like Jiang Chen made the right guess. Compared to Desolate Palace's determination to conquer the world and Desolate Emperor, the palace master was obviously outweighed by their desire to rule the whole world. We initially thought that we would get three days' time before the attack. No one imagined that Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian are only worth one day."

"Ai! The thing that was destined to come will come eventually, but a day is just too tight. Even if Jiang Chen is super talented, I'm afraid that he won't be able to advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint in a single day. The true crisis has struck us this time."

"Let's hope that Jiang Chen will be able to bring another miracle to us. Otherwise, our palaces will be doomed and go extinct."

.....

The higher ups of the three palaces sighed once more. Given their current situation, they naturally couldn't let Desolate Emperor go. If they really released Desolate Emperor, he who had been disgraced badly, would never agree to let them sign the contract even if Second Guardian had already stated the condition beforehand. When a chance was given to him, he wouldn't hesitate to annihilate the three major palaces for revenge.

There was no turning back for the three palaces now. They could only face the crisis head on, at the same time, placing all of their hopes on Jiang Chen, praying that he had enough time to reach a

higher level. If he succeeded, they earnestly believed that he would turn the tides of war. However, they also knew that it wasn't an easy task.

In the Saint Cliff, Jiang Chen had completed the fusing of the last fragment with the fastest speed. It only took him half a day's time.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword uttered a pleasant howl as it hovered above Jiang Chen's head, emitting unusual colors of radiance. The surface of the sword sparkled with the images of dragons, while the hilt turned into a blood-red dragon head that looked very lifelike. After all, the fragments had already been fused into the sword, it now seemed as if it contained a soul. Anyone who saw the Qi of this sword could undoubtedly tell that it was an impeccably treasured sword.

Chapter 1032 - The Power of Han Yan

As the Heavenly Saint Sword returned to its peak state, Jiang Chen began to receive the benefits from it; the potential strength inside of him was stimulated. The number of new dragon marks in his Qi Sea was increasing rapidly. Very quickly, 500 dragon marks were formed, making a total of 92 000 dragon marks in his body. It was without a doubt the number of dragon marks required to advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint.

Hong...

An incomparably violent Qi blasted out from his body all of a sudden. The seventh grade of the Great Saint realm itself was a difficult hurdle. If the Great Saint realm was divided into three portions, the seventh grade would be the late stage of the realm. Despite this being just the beginning of the late stage of the realm, it was many folds stronger than that of the sixth grade no doubt.

But then again, advancing to the seventh grade wasn't the end of the improvement. The completion of Heavenly Saint Sword had brought him more benefits than the mere 500 dragon marks. New dragon marks were forming inside his Qi Sea incessantly. It seemed like it wouldn't be a problem for him to hit the peak of the seventh Grade Great Saint.

If he transformed into a half-dragon, he could kill the Twelve Guardians with ease. He could even fight Second Guardian. If he reached the peak of the seventh grade, Second Guardian would certainly be no match for him and would be killed instantly.

On the other side, Big Yellow was undergoing some earth-shaking transformation too. The surface of his body was wrapped by a large golden cocoon created by the energy from all of the spiritual herbs, demon and devil souls he consumed. Currently, his cultivation base was still soaring incessantly.

A day's time passed very quickly. Jiang Chen's cultivation base

had hit the peak of the Seventh Grade Great Saint, just like what he had expected. The total dragon marks in his body had reached 93 500, 500 more to break through to the next level.

Jiang Chen's current cultivation was undeniably many times stronger compared to before.

Hua La...

Energy and Qi receded back into his body like the waves. He opened his eyes, gleaming with brilliance as the Heavenly Saint Sword fell automatically into his hands. A smile appeared at the corner of his mouth.

“With the strength and the completed Heavenly Saint Sword that I have now, I can kill that Second Guardian with ease. However, I'm afraid that it's not yet enough to deal with that Big Guardian. At any rate, that isn't my concern for the time being. I will take a step each at a time. There'll surely be a way when the time comes.”

Jiang Chen had now placed the Second and the other Guardians out of his eyes, except for Big Guardian who hadn't appeared yet. Apparently, Big Guardian was a lot stronger than Second Guardian. He estimated that he would need to at least advance to the eighth grade in order to fight Big Guardian.

He stood up, looking at the sleeping Big Yellow silently. He walked out of the spatial zone towards the Saint Cliff. Unexpectedly, he went through the heavenly barrier unhindered. Therefore, this showed that only the people outside the barrier wouldn't be able to pass through it.

“I wonder what's the condition of Saint Origin Palace right now. I will head back first, and leave Big Yellow here. He will join us once he succeeded.”

Jiang Chen dared not neglect the limited time he had. Though he said that Desolate Palace would take at most three days' time before they attack, there was no way that he could be certain about

it, things could turn out very differently from what he expected.

Meanwhile, the current situation in Saint Origin Palace was beyond Jiang Chen's expectation. A day has passed but an army of Desolate experts were already outside of Gu Palace. The Qi and pressure they emitted encompassed the entire palace, almost suffocating the people inside.

Second Guardian stood at the very front. His white clothes fluttered in the wind. The folding fan in his hand reflected a light that was as sharp as a sword. There was a killing intent all over his body, making him entirely different from his previous scholarly demeanour.

"All the people of Gu Palace, listen closely! I will give you all one last chance to hand over Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian now and yield to us." Second Guardian yelled in a stern tone.

However, there was no response from Gu Palace's side which wore out his patience and ignited his fury.

"Good, this is very good. Since you three palaces are seeking death, don't blame us for not giving you a chance. Listen up, experts of Desolate army! Attack Gu Palace now and don't leave a single living thing here alive." Second Guardian commanded.

Immediately, a battle cry was heard, as the remaining ten guardians and the experts of Narang, Shi, Dan and Huo Palace lunged forward, bombarding Gu Palace.

With such an enormous army and frightening attacks, it wasn't an exaggeration to describe it as unrivalled. It was conceivable that these massive attacks would turn Gu Palace into powder instantaneously and disappear forever if Gu Palace wasn't protected by any protective barrier.

The people from the three palaces changed their facial expression dramatically. This was undoubtedly a massive war. No one was certain if they could stay alive in such a war. It was impractical to

fight their enemies head on even with the help of the Devil Race, the gap between the two armies was too great. Now, the only thing that they could rely on was the Five Elemental Tisura Formation despite their lack of confidence and despair.

“Everybody hold the grand formation with all your might now!” Gu Firmament shouted hastily.

The Five Elemental Tisura Formation was their last line of defence. Once it was torn apart, they would certainly be doomed. For now, with the help of the Devil Race and half-step Human Immortals, the three palaces were strong enough to support the Five Elemental Tisura Formation.

Hong Long...

The grand formation was bombarded with tremendous energy, shaking the whole formation violently, making even the light of the formation dim. However, the people of the three palaces were exhilarated when the formation withstood such a massive attack.

“What an amazing Five Elemental Tisura Formation! I can’t believe that it has such a powerful defensive strength.”

“It’s too early to feel happy about it. Our enemy has just launched their first attack. They won’t stop attacking and every attack will be stronger than the last, which will cost a massive consumption of our energy. I’m clueless about how long can we hold this grand formation before burning out.”

“Don’t be distracted! Continue to hold the grand formation until Jiang Chen returns. According to my calculation, today isn’t the day of our destruction and Jiang Chen is still the largest variable in this crisis.”

.....

The old ancestor of Gu Palace’s word has excited them all again, as if he injected a shot of adrenaline into them. They were now filled with hope again.

“What’s that grand formation? How could it stop our massive attack?”

“I have never seen such a formation before. It seems like the three palaces have made the necessary preparations for our attack.”

“Knock it off! The stronger the formation, the greater the energy it consumes. I would like to know how long they can last. Continue attacking! We will rip this grand formation apart!”

.....

The appearance of the Five Elemental Tisura Formation had surprised the enemy. Nevertheless, in spite of their surprise, they were still the most powerful force compared to the three palaces. They were sure that they could rip this grand formation regardless of how exceptional it was.

Second Guardian made a ruthless move. The folding fan in his hand grew to 300 meters. Every wave of the fan created an extreme force that could topple mountains and overturn seas. In the meantime, all the guardians and half-step Human Immortals were focusing their attacks on the five formation eyes. Soon, cracks began to appear on the surface of the grand formation. The people of the three palaces got tensed once more.

“A situation like this is too frustrating!”

Han Yan was holding the Supreme Devil Wand. His white hair fluttered along the breeze, making him look like a frenzied devil. All of a sudden, he rushed out of the grand formation at maximum speed, and appeared before a Ninth Grade Great Saint of Desolate army. Without saying a word, he swiped the Supreme Devil Wand, spreading out thousands of devil waves, smashing against the opponent.

“What?!” exclaimed the Ninth Grade Great Saint.

A sense of extreme danger rose from the bottom of his heart. He

hadn't thought that his enemy would dare to rush out of the grand formation. In their point of view, the experts of the three palaces would only stay within the proximity of the grand formation, unless they wanted an early death.

Too bad, no one in Desolate Palace thought that someone would rush out of the grand formation and wanted to die so badly, like what was happening now. The Ninth Grade Great Saint was currently at the brink of death when Han Yan sneak-attacked him.

Hong Long...

The Supreme Devil Wand moved too quickly. It smashed right at the head of the Ninth Grade Great Saint. A shrill wail was heard before his entire body was smashed into dust. Adding Han Yan's cultivation base and the Supreme Devil Wand, killing an ordinary Ninth Grade Great Saint would be a piece of cake. He could even fight the guardians into a draw. To put it bluntly, Han Yan now possessed the combat strength on par with a half-step Human Immortal.

Also, he possessed the complete Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and the Great Devil Curse, which made him very dangerous even to those guardians if they weren't careful enough. Once his Great Devil Curse invaded their minds, they were doomed. It would be a scene very similar to the time when Sang Ba killed the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace easily.

"A mad devil has rushed out from the enemy camp. Kill him!"

Someone regained his senses and roared.

Hua La...

For a moment, nearly a dozen Ninth Grade Great Saints surrounded Han Yan. Including the palace master of Dan and Huo Palace who had stronger combat power than the general Ninth Grade Great Saints, but that didn't concern Han Yan at all. To him, killing any one of them was just a piece of cake.

“A wild devil dares to come here and show your arrogance?! You are the friend of Jiang Chen, go and die now!” The palace master of Huo Palace said, gritting his teeth.

After yielding to Desolate Palace, he felt extremely annoyed. Adding the grudge that he had against Jiang Chen, he would naturally express all his anger on Jiang Chen or someone related to Jiang Chen. Therefore, he would definitely kill Jiang Chen’s friend as a way to express his frustration.

Chapter 1033 - The Domineering Return

A dozen Ninth Grade Great Saints had encircled Han Yan. Anyone would feel frightened facing such formidable enemies. Furthermore, Han Yan was merely a peak Eighth Grade Great Saint expert, an unimaginable gap to Ninth Grade.

However, such gap only existed for average experts and Han Yan was obviously not ordinary.

He was a rare genius equipped with the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, Great Devil Curse and Supreme Devil Wand.

“Kill!” The palace master of Shi Palace yelled, and took the lead, lunging at Han Yan.

Simultaneously, the other Ninth Grade Great Saints attacked from different directions. It seemed like they wanted to eliminate Han Yan once and for all, not wanting to leave any of his remnants behind.

“Humph!”

Han Yan smiled coldly. Facing the attack of these Ninth Grade Great Saints didn't worry him at all. Billowy devil waves surged out of his body, turning into a domain, while unspeakable devil incantation was recited from his mouth. Some of them had been caught off guard.

In a life or death situation like this, if you were slightly affected by your opponent's skill, you were already doomed. The Great Devil Curse casted by Han Yan using his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline was many folds stronger than the one casted by Sang Ba. The curse was generally used on a one on one battle because it wouldn't work well as a wide range attack.

However, one should already know the power of the Great Devil Curse if it was casted by Han Yan's Supreme Devil Wand.

At least five of the 12 were affected by the Great Devil Curse.

Han Yan brandished the Devil Wand, shrouding the whole battlefield with illusions. The powerful wand was fighting against the attacks and also blasting the heads of the five experts who had fallen into a trance.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

Miserable wails were heard when the five Super Great Saints were killed by Han Yan. They turned into a mist of blood that drifted across the void, filling the entire battlefield with the stench of blood. Anyone who saw this scene would feel a tinge of fright. One should know that these experts were powerful Ninth Grade Great Saints. They were the godlike figures to countless of people. Seeing them knocked to death by someone with a lower grade than them like an ant made all their reverence for these experts worthless.

“Be careful, everybody! This brat knows the Great Devil Curse. Dammit!”

The palace master of Shi Palace couldn't help but yell. He had seen Sang Ba use this skill before. However, comparing Sang Ba to this white-haired youth was like comparing a giant to a supergiant, they were absolutely incomparable.

Even if Sang Ba was powerful, he wouldn't be able to affect so many of them in an instant. Han Yan's Great Devil Curse, on the other hand, could instantly make five of them fall into a trance. He had to admit that it was too scary.

“Awesome... He is worthy of being the ruler of Devil Race. We've got another peerless genius on our side.”

“That's really astonishing! They are actually a group of monstrous genius. Everyone who followed Jiang Chen is a being with extraordinary capability. Killing five Ninth Grade Great Saints with one blow? I would not believe this if I didn't see this with my own eyes.”

“It’s so relieving!”

.....

The people of the three palaces saw Han Yan displaying his divine power by killing Ninth Grade Great Saints with ease. It shocked and also exhilarated every one of them. The sudden emergence of such a powerful and aggressive figure had undeniably boosted all of their morale.

“Haha...”

Han Yan was overbearing. He waved the Supreme Devil Wand once more. Layers of devil waves rolled out. This time, he locked on the palace master of Shi Palace. Since he was going to kill them anyway, he might as well pick a significant expert to kill.

“No!” The palace master of Shi Palace screamed. Han Yan moved too fast. The palace master could already feel the strong Qi of death. Despite there being many assistants by his side, he was still overwhelmed by helplessness, as if he was going to lose his life at any second.

The feeling he felt made him incomparably frustrated. The palace master of Shi Palace was a prestigious figure who had never experienced such feeling before. It was the intense feeling of an impending death.

Bang!

The Supreme Devil Wand had completely locked onto its target. The palace master didn’t even have the ability to resist. He died under the Devil Wand like the other Ninth Grade Great Saints and turned into a mist of blood.

Han Yan’s eyes swept across the surroundings. Although the death of these few Ninth Grade Great Saints might not be significant to Desolate Palace’s camp, it still dealt a huge blow to their morale.

“Another self-conceited guy has popped out. Ninth Guardian, go

and get rid of him.” Second Guardian, who was attacking the Five Elemental Tisura Formation frenziedly, said.

“Okay, I will go and kill him now,” replied Ninth Guardian.

With a flicker of his body, he came before Han Yan and struck the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw without saying a word. This was the unique combat technique of Desolate Palace. The power of this combat skill was without a doubt many folds stronger compared to any of the twelve guardians.

Han Yan’s face hardened. Sure enough, Ninth Guardian wasn’t comparable to any ordinary expert. Although he was also a Ninth Grade Great Saint, the gap between him and the palace master of Shi Palace was too big.

But Han Yan didn’t fear his opponent. No matter how powerful his opponent was, it wouldn’t be enough to force him to retreat, given his current strength and foundation.

“Devilish Deep Ocean!”

Han Yan waved the Supreme Devil Wand once more, striking out his powerful innate ability by circulating the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline to the maximum. Under the impact of such violent energy, the void began to distort. Layers of devil Qi that were emitted turned into a devilish sea that created gusts of devil wind. Every gust of the wind was like an indestructible sword and was the most destructive.

This was his innate ability enhanced by the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline and the Supreme Devil Wand. So, anyone who knew this could imagine how terrifyingly powerful it had become. As the enormous energy connected with the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw, the giant claw was immediately enshrouded by the devilish sea.

Hong Long...

Right after that, the devilish sea burst apart. It was a direct

collision of both infinite energy. Huge sparks were created like flames. The entire battlefield was thrown into disorder.

“What a strong man! He can already fight me even if he is merely an Eighth Grade Great Saint? Many strange beings have appeared in those three palaces.”

Ninth Guardian was shocked by Han Yan’s power, but he wasn’t afraid of him though. He had never doubted his own talent and put any ordinary opponent in his eyes, but this white-haired youth who seemed a lot younger than him could defend against his attack with the strength of a mere Eighth Grade Great Saint. If this youth was at the same level as him, he was afraid that he would be turned into a mist of blood instantly, like the palace master of Shi Palace.

“Sixth Guardian, go over there and kill him at once. Do not let the dignity of Desolate Palace down.” Second Guardian ordered.

Before they could even break the grand formation of the three palaces, a young brat from the Devil Race had intruded into their army and killed a few Ninth Grade Great Saints. Although the death of these Great Saints weren’t something significant to Desolate Palace, it had dampened the spirits of their army and also affected their dignity.

Dong!

Sixth Guardian’s Qi fluctuated as he flew towards the direction of Han Yan, but his move had long been noticed by Han Yan.

“I won’t continue this fight with you anymore.”

As the devilish waves rolled, he returned to the Five Elemental Tisura Formation in a split second, leaving Sixth Guardian with an empty target. Han Yan was a very clever man. He knew that he was no match for them if it was a two-versus-one battle unless he advanced to the ninth grade.

Anyhow, he had already achieved his objective, which was to boost the morale of the three palaces and pull them out of their

shadow of despair. As for turning the tide of this war, he would leave it to Jiang Chen because he was a man who knew his own limits.

“Brat! Have some nerve and fight me!” Sixth Guardian bellowed through gritted teeth.

“Haha! Two versus one? Are you ignoring your precious little face?” Han Yan laughed and ignored them.

“Humph! Once this distasteful formation is broken, I will rip you apart myself.” Sixth Guardian let out a cold humph and said maliciously.

He had already locked the Qi of Han Yan. As long as Han Yan dared to come out again, he would immediately send him to hell. Also, once the grand formation was broken, the first thing he would do was to kill Han Yan.

Hong Long...

The raging attacks were still going on. As there were too many experts attacking together, the force of the bombardment was massive. The Five Elemental Tisura Formation wouldn't be able to hold up for long. Every time their enemies attacked, it would shake the grand formation violently. By now, there had been subtle cracks on the surface of the grand formation. These cracks were spreading all over the surface of the formation, like branches as the attacks continue. The experts who had been supporting the grand formation started to feel the disordered circulation of Qi and blood inside their bodies. Once they lost the ability to support the formation, the formation would break and they will then face their doom.

“We're all going to die! Jiang Chen said that we have three days, if he estimated that along with his advancement, we won't be able to hold it until he gets back.”

“That's right. Judging by our current condition, we can hold on

at most for another ten minutes. Then, visible cracks will appear on the formation before it is broken completely.”

“Dammit! I’m going to go all out against them. Even if I die, I will make sure I die with any one of them.”

.....

Up until this moment, a lot of the experts were in despair again, they had placed all their hopes on Jiang Chen. It seemed like a very difficult task for Jiang Chen to get back within ten minutes’ time.

Some of them were already mentally prepared to die and would kill as many Desolate army as possible before they die.

“Jiang Chen, when have you become a timid and retractable tortoise? Don’t you even have the guts to show yourself?” Second Guardian’s Qi flared up and bellowed at Gu Palace, because he didn’t sense the Qi of Jiang Chen.

“Who said that I don’t have the guts to appear? Here I am. What follows next will be the end for each and every one of you.”

Just as Second Guardian’s voice was about to fade, an extremely loud voice roared from the interior of Gu Palace.

Chapter 1034 - A One-Sided Killing

Although no one had emerged yet, the experts of the three palaces had gotten very excited, they couldn't get any more familiar than this sound. It was without a doubt Jiang Chen's voice, the true creator of miracles, the one who would always emerge in times of crisis and turn the tides.

A white-clothed silhouette appeared like a ghostly figure in the sky above Gu Palace. Truly, he was the Jiang Chen that they knew. Instead of standing within the Five Elemental Tisura Formation, he stood outside of it, facing the army of enemies fearlessly.

"That's the spirit of a true peerless genius. The Qi that he casually emitted can overwhelm anyone. Have you all noticed that his Qi has become so much stronger than the day before? He has already advanced to the peak of Seventh Grade Great Saint. This is truly a miracle. I'm afraid that only Jiang Chen could do this under the Heavens."

"Incredible...Jiang Chen has advanced again. He was already powerful enough to kill a guardian before he advanced. I'm afraid that even Second Guardian is no match for him now. I am starting to see a glimmer of hope for our palaces."

"One man to turn the tides around. This is a dominance that could pierce through the sky. No one could match such dominance."

.....

All the experts from the three palaces looked at Jiang Chen with respect. Though Jiang Chen looked like a skinny figure, he had become so powerful that none of them could reach his level. His existence symbolized an irreplaceable position even for the three palaces. Everyone's hope was now in his hands. They regarded him like a godlike figure now.

Jiang Chen's appearance halted the attack of the Desolate army, which gave the Five Elemental Tisura Formation a short time to recover.

When Second Guardian stared at Jiang Chen, a hint of surprise flashed past his eyes. Given his perceptive ability, he could clearly sense that Jiang Chen was way powerful than the day before. Such a heaven defying growth rate made even the proud Second Guardian admit that he wasn't as good as Jiang Chen.

Of course, despite Jiang Chen advancing to the peak of Seventh Grade Great Saint, Second Guardian still didn't have the slightest bit of fear for him. He was after all an exceedingly confident man. Jiang Chen's growth wouldn't arouse any fear inside of him, to him, Jiang Chen was just too weak to be compared with him.

"Jiang Chen, I will say this for one last time. Release Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian now, and perhaps it may give the three palaces a chance of survival. Or else, the thing that would welcome you all will be extinction." Second Guardian's eyes flashed brilliantly as he spoke to Jiang Chen.

Without saying a word, Jiang Chen yanked Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian out from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. In fact, Desolate Emperor wasn't in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Jiang Chen just seized him from the cell in Gu Palace.

"It's good that you understand the situation, Jiang Chen." Desolate Emperor said viciously.

"What are you so pleased about? I didn't say I'd let you go."

Jiang Chen glared at Desolate Emperor.

"Jiang Chen, let the two of them go. Don't allow yourself to fall into an irrecoverable state," said Second Guardian.

"Really? I'm afraid that the three palaces won't fall into that state. It will be your Desolate Palace. I will never release Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian. They are standing here right now

because I am going to kill them personally in front of you,” replied Jiang Chen coldly.

Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian were now useless. At the beginning, he captured Desolate Emperor to buy them some time. He initially estimated that they would have three days time. He didn't expect that Desolate Emperor was only worth a day's time.

Fortunately, he was able to find the last fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and was able to get back in time.

“Outrageous! Don't you dare do it!”

Second Guardian and the Supreme Elders were infuriated. Killing Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian in front of them would be a direct provocation and humiliation to them.

Instead of replying them verbally, Jiang Chen replied with an audacious action.

Ignoring the frightened expression of Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian, he stretched out two of his fingers and struck the middle of both of their eyebrows. A 'Pu Chi' sound was heard along with two miserable wails, blood shot out from their wound, and they instantly died. Without even showing mercy to the corpses, he sealed the dead bodies with a formation and hurled them back into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. As the pagoda was a voracious sucker, the corpses must be protected by a formation, or else they would be engulfed by the pagoda.

Naturally, he was keeping these corpses for other uses.

Wah...

The scene of Jiang Chen killing Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian shocked the experts of Gu Palace. Such a move was undeniably heaven defying. It was not only an insult to Desolate Emperor. It was also a provocation that had infuriated the Desolate army to annihilate the three palaces by any means necessary.

In fact, every one of them knew that the relationship between the

two armies had already reached such an extent even before Jiang Chen killed Desolate Emperor and Eighth Guardian. It was an unchangeable fact.

“Son of a b*tch! How dare you do that?!”

“Dammit! He has killed our palace master. I must kill him, shred his body to million pieces, and also annihilate all three palaces. Everyone in the three palaces must be destroyed including their remains.”

“We have to eliminate all of them once and for all. They are too detestable! Killing our palace master before us only showed that they aren’t putting us in their eyes. This is no different than slapping the face of Desolate Palace. Darn it! We have suffered too much losses.”

.....

All the experts ranging from Supreme Elders to Eighth Grade Great Saint experts in Desolate camp had gotten completely furious. Their eyes turned red, they were determined to root out the three palaces now and capture Jiang Chen to torture him horrendously before ending his life.

“Jiang Chen, I didn’t expect you to act so ruthlessly. You have just eliminated the three palaces chance of survival. Today will be the largest massacre in the history of Saint Origin World, and this will be a one-sided massacre.”

Second Guardian’s face turned ferocious.

Hong...

Jiang Chen was absolutely indifferent to their anger. He fluctuated his Qi and turned into his half-dragon form. Powerful dragon Qi surged outwards, filling every corner with a murderous stench.

“Second Guardian, you are right. Today is going to be the greatest massacre ever in the history of Saint Origin World and it

will be a unilateral massacre. But it won't be you conducting the massacre on the three palaces. It will be us massacring you all," said Jiang Chen loudly.

Arrogance! The aura of arrogance pervaded the entire void. No one was as arrogant as Jiang Chen in the history of Saint Origin World. In many people's view, Jiang Chen's arrogance was unparalleled.

"I will kill him to avenge Eighth Sister's death."

A man was the first to stand out. He was holding a golden sabre in his hand. Without saying anything more, he lunged towards Jiang Chen. He wasn't an ordinary expert, he was Fifth Guardian. His rank was enough to show his power, which was on par with ordinary half-step Human Immortals. Presently, his head was overwhelmed by tremendous anger. For so many years that the thirteen of them had been cultivating together, they had developed feelings and bonds for each other. Naturally, he would be inexorably furious when Eighth Guardian was killed before them.

"Be careful, Fifth Brother." Second Guardian warned, but it was too late.

"Humph! All of you guardians regarded yourself too highly."

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. The complete Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand rippled. The degree of strength that this sword had was no longer comparable to any common Combat Weapons.

Howl!

Jiang Chen slashed like lightning. Razor-sharp sword light radiated out, like a wild storm with such a speed that not even Fifth Guardian had the chance to react.

Pu Chi!

"Argh!"

Fifth Guardian was powerless. Along with a wail, Fifth Guardian

was slashed into half. Blood gushed out of the openings. Jiang Chen grabbed the corpse, sealed it with a formation and hurled it into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

One slash to kill Fifth Guardian!

“Who else?”

Jiang Chen stood facing the group of guardians with his sword. His overbearing Qi started to fill the atmosphere.

“Haha! This is good! Jiang Chen has grown stronger. Not even a guardian of Desolate Palace is his opponent now.”

“He’s amazing! Fifth Guardian is severed into half just like that. Out of Thirteen Guardians, two guardians have already fallen, and I don’t think Second Guardian is a match for Jiang Chen.”

.....

The slash had stirred up the emotion of the three palaces. Even though they knew that today was going to be the largest massacre in the history of Saint Origin World, they were still clueless which side would be the one to conduct the one-sided massacre.

“Fifth Brother!”

“Bastard, I will kill him!”

.....

The remaining guardians got really furious. As Sixth Guardian was lunging towards Jiang Chen, he was stopped by Second Guardian.

“Let me do this. You aren’t his opponent.”

Second Guardian’s tone was grim, including his expression. He had not thought that such a day would come. A day when Jiang Chen had grown to such an unimaginable extent. Amongst the entire army of Desolate Palace, it seemed like only he could fight him.

“You are no match for me, let your Big Guardian come and face me.”

Jiang Chen pointed his sword at Second Guardian. His tone and eyes were full of contempt.

“I alone am capable enough to get rid of you.”

Second Guardian unfolded his folding fan and struck at Jiang Chen violently. Stormy energy rustled in the air, forming a large golden barrier that could destroy everything. It reached Jiang Chen in a few blinks.

Confronting such a powerful attack, Jiang Chen’s expression didn’t even change a bit. With his current strength, he too wouldn’t put Second Guardian in his eyes.

Whoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword was swiped once more. With a ‘Chi La’, the golden barrier casted by Second Guardian was ripped into half. The formidable sword Qi continued launching forward, striking at the direction of Second Guardian.

“What?”

Second Guardian’s facial expression changed dramatically and yelled. A sense of fear bloomed from the bottom of his heart.

Chapter 1035 - The Wholesale Slaughter

Second Guardian was absolutely shocked. Though he had expected that Jiang Chen would be stronger than the day before, Jiang Chen's growth had exceeded his imagination. Jiang Chen just used one single blow to pulverize his mighty attack. What was scarier was that the attack was so powerful he felt an incomparable pressure from it.

"I'd like to see how strong you really are."

His expression turned ruthless as he raised his energy to his maximum capacity. Without a doubt, he was pushing his capabilities to the limit. Infinite energy was spewing out like turbulent storm into the large folding fan. Then, he swiped at the direction of Jiang Chen's sword light.

"Your attack is very strong but too bad, you aren't my opponent."

Jiang Chen didn't even give Second Guardian a chance. He slashed again before his first slash collided with Second Guardian's attack. With the Heavenly Saint Sword returning to its peak, a casual slash was irresistible.

Hua La...

Countless of sword light wove into a sword web, enshrouding the area around. Fortunately, these two experts created a new battlefield. Otherwise, the collision of their strikes would harm many people.

Hong Long...

The sword web collided with the large folding fan once more. The boundless void was instantly broken, creating a large hole in the sky. Second Guardian couldn't bear Jiang Chen's attack and was sent flying away by the impact; his face became deathly pale.

Buzz...

Jiang Chen's sword rippled extremely as it caught up to Second Guardian with a blink. Feeling helpless, Second Guardian could only raise his large folding fan to block the attack.

Chi La!

Then, after Jiang Chen had instilled all his energy into the sword, the true form of the sword materialized as he slashed it. With a sound of 'Chi La', the large folding fan was torn apart into half by the sword. Second Guardian received a great backlash, causing him to spurt mouthfuls of blood.

"No way, not possible!"

Second Guardian looked at the halved folding fan in horror; he was extremely shocked. He could hardly imagine that this happened. How could he totally be defeated by a mere Seventh Grade Great Saint? More importantly, his folding fan was made of the finest material. It was his indestructible and invincible Natal Weapon! It made his heart bleed when it was damaged by Jiang Chen.

"Good!"

The experts in Gu Palace's side cheered. Witnessing that not even the mighty Second Guardian was Jiang Chen's opponent, they became so excited they jumped up and down. This had allowed them to see hope. All along, Desolate Palace had always been very strong because no one could match them. Today, however, Jiang Chen had turned the tide around all by himself. It was something which they didn't even dare dream of.

"How could this happen? What kind of monster is this Jiang Chen? Why is he so talented? He is just a Seventh Grade Great Saint but not even Second Guardian could defeat him. Doesn't that mean that no one else on our side could suppress him?"

"He is too horrifying. I now regret not getting rid of this lion when I had the chance to. His existence has really dealt a huge

blow to us.”

“Damn! If Second Guardian is defeated, how are we supposed to continue fighting? Will Jiang Chen defeat all of our army? That will be very shameful.”

.....

The atmosphere in Desolate camp was turning tense. With so many formidable experts, they were supposed to be the super powerful major power that could eliminate any other major power that blocked their way. But now, all of these experts were looking dispirited.

Initially, they planned to get rid of the three palaces today as a way of returning the favor to Jiang Chen. Alas! Jiang Chen had prepared for this day in advance by deploying the Five Elemental Tisura Formation that blocked their attacks. Now, while facing Jiang Chen, none of them had the faith that they could win this war despite their number.

“Second Guardian, try telling me which side is to be slaughtered today,” said Jiang Chen indifferently.

“Jiang Chen, I admit that you are a lot stronger than I am, but don’t get all over of yourself. The forces of Desolate Palace is beyond your imagination. With all your allies hiding behind a grand formation, don’t think that you can fight against so many half-step Human Immortals of our camp all by yourself,” said Second Guardian sternly.

He had never suffered such a severe blow from his opponents before. He felt extremely humiliated right now. Therefore, he had to kill Jiang Chen by hook or crook today to dispel the humiliating defeat inflicted upon him.

That wasn’t the only reason to eliminate Jiang Chen. He could deeply feel a sense of tremendous threat from him. A threat that could hurt the entire Desolate Palace. This man’s growth was too

fast. If he were to be allowed to continue growing, Second Guardian was afraid that not even Big Guardian could suppress him.

“Is that so? I can kill you right this instant if I want to. But, I’ll give you all a chance to combine your strength to fight me. I would like to see whether you all will be a worthy opponent by teaming up.”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms in front his chest, with a face full of confidence. He was eager to see all of them teaming up against him, because only in this way could he kill all of them together without letting anyone slipping away.

In the history of Jiang Chen’s battles, it was proven that quantity would not take him down. This was why he gave them a chance to team up. And of course, to leave none of them alive. If he were to attack them one after the other, many of them would flee before he went after them.

“Presumptuous! We will make you regret your arrogance! All guardians, half-step Human Immortals and Ninth Grade Great Saints, surround Jiang Chen and seal this entire void.” Second Guardian commanded while keeping away his tattered folding fan.

Hua La...

As soon as Second Guardian’s voice faded, the experts in Desolate army began to bustle around. There was a total of 16 half-step Human Immortal experts, four of which came from Desolate Palace. Adding the 10 remaining guardians, there was a total of 26 half-step Human Immortals in the team.

In addition, with all five palaces combined, there were a few dozens of Ninth Grade Great Saints. There was also a large group of Eighth Grade Great Saint geniuses nurtured by Desolate Palace that was equivalent to Ninth Grade Great Saints in term of combat strength. So in total, there were more than a hundred of them after including the half-step Human Immortals.

This was the first time the onlookers had seen such a large and overwhelming army in Saint Origin World. It was also the first time in the history that so many powerful experts were facing only one enemy. Jiang Chen's name would be recorded in the history regardless of whether he would win the battle or not.

A massive battlefield was created when over a hundred of them came together. Jiang Chen was tightly besieged by them at the center.

Hiss!

The three palaces couldn't help gasping for air. They were astonished by the scene they saw for the first time.

Furthermore, everyone started worrying for Jiang Chen. With over a hundred of experts combined to deal with a Seventh Grade Great Saint, how could Jiang Chen possibly stay alive after these experts attack? No matter how heaven defying he was, one should know that two fists were always weaker than four feet. Even if Jiang Chen could survive through their attacks, he would be worn out and die of extreme exhaustion.

"Jiang Chen is being so careless. How can he allow them to combine their forces? This is going to be a very tough battle."

"That's right. With such enormous group, I'm afraid Jiang Chen won't stand a chance against them no matter how powerful he may be."

.....

All the experts of the three palaces had gotten very worried. Many half-step Human Immortals readied themselves in case Jiang Chen needed assistance. Although they weren't so numerous, they had to try helping Jiang Chen as much as they could instead of letting him handle all of the enemies alone.

"Don't panic, everyone. Little Chen is strong enough to deal with them alone. He had encountered a situation like this, and the

enemy died tragically in the end. If you all go into the battlefield now, I'm afraid not only that won't help Little Chen, it will also become a burden and distraction to him." Tyrant warned them hastily.

He knew too well about Jiang Chen's capability. The current scene was exactly the same scene when they fought Nan Bei Chao in Nebula Sect. He knew Jiang Chen had a wide-range skill named Eternal Immortal Wind that could cause a disaster to the enemy. If these experts interfered, he wouldn't be able to use this storm that came all the way from Immortal World to avoid killing them, which would make the whole situation worse.

After listening to Tyrant's words, those unsettled half-step Human Immortals stopped in their tracks. Although they didn't know what means Jiang Chen would use to deal with those formidable experts, they wouldn't doubt Tyrant's words. They believed that the brother of Jiang Chen would never harm him.

In the battlefield, intense pressure was all over the sky, crushing some parts of the void even before the battle began. No doubt, the present scene was very similar to the scene in Nebula Sect, but the difference of power between the two scenes was incomparable.

"Well, well, well. It seems like you all are ready to die. In that case, I will fulfil your wishes. No one is allowed to leave alive, all of you have to die."

Jiang Chen's cold eyes swept across the enemy around him. His eyes showed that all of them were worthless in front of him, like the God of Death disdaining all the beings of the world.

"Jiang Chen, quit showing us your arrogance! I will see how you are going to resist against so many of us. Don't waste time anymore. Everyone, attack!" Second Guardian yelled.

"Five Elemental Power Spheres."

Jiang Chen moved, casting the Five Elemental Power Spheres.

Before the massacre, he needed to integrate the battlefield with his domain so that none of them would be able to leave alive.

Chapter 1036 - The Unilateral Massacre

Releasing the Five Elemental Spheres was equivalent to the doomsday of all the experts. It was also a sign that a bloody massacre was about to occur. Every expert in the scene was destined to become the prey of Jiang Chen.

The invisible domain spread out like a tidal wave up to a hundred miles wide, fusing perfectly with the battlefield. Now, the battlefield had become Jiang Chen's domain and vice versa. Feeling the incredible binding force of the domain made their faces darkened.

Each and every one of the mighty half-step Human Immortals and Ninth Grade Great Saints had their own domain. They had also used their domain against their opponent in battles, so they knew very well the force of the domain which made them ignore Jiang Chen's domain at the very beginning. In their point of view, if they unleashed all of their domain at the same time, Jiang Chen's domain would be crushed instantly.

However, the fact wasn't the same as what they expected. The power of the Five Elemental Power Spheres astonished them. None of them would've thought that Jiang Chen's domain had reached such a horrifying extent.

"This is the power of domain. My god! It is a domain that has the five elements, reinforcing and restraining each other. How can this be possible?"

"No, this is totally impossible. There shouldn't be such a powerful domain under the Heavens. How could a man possess a domain equipped with five different elements? I have only seen a man who possessed a domain equipped with two elements. Where did this monstrous genius come from? Could he be an Immortal who descended into our world?"

"That's too scary. Five different domains combined into one. I

can sense the unpleasant binding force and pressure.”

.....

Everyone within the Five Elemental Domain couldn't maintain their calmness. This group of more than a hundred experts panicked for the first time, they had never seen such a scary domain before in their life.

“Don't panic, everyone! We will kill him together. We will break apart his domain. I don't believe that his sole strength can deal with so many of us.”

Second Guardian raved. The stronger Jiang Chen became, the more uncomfortable he was. When a genius like him met a genius who was better than him, he wouldn't be able to settle his emotions down due to overwhelming envy. Plus, he also hated Jiang Chen to the core.

Whoosh!

A pair of brilliant Flaming Wings appeared at the back of Jiang Chen. With a casual flutter of the wings, he slowly floated in the air, like an illusion that could disappear at any second. Without waiting for the hundreds of experts to attack, Jiang Chen made his move.

“Eternal Immortal Wind!”

This powerful storm was skill with a wide range of attack. Anyone who fell into the range of his domain wouldn't be able to avoid the attack, unless they had a stronger technique that could counter this attack, but this Immortal wind wasn't a skill that could be countered easily.

There were experts of Desolate Palace, Narang Palace, Shi Palace, Huo Palace and Dan Palace. Each and every one of them was Jiang Chen's enemy. As such, he wouldn't show any of them quarters.

*Hu... *Hu...*

Strong winds howled. For a moment, the strong gale swept across the battlefield. A storm with the shape of a dragon was everywhere in the battlefield, carrying a wild and destructive force.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Almost at the exact moment that the Eternal Immortal Wind gusted out, wails started to fill the air. Some of the Ninth Grade Great Saint elders rushed into the center of the storm, but they couldn't bear the force of the wind at all. Instantly, they were blown into ashes and died within the domain.

There were one, two, three, five ...

In the blink of an eye, a total of twenty to thirty Ninth Grade Great Saints had fallen. A scene like this was simply so astounding. Putting aside the experts who were currently in the battlefield, none of the onlookers outside could stay calm while watching the battle. One should know that those were mighty Ninth Grade Great Saints, but they were killed like ants in the storm. It was too scary.

“That's a very terrifying storm that contained a hint of Immortal Qi. Everyone, be careful! This is a storm of destruction!”

“Everybody, we will defend against this storm together!”

“No! This storm is too strong for us. It will consume tremendous amount of our energy just to stop this storm. Besides, some Ninth Grade Great Saints had already died in the process. All Eighth Grade Great Saints and Ninth Grade Great Saints, retreat now!”

.....

Everyone was in a panic. Some half-step Human Immortal experts were hustling the Eighth Grade and Ninth Grade experts to leave the battlefield immediately, around twenty Ninth Grade Great Saints had already died. It was too dangerous for them. If this situation continued, they were sure that all the Ninth Grade

Great Saints would die, including those Eighth Grade Great Saint geniuses secretly trained by Desolate Palace, which would make them suffer a great loss. One should know that nurturing every one of these geniuses required a great deal of effort and resources. Therefore, losing any one of them was equivalent to losing a great amount of resources.

“Haha! It’s too late to retreat now. As I’ve said before, everyone who entered this battlefield would have to die. None of you should be kept alive.”

Jiang Chen burst into a wicked laughter. The gale of Eternal Immortal Wind rushed out of his body and blew madly into the battlefield. This was an attack that could move in all directions. None of his enemies would be spared from this deadly attack.

“My god! What am I seeing? Is there something blurry in front of my eyes? Or am I dreaming right now?”

“What kind of skill is that? It’s too heaven defying. Those formidable Ninth Grade Great Saints died just like that. Not even their remains was left on the scene.”

“That’s awesomely ferocious! Our Bin Palace has made the wisest decision.”

.....

On the side of Gu Palace, a lot of them were gaping at the scene. Even those half-step Human Immortals were shocked, they had never seen such a horrifying technique that could kill Ninth Grade Great Saints like slaughtering chickens. They couldn’t help but think when did Ninth Grade Great Saints become so vulnerable and weak?

Bin Palace was indeed the luckiest palace of all. If it wasn’t for Bin Changxiao making a quick decision to erase the grudge that they had against Jiang Chen and unite with Gu and Demon Palace, they would’ve probably surrendered to Desolate Palace like the

other four major palaces. Even with their Eighth, Ninth Grade and half-step Human Immortal experts joining the battlefield, it wouldn't make any difference at all. They would still face one inescapable outcome – death.

On the battlefield, the storm was still raging wildly. Wails and screams were incessant as Ninth Grade experts kept falling continuously. After hearing the warning of the half-step Human Immortals, many of the Ninth Grade experts started to flee from the battlefield hastily, but they were horrified to find that the Five Elemental Power Spheres had already turned into a cell, preventing them from getting out.

“Not good, the domain is too strong. We are all imprisoned by this domain.”

Someone yelled.

“A few of you half-step Human Immortals stay here to rip open the domain. The rest of you follow me to eliminate Jiang Chen.”

After gaining a better understanding of the situation, Second Guardian immediately executed the best solution for this battle. In an instant, four half-step Human Immortals came together to break open Jiang Chen's domain, whereas the other half-step Human Immortals held their Combat Weapons, launching their attacks on Jiang Chen.

Whoosh!

With a flutter of his Flaming Wings and Spatial Shift, Jiang Chen vanished all of a sudden. He slipped out from the raging attacks, like a fish in the water. With so many half-step Human Immortals attacking at the same time, he naturally wouldn't face them head-on like an idiot. He wouldn't be able to withstand it despite his strength.

The combination of the Flaming Wings and Spatial Shift allowed him to escape from the range of the attack. Plus, those half-step

Human Immortal had to pay a portion of their attention to defend against the Eternal Immortal Wind, which made their attacks not as powerful as before.

After slipping out from the attack, he appeared before the four half-step Human Immortals who were about to rip open his domain.

The Heavenly Saint Sword materialized in his hands and was slashed at one of the experts.

“Argh.....”

The half-step Human Immortal had almost no room to resist. He was killed and hurled into Jiang Chen’s Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The other three regained their senses, but how could their reaction match with Jiang Chen’s?

With successive slashes, three half-step Human Immortals had fallen. This was simply a unilateral massacre. With the strength of a peak Seventh Grade Great Saint, plus the tenfold increase of his combat strength, these half-step Human Immortals were no match for him.

The corpses of the three experts were also kept in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Then, he locked onto the nearest half-step Human Immortal. His sword rippled out, killing his opponent instantly. As for those Ninth Grade and Eighth Grade geniuses, he didn’t even put them in his eyes. They were left with only one fate, death. They would die under the Eternal Immortal Wind even without Jiang Chen’s interference.

What Jiang Chen needed to do now was to destroy those half-step Human Immortals one after another, to prevent them from ripping off his domain.

The Five Elemental Power Spheres was constantly circulated by him, which made it very hard for one to break his domain. Also, with the use of his Great Soul Derivation Technique, he could

detect any unusual activity inside his domain clearly.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

As soon as one wail fell, another wail was heard. The army of over a hundred experts was decreasing at a sharp rate. Experts were falling one after another. Putting aside the Ninth Grade Great Saints, those half-step Human Immortal were dying incessantly in the hands of Jiang Chen. There was nothing that they could do, even if they joined together as a team. The outcome of the war seemed to be approaching its conclusion. Like what Second Guardian said, today was destined to be the bloodiest one-sided massacre in the history of Saint Origin World, but he failed to predict that Jiang Chen would be the one to massacre them instead.

“This isn’t possible. How could this happen?”

The experts of the five palaces had deathly-grey look on their faces, especially the experts of Desolate Palace, they were supposed to rule the entire Saint Origin World, but now, many of their powerful experts had died under the hands of Jiang Chen. This kind of loss was unthinkable. They were afraid that even those Human Immortal old ancestors in Desolate Palace would cough up blood due to extreme anger.

Chapter 1037 - Successive Deaths of the Guardians

That was scary, that was too scary!

The whole scene had turned bloody. Of the thousands experts in Saint Origin Palace, each and every one of them had fright painted all over their faces. That kind of killings and deaths could be described as earth-shattering. It wasn't about the quantity of the dead bodies. It was about the importance of the ones who were killed.

Those dead ones were half-step Human Immortals. They were the peak experts in the pyramid of cultivation, the godlike figure in countless of hearts. Now, all of them were dying so quickly one after another. Nobody would dream of or even dare to imagine such a scene.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Miserable wails were still sounding continuously. The experts in the Desolate army were getting lesser and lesser. The overall combat strength they had was weakening. This was a vicious effect that would also weaken their confidence. By now, even the proud and mighty Second Guardian was afraid of Jiang Chen, and had virtually lost all his battle spirit. Everyone could see the situation clearly that if the fight continued, they would only end in one result—death. All of them would die and none of them would survive.

“How could this happen? HOW COULD THIS HAPPEN?!”

Second Guardian's eyes turned red. Lines of red veins appeared in his eyes. The present situation was completely different from what he had imagined. He couldn't imagine why so many of supreme experts couldn't even handle Jiang Chen. Besides Jiang Chen's Flaming Wings that made him very powerful, his domain

also restricted their movements. Even their combined attacks couldn't make an impact on Jiang Chen. It was because he moved like a ghostly illusion in the battlefield, making all kinds of abrupt attacks that caused their experts to die tragically and continuously.

As for the Ninth Grade Great Saints, the Eternal Immortal Wind was enough to rip them apart, making them a group of useless army in the battlefield.

“Second Brother! We can't hold it any longer. This man is too strong! Quickly inform Old Ancestor, or else all of us will die!” A guardian shouted at Second Guardian alarmingly, knowing that those Human Immortal old ancestors were all in the deep layer of spatial zone, totally ignoring any matters outside.

This was because all of them were too confident. In their point of view, if such a large army couldn't even get rid of Gu Palace, they would be worse than the minorities. So to them, such circumstance was impossible to occur. In fact, they had already concluded the outcome of the war. That was why they weren't even concerned of the battle for the slightest bit.

But the truth wasn't going according to their wishes. It was the direct opposite of their concluded outcome. If they were seeing the scene now, they would be enraged and would kill Jiang Chen at all costs. For so long Desolate Palace had been established, they had never suffered such a heavy blow and loss.

“Alright. I will send out the Signaling Talisman to tell Old Ancestor or Big Brother to come aid us,” said Second Guardian.

He was a man with absolute pride. His level of confidence had never diminished by half, but today, all his confidence had been shattered by Jiang Chen. Now, he had no choice but to bring in Old Ancestor. Although this was a great insult to him and this insult would be with him for a lifetime, making him not able to raise his head for the rest of his life, his honor was nothing compared to the future of Desolate Palace. He could never watch all the experts who

were produced by Desolate Palace using so much of resources dying here, because that would be an incalculable loss.

Second Guardian turned over his palm and a dazzling golden talisman appeared. But before he could use it to send a message, a hand had seized it away from his palm. It wasn't someone else's hand, it was Jiang Chen's hand.

"Bastard! Give the talisman back to me!" Second Guardian roared and spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Jiang Chen was just like a fish in a pool of water. He could appear anywhere at any time. Before Second Guardian decided to take out the talisman, he was sure that Jiang Chen was still dealing with a half-step Human Immortal. He never thought that the talisman would be taken away by Jiang Chen mercilessly right after he took it out.

"Humph! Second Guardian, you will die for sure today. Even if your Old Ancestors come, don't think about him saving your lives. In this domain, I am the absolute master and you all are destined to be the target of my domination."

Jiang Chen sounded rough and harsh, totally not putting Second Guardian in his eyes. Like he said, he was the unrivalled master in his own domain. It was without a doubt a wishful thinking to send a distress message using the Signaling Talisman. Jiang Chen would never allow the news here to be spread to Desolate Palace.

Jiang Chen was clever enough to observe that the Old Ancestors of Desolate Palace hadn't interfered in their war yet despite the bad situation the Desolate experts were in right now. This told that the Old Ancestors were very confident in Second Guardian and the other experts, so confident that they didn't even pay attention to the battle status. In that case, Jiang Chen would make sure Desolate Palace pay the heaviest price for what they did.

If it was a common Signaling Talisman, Jiang Chen might not care about it at all because within his domain, no messages could

be transmitted out. The Signaling Talisman that Second Guardian was holding, however, was crafted by Immortals. So, Jiang Chen wasn't sure if the message could not travel out of his domain.

The most powerful level Jiang Chen had achieved in his previous life was at the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint. Due to the restriction of the law of the world, there wasn't a single half-step Human Immortal across the Saint Origin World in the past. Therefore, he didn't understand any of the things related to Immortal realm, which made him not dare to take a chance on it.

“Son of a b*tch! I'm going to fight you to death!” Third Guardian roared, but there was a hint of despair in it.

Now that they had lost the chance to signal the Old Ancestors, they could only wait for Jiang Chen to slaughter them at any time. Although Third Guardian had higher cultivation base, he was the grumpiest among the thirteen guardians. Immediately, he lunged at Jiang Chen frenziedly with his combat weapon.

“Humph! Who do you think you are to fight me? Die now!”

Jiang Chen let out a humph and swiped his Heavenly Saint Sword. The aura of the dragon sword gushed out and roared like waves as it collided with Third Guardian's combat weapon. Subsequently, Third Guardian's combat weapon was sent away by the impact from the terrifying force of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Whoosh!

Jiang Chen moved too fast. His sword was swiped once more frenziedly, cutting off the head of Third Guardian. The mighty Third Guardian died instantly, he was absolutely powerless under the attack of Jiang Chen.

“Argh! Third Brother!” Eleventh Guardian cried painfully.

All the thirteen guardians were close to each other. So, naturally, they got angrier every time when their brother or sister was killed.

“Don't call for him anymore. You can die with him together.”

Jiang Chen's eyes had also turned red. From the moment he unleashed his Five Elemental Power Spheres, he had never thought of letting any of them go, particularly the twelve guardians. All of them had to die.

Whoosh!

With a flutter of his Flaming Wings, he reached Eleventh Guardian in a blink with his sword. Suddenly, a scary sword light was slashed out, turning into a sword web and enshrouding Eleventh Guardian entirely.

Hiss!

Eleventh Guardian gasped as he could sense an extremely dangerous Qi from the bottom of his heart. Only people who had fought Jiang Chen could understand his horror. Though Eleventh Guardian wanted to counterattack, it was too late for the strike was irresistible.

“Stop it, Jiang Chen!” Second Guardian bawled.

The other guardians followed Eleventh Guardian's example. Too bad, those blaring sounds were unable to save Eleventh Guardian's life.

Without caring for the fury of the other guardians, he finished Eleventh Guardian with a strike and hurled the corpse into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda after putting a seal on it.

“Stop, Jiang Chen! Do you know what you are doing? You are playing with fire!” Second Guardian shouted.

“Playing with fire? No, it's you Desolate Palace who has been playing with fire and the fire has gotten out of control, causing it to burn your people.”

Jiang Chen's cold eyes stared at Second Guardian. The killing intent of his body didn't subside by the least bit.

“Jiang Chen, let me tell you this. The forces of our palace is

beyond your imagination. What you are doing now is ending the path of your future. You certainly will regret it. So I urge you to stop what you are doing at once and I promise that you will stay alive,” said Second Guardian.

“I know all about your forces. Today, I will finish every one of you. In the coming days, I will finish all of your Human Immortals, ending the existence of Desolate Palace entirely.”

After finishing his sentence, he swiped out the Heavenly Saint Sword once more at the direction of the other guardians. As for Second Guardian, he would leave him as the last prey. He wanted Second Guardian to see with his own eyes how he destroyed all of them one after another. He wanted him to know how ridiculous the plan of Desolate Palace was in front of him.

“What? You knew about the Human Immortals in our palace?”

Second Guardian felt truly shocked this time. No one would know about the existence of Human Immortals in their palace as they had never disclosed any of such information to the public. So, Jiang Chen shouldn’t have known about this big secret.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Jiang Chen did not care about the doubts that was spinning in Second Guardian’s mind now. He continued with his frenzied killings again. The remaining guardians were falling one after another under his sword. In just a few minutes’ time, every remaining guardian died bitterly except Second Guardian. The current scene was driving Second Guardian mad.

Desolate Palace had spent so much of efforts and resources just to nurture the thirteen of them. The hundred-year-old plan was now destroyed by Jiang Chen. Besides, almost all the thirteen guardians had fallen not long after they had been sent to war. This was a loss too great for Desolate Palace to bear.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

The Ninth Grade Great Saints were dying continuously and turned into mists of blood as they couldn't bear the attack of the Eternal Immortal Wind. Up until now, only 20 to 30 were left in the team. More than half of the half-step Human Immortals had died, leaving only a few of them who were in the state of total despair. In their eyes, Jiang Chen was a scary and frenzied devil.

“It's over. It's totally over. We are finished this time. No one will be able to save us from this terrifying monster.”

“I didn't imagine I will die like this. I didn't think I would die in the hands of a Seventh Grade Great Saint. This is so depressing...”

.....

The situation had almost reached its conclusion. The Desolate army was doomed to fall.

Chapter 1038 - The Formidable Big Guardian

Everyone was fascinated by the chaotic battlefield above the sky that looked like an illusory landscape, but no one dared to believe this. Even the three excited palaces couldn't believe what was happening in front them. It was as if they were dreaming.

The outcome was reversed by Jiang Chen just like that. One man, reversing the situation was undeniably shocking. Many powerful experts had fallen; and each and every one of those experts was strong enough to massacre the army in Gu Palace. However, these peak existences were killed by Jiang Chen so easily, like slaughtering dogs.

“He is a gifted genius indeed. Befriending him was really a wise choice for our us. Or else, it would be very likely for us to be fighting against him now in the battlefield.

“There are always things that are incomprehensible in this world. Some people can't be judged and measured using common sense. Jiang Chen's existence is truly a miracle to the world.”

“After suffering such huge losses, Narang and the other palaces will exist in name only. As for Desolate Palace, their army has suffered serious casualties. However, it's too early for us to celebrate now. Jiang Chen is merely a Seventh Grade Great Saint, afterall. There are still very powerful Human Immortal experts behind Desolate Palace. That kind of level is way beyond our imagination, and once they decided to strike, it is difficult to imagine how devastating the outcome will be.”

.....

The people of the three palaces were exclaiming in surprise, especially the people of Bin Palace. Their grateful pair of eyes fell upon Bin Changxiao. If it hadn't been for their palace master's

decision to join Gu Palace, they would be the same as Narang Palace right now. Once they stood against Jiang Chen, they would've face an unimaginable repercussion.

At this time, a golden silhouette rushed out from the interior of Gu Palace. That silhouette was Big Yellow's. When Jiang Chen left Saint Cliff, he was still refining the energy he consumed. He rushed over to Gu Palace as soon as he finished. When he saw the situation of the battlefield, he became extremely excited.

"Haha! This dude is truly abnormal. It seems like Desolate Palace is going to fall soon. Those guardians should've been eliminated by Little Chen by now." Big Yellow laughed loudly and said.

Numerous gazes fell on him. After noticing Big Yellow's cultivation, they couldn't help rolling their eyes, admitting that there were too many abnormal beings in this world. Putting Jiang Chen aside, Big Yellow had the biggest progress. In just a day's time, he managed to push his cultivation base to the peak of Eighth Grade Great Saint.

"Dang! What kind of boosting pill did this damn dog ate? How can you advance so rapidly?" Tyrant said dejectedly.

"You are right. Master Dog has really eaten some kind of boosting pills, lots of them too. Do you envy me right now? So, do you want some of my poop? I haven't digested all of them anyway." Big Yellow said brazenly to Tyrant.

"F*ck you!"

Without saying another word, Tyrant sent a slap at the dog's head. Big Yellow's words could even provoke a very patient man. Plus, Tyrant wasn't a patient man.

"Argh..." "Argh..."

After a short pause, Jiang Chen launched a frenzied carnage again. Shrill wails sounded from the battlefield as the brutality started once more. His main focus was on those half-step Human

Immortals, causing the remaining few of them to start falling successively. None of them were able to break open Jiang Chen's domain, which left them no other choice but to face Jiang Chen head-on, ending up dead ultimately.

Soon, all the half-step Human Immortals died in his hands tragically. Now, the whole battlefield was left with some ninth and eighth grade geniuses, struggling to defend against the Eternal Immortal Wind; and Second Guardian, who looked deathly pale, stood across Jiang Chen.

It was over. Everything was over and everyone was dead. All of the half-step Human Immortals from the five major palaces had fallen, including the eleven guardians. None of them were alive. They died in the hands of Jiang Chen. It was like the peak existences on the pyramid of the cultivation world had been sliced off and replaced by Jiang Chen, giving him eternal fame in the history of Saint Origin World.

This was ruthless! Truly ruthless! All the higher ups of the five palaces were killed mercilessly, which dealt an unimaginable blow to the five major palaces.

"Second Guardian, do you have anything else to say now?" Jiang Chen looked at Second Guardian and asked.

"Jiang Chen, you will die miserably for sure. No one from the three remaining palaces will live, the true disaster is coming to you all soon! No quarters shall be given to you for the things you have done," said Second Guardian through gritted teeth.

He knew that his death was already certain if there were no accidents. He felt as if his heart had sunk to the bottom of the valley. It was his first time to see a man who was so ruthless and ferocious.

"My fate isn't decided by you, but your fate has already fallen into my hands. If I want you dead, you would be dead by now." Jiang Chen said in an extremely cold tone.

Hong Long...

Just after Jiang Chen's voice faded, a powerful Qi had suddenly exploded from the direction of Desolate Palace, like a thunderbolt, ripping apart the void, creating a large hole in the sky. Later, a youth in black robe carrying boundless of Qi waves materialized above the battlefield in a blink.

He was a majestic-looking man that seemed to be around 30 years old. Although he didn't look very handsome, it was still better than average. His physique was as robust as Heavenly Peng King, but his cultivation base was incomparable to Heavenly Peng King. He had the eyes that glinted unusual colors. From top to bottom, his body was filled with a powerful Qi. He might look very young but his cultivation has already reached a terrifying level—half-step Human Immortal. No ordinary expert of the same level could be compared to him. He was the real genius and expert.

This black-clothed man had attracted everyone's attention the moment he appeared. Then, two words popped out in their head—Big Guardian!

“Save me, Big Brother!”

When Second Guardian saw the black-clothed man, he shouted with effort, especially when he sensed Big Guardian's half-step Human Immortal cultivation base, as though he had found the savior of the day.

There was no doubt about it, this black-clothed man was Big Guardian—the scariest figure in Desolate Palace. Jiang Chen's eyes turned solemn the moment he saw Big Guardian.

“This man is incomparably strong. Unless I advance to Eighth Grade Great Saint, I definitely won't be a match for him. His combat power is far stronger than ordinary half-step Human Immortals, and is almost equivalent to a Human Immortal. Although he isn't as powerful as a true Human Immortal, I'm still not strong enough to fight him,” said Jiang Chen in his heart,

admitting that Big Guardian was very strong, so strong that he was nearly on par with a Human Immortal.

Anyhow, there was still a gap between him and a true Immortal, Human Immortals were beings that had exceeded the scope of the Mortal realm, afterall.

Therefore, Big Guardian wasn't an opponent whom Jiang Chen could fight. Without advancing to Eighth Grade Great Saint... actually, even if he reached the peak of Eighth Grade Great Saint, he would probably be not strong enough to be Big Guardian's opponent.

When Big Guardian saw the battlefield, he smelled the bloody stench in the air and sensed the Qi of those who had fallen, rage surged inside of him.

“What HAPPENED?!” Big Guardian bellowed.

“Big Brother, all of them died, except for me and a few higher ups of Desolate Palace. They were all killed by Jiang Chen.”

Second Guardian cried, still shuddering at the thought of the previous killings.

*Hong...

As soon as this remark faded, a strong wave of Qi rushed out of Big Guardian's body. His eyes locked onto Jiang Chen, like a poisonous serpent. Besides anger, he also felt astonished, Jiang Chen was merely a Seventh Grade Great Saint. It was difficult for him to imagine that a Seventh Grade Great Saint could do all of these by himself. He had never seen Jiang Chen before and had never heard of such a monstrous genius in Saint Origin World. Jiang Chen was so monstrous that he feel slightly inferior.

“What now? This man is so powerful. I'm afraid Jiang Chen isn't his opponent.”

“Ai! Desolate Palace is too strong. It is absolutely impossible to bring them down. Too bad, we can't provide any aid to Jiang Chen

confronting a supreme being like Big Guardian. Jiang Chen would just have to rely on himself in this battle.”

“I wonder if Jiang Chen can continue to work wonders.”

.....

The experts of the three palaces began to worry about their fates, the expert of Desolate Palace was getting stronger every time. At any rate, all they could now was to rely on Jiang Chen. Despite the overwhelming strength of their enemy, they had inexplicable confidence in Jiang Chen, strongly believing that Jiang Chen could create another miracle and deal with this new opponent.

“You f*cking beast! You dare kill so many of my people?! I will surely catch you and make you suffer an endless torture before death,” said Big Guardian, raging. Without saying another word, he struck out his palm at Jiang Chen’s direction.

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen started to have difficulty breathing, the pressure that was as heavy as a mountain was heading towards him. Lines of cracks appeared on the surface of his Five Elemental Spheres. Without delay, he immediately kept his domain, because if his domain was broken, he would receive a great backlash.

Wah... *Wah...*

The remaining ninth and eighth grade geniuses were freed once the domain vanished; however, all of them suffered serious injuries and spurted out blood. Second Guardian, on the other hand, wasn’t as lucky.

Chapter 1039 - The Hot-Blooded Brotherhood

Jiang Chen would never let Second Guardian flee even if Big Guardian or the Human Immortal old ancestors had interfered in the battle. He would never allow anyone to save Second Guardian out from his hands.

Second Guardian was firmly captured by Jiang Chen's large dragon claw before he had any time to escape. No matter how hard he struggled, he couldn't break free from the dragon-claw-cell.

"Jiang Chen, let me go at this instant!" Second Guardian clamored.

"Do you think that there's such a possibility I would even consider that?"

A cruel smile was revealed at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. It had never been his style to release his enemy.

"You are Jiang Chen? You'll die for sure today. Not just you, but also all the three palaces; none of them will survive. If you let Second Guardian go, I will grant you a quick and painless death. If you refuse, I suppose you can imagine it yourself," said Big Guardian overbearingly. His face looked as composed as ever, the distinctive quality of a powerful cultivator.

"This is the tone that the people of Desolate Palace always use, always... But, fortunately, all the people who used such tone ended tragically. The same will happen to you, as anyone who opposes me will only end up in one outcome—death."

Jiang Chen looked completely indifferent. As soon as his voice dropped, he killed Second Guardian in front of Big Guardian by crushing the skull.

Hong...

A torrent of anger suddenly surged out of Big Guardian's body, he was completely infuriated this time. He could get over with Jiang Chen killing so many of his people because he was absent during that time, but killing Second Guardian in front of him was undoubtedly the biggest provocation from a Seventh Grade Great Saint, a puny seventh grade was nobody to him! To him, it was a total disgrace when a weaker nobody underestimated him.

In any case, he must eliminate Jiang Chen by any means necessary to restore his and Desolate Palace's dignity, and also avenge the murder of those who were killed.

"Very well, Jiang Chen. You are the most frenzied person I have ever seen. Due to my advancement to half-step Human Immortal, I arrived a little too late, causing an inestimable huge loss for Desolate Palace. Today, I will make you and the three palaces pay for the losses we have suffered!"

"Haha! You people of Desolate Palace are always talking nonsense. Attack now if you dare! Enlighten me about your powerful techniques and how strong the legendary Big Guardian actually is." Jiang Chen said.

His entire body was filled with combat intent. The True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire raged out rapidly, forming a sea of fire. He had never known fear even if he was confronting the powerful Big Guardian.

"This Big Guardian is too powerful. I'm afraid Little Chen is no match for him." Tyrant said worriedly.

"Have trust in him. I feel that Little Chen has ways to face him." Although Han Yan said so, he couldn't conceal the worries on his face.

"Good, I will now send you to heaven!"

Big Guardian attacked. His scary palm suddenly turned into a giant fan slamming downwards, crushing the void in a hundred

miles area. Many onlookers shivered when they sensed its horrifying pressure despite being outside of the battlefield.

Facing such an incredible attack, Jiang Chen's face turned grim. There was no way he couldn't take this seriously because the gap between him and Big Guardian was too great.

"I'd like to see how strong the half-step Human Immortal Big Guardian can actually be. Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal!"

Jiang Chen burst out the mighty Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal with all his might. A dozen of dragons with different attributes let out earth-shaking roar as they charged forth at Big Guardian.

Hong Long...

The collision shook the sky and land. Colorful radiance covered all over the sky as all the dragons struck out by Jiang Chen were destroyed by Big Guardian's strike. There was no doubt that the half-step Human Immortal Big Guardian was more than an opponent Jiang Chen could handle.

After the combat dragons were pulverized, the powerful palm strike continued to slam down against Jiang Chen. Despite how helpless he felt, he immediately stepped out the Azure Dragon Five Steps, colliding with the oncoming palm strike heavily. This time, he was thrown a dozen miles away.

Barf! *Barf!* *Barf!*

He suffered a severe injury and spurted out three big mouthfuls of blood. Even the dragon scales on his body cracked and blood was gushing out from his wounds. His blood and Qi began to circulate disorderly and his face looked very unpleasant.

He frowned thinking that this was probably the most serious injury he had ever suffered. It had directly affected even his combat strength. Fortunately, he had the regenerative power of the wood essence and dragon transformation skill that allowed

him to heal his injuries.

“Not good. Jiang Chen is no match for him at all. He is injured.”

“It’s over. We don’t seem to be able to help at all.”

“Damn! How could this Big Guardian be so powerful? I just hope that Jiang Chen can reverse the situation again.”

.....

Each and every one of the three palaces looked glum seeing the injured Jiang Chen, and the presence of Big Guardian suffocated them as though an invisible hammer was pressing against their hearts.

In the battlefield, Big Guardian’s sharp eyes stared at Jiang Chen with surprise.

“I really never thought that a Seventh Grade Great Saint that was as puny and weak as an ant could actually be so powerful that he could remain alive after receiving my blow. I have to admit that you really are a miracle, Jiang Chen. If you grow any further, I fear that even I can’t defeat you in the future. It’s such a pity that you don’t have the chance anymore. Today will be the day of your death. After finishing you, I will wipe out the three palaces clean,” said Big Guardian domineeringly, like a War God and the absolute, high and mighty ruler of everything.

“It seems I have to use that.”

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth while his eyes revealed a hint of ruthlessness. He summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to look at the sealed half-step Human Immortal corpses inside. Then, he raised his hand and wiped the blood stain off the corner of his mouth.

Frenzy! Men sometimes needed to go on a frenzy.

Dong!

At this moment, Big Guardian struck again. His attack this time

was more powerful than the previous one. The whole void was now filled with the Qi of destruction causing many of the onlookers to exclaim. Should this attack hit Jiang Chen, they were certain that Jiang Chen's body would be ripped into pieces.

A terrifying red palm that carried infinite killing intent materialized above Jiang Chen's head. At this time, Jiang Chen seemed as if he had become another person. He felt totally indifferent to the palm overhead.

Roar...

Suddenly, a roar rang from the interior of Gu Palace. Subsequently, a robust-looking big yellow dog rushed out to the scene. A pair of golden wings had sprouted out of his back as he moved with extreme speed and finesse. At the center of his brows was a golden dragon horn shimmering with lightning.

“Master Dog has come to fight you.”

Big Yellow could never see Jiang Chen die in the hands of Big Guardian just like that.

Above the head of Big Yellow appeared the splendid Totem Divine Seal that wrapped around his body. Then, his body began to enlarge to the height of 300 meters. Scales started to appear on the surface of his body. His skull turned into a dragon head that looked very divine. At the present moment, he was no longer a dog, he looked exactly like the ancient Dragon Horse.

“Big Yellow, get out of here!”

Jiang Chen roared hastily as he saw Big Yellow appearing above him. Why would this idiot take matters into his own hands, when he already had the means to deal with Big Guardian?

But it was already too late as Big Yellow had already rushed skywards to meet the oncoming palm strike of Big Guardian.

Roar...

Big Yellow let out an earth-shattering dragon roar. A column of incomparably brilliant light shot out from his dragon horn, hitting against the large palm.

Hong Long...

The whole scene shook. Big Yellow had burnt his bloodline and circulated the Totem Divine Seal at the critical juncture to activate his ultimate ability to defend against the powerful blow of Big Guardian. Even though he was merely a peak Eighth Grade Great Saint, his attack could be described as earth-shattering. His attack had completely pulverized the blow of Big Guardian.

Though he successfully stopped the blow of Big Guardian, he did not have a good ending. As soon as he casted this attack, his eyes closed abruptly and his huge body returned to its original size and fell from the sky.

“Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen snarled, and hurriedly caught Big Yellow’s body. He could sense Big Yellow’s Qi weakening.

“Damn you idiot! Who asked you to handle that blow? Who asked this stupid dog to handle that blow?! I can handle it myself! How would I continue with my life if something bad were to happen to you?!” Jiang Chen swore.

Tears welled up in his eyes. He could feel the weakness inside Big Yellow and knew what cost had Big Yellow paid in order to block that strike. Jiang Chen felt very regretful right now. He deeply regretted for not telling Big Yellow his plan earlier.

Chapter 1040 - The Frenzied Man

Jiang Chen was aggrieved to see Big Yellow in such condition laying there, motionless like a dead man. It was such a pity that Big Yellow couldn't hear him shouting for his name mournfully. In this instant, Jiang Chen felt as if his heart was about to be torn apart. This was the second time Big Yellow had defended him with his own life, and he knew that Big Yellow did not even hesitate or think twice before doing so.

Under normal circumstances, and given Big Yellow's wisdom, he should've been able to deduce that Jiang Chen had a contingency plan while facing such a strong enemy. But just now, Big Yellow rushed into the battlefield just to block the attack because he sensed that Jiang Chen was in grave danger. This portrayed the most brilliant side of a passionate brotherhood.

Whoosh! *Whoosh!*

Two silhouettes flew out of the Five Elemental Tisura Formation instantly. They were Han Yan and Tyrant. Both of them looked fearless even though Big Guardian was just ahead of them. Looking at Big Yellow's situation, both of their eyes turned red.

“Bastard! What are you two doing down there? Why didn't you two stop him?! When did I ever fought an uncertain battle? Do you think this stupid Big Guardian can kill me, you two damned fools?!”

Jiang Chen berated Han Yan and Tyrant severely while pumping wood essence into Big Yellow's body non-stop. At the same time, he gashed his hand allowing his blood to drip into Big Yellow's mouth.

The two of them lowered their heads and kept their silence. They could not stop Big Yellow even if they wanted to. As a matter of fact, they were also about to charged forward to block that attack for Jiang Chen.

“A truly touching brotherhood. Jiang Chen, you have lowered yourself by having a beast as your brother.” Big Guardian sneered as he gazed at the four of them.

He stopped attacking, seeing Jiang Chen suffering horrendously pleased him very much.

Hong...

Fury rushed out from their bodies simultaneously. Big Guardians words was their last straw.

Jiang Chen's eyes became red. The Qi in his body began to turn tyrannical. It was the prelude of his frenzied state.

“Big Yellow won't die. Take him back and watch over him closely. Leave the rest to me.”

Jiang Chen's tone suddenly became surprisingly dull, they couldn't detect the turbulence rising inside Jiang Chen's body as he handed Big Yellow to them. Without saying another word, they turned and returned to Gu camp.

“Jiang Chen, I have to admit that dog is very strong to withstand one of my blows. Too bad, your ending won't change. You'll still die today,” said Big Guardian, staring at Jiang Chen.

Hearing such words would certainly prompt Jiang Chen to retort, but he remained silent, he knew that further conversation was useless. What he needed to do right now was to pulverize this man by any means necessary.

The seven-story Ancestral Dragon Pagoda buzzed as it hovered in front of Jiang Chen. The dragon transformation skill was circulated to its maximum. Tremendous fury spread across every part of his limbs and organs. The pagoda began to absorb the corpses of the half-step Human Immortals.

This had been Jiang Chen's plan all along. He kept all those corpses from the beginning just in case something bad happened, however, it was a very dangerous and frenzied method. Some said

that men were required to take any risks when it came to a life-or-death situation, and this was exactly what Jiang Chen was trying to do.

During the second attack of Big Guardian, everyone thought that Jiang Chen had already given up the fight, as he just stood there like a weak man. However, he was actually prepared to face that attack using the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He was sure that the pagoda wouldn't have any problem in withstanding that blow from Big Guardian, and buy him some time to devour those corpses. Unexpectedly, Big Yellow rushed out at that moment, making Jiang Chen regret deeply for not telling him his plan beforehand.

Jiang Chen would fight with whatever he got to avenge Big Yellow. For those who harmed his brothers, they only have one fate—death.

Pa Pa...

Crackling sound was heard, as though lightning was running inside his body. His tyrannical Qi continued to rise and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda began to circulate frantically. The Eighth Level started to form gradually as large amount of blood essence was absorbed, giving Jiang Chen numerous benefits; his cultivation was rushing madly towards the Eighth Grade Great Saint.

His Qi and blood turned chaotic as his Qi continued to rise rapidly. His eyes turned blood-red, like two pools of blood. The chaotic Qi was starting to erode his mind, throwing him into a state of madness.

“What’s this brat doing? Humph! I would like to see what other means he has.”

Big Guardian frowned after noticing the changes in Jiang Chen’s body, but he didn’t interrupt him. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was as weak as an ant, and an ant had no power to cause chaos.

“Not good, something is not right with Little Chen. His mind seems to have gone wild, like being eroded by the fury caused by Big Yellow’s injury. Has his fury invaded his mind?”

Tyrant’s expression changed. He could clearly feel the increasingly turbulent Qi of Jiang Chen. He was positive that was an irrepressible killing intent, which made Jiang Chen no different than a brutal killing machine now.

“Little Chen has fallen into a very dangerous condition. If he isn’t stopped in time, he will turn into a senseless monster that only knows how to kill.”

Han Yan started to worry for his brother. They were clueless about what’s happening inside Jiang Chen’s body, but they were certain that Jiang Chen’s current condition was extremely critical.

The experts of the three palaces also felt the same way, they noticed the changes of Jiang Chen. Some of them even shivered at how horrifying Jiang Chen had become.

Roar...

Finally, Jiang Chen sent out a dragon’s roar at the sky. He had advanced to the Eighth Grade Great Saint, but the turbulent Qi was still rising, the half-step Human Immortal corpses were still being consumed and absorbed by the pagoda. His temperament started to turn brutal and his mind was now filled with only one thing, slaughtering. If it wasn’t for the Edifying Light inside his body, he was afraid that he would have completely lost his mind.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda buzzed again the moment Jiang Chen advanced to the Eighth Grade Great Saint. The Eight Level had been completely condensed and the Ninth Level was beginning to form.

Jiang Chen utilized the ability of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to forcefully advance his cultivation base. At this point in time, the

only way to quickly advance was to refine those half-step Human Immoral corpses. That was why he had kept those corpses in the first place.

However, this had turned him into a tyrannical and frenzied beast, a beast that thirsted for blood.

Nevertheless, none of this mattered. What mattered more now was to kill that bastard to avenge Big Yellow.

Chapter 1041 - Jiang Chen's Fury

No one had any clue on what was happening to Jiang Chen. In this world, only one person knew that Jiang Chen possessed the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda—Big Yellow. Big Yellow, however, was in no condition to observe the battle as he was unconscious right now.

Jiang Chen's blood was becoming more turbulent inside. Dragon marks were incessantly forming in his body, reaching a total of 95 000, a thousand more before hitting the Ninth Grade Great Saint. His combat power was also rising constantly. The blood-red Qi on top of his head suddenly turned into a column of light that had the shadow of a dragon within. It was a dragon of brutality, a dragon of massacre that didn't have a single emotion in its eyes.

Roar... *Roar...* *Roar...*

A violent roar came out from Jiang Chen that shook the land and the sky. The bloodthirsty aura began to spread across the battlefield. Big Guardian was slightly frightened, he had a feeling that the one standing in front of him was no longer the same person, and now looked like an emotionless ancient wild beast.

“Not good. I can't let him continue this growth.”

Big Guardian finally realized the seriousness of the matter. He hadn't imagined that Jiang Chen would be able to advance into the Eighth Grade Great Saint in just several breaths of time, however, Jiang Chen's cultivation continued to rise. He was sure that the consequences would be dire if he allowed Jiang Chen to continue advancing.

“Go to hell, Jiang Chen!”

Big Guardian attacked again with his scary palm. It landed heavily on Jiang Chen's body, however, it actually landed on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda instead.

Hong Long...

Strong vibration spread across the entire pagoda and Jiang Chen was sent a few dozen meters away. He spurted out a mouthful of blood and lines of cracks appeared on the surface of the pagoda, however, these cracks were repaired as soon as it appeared.

Roar... *Roar...*

Jiang Chen roared shrilly again, like an ancient dragon. The others could sense the grief in his roar. He didn't even attempt to defend against Big Guardian's attack and allowed the attack to hit him directly, letting himself bear the terrifying force.

“What the hell? Why isn't he injured?”

Big Guardian's expression changed. He cursed and sent out another attack.

Hong Long Long...

For a short period of time, Big Guardian kept on attacking Jiang Chen, sending Jiang Chen flying away eight times.

Every blow that landed on Jiang Chen's body caused him to spurt out blood, but his Qi didn't even drop the slightest bit. He soared incessantly, while his injuries were healed instantly after the blow.

After advancing to the Eighth Grade Great Saint, he was no longer comparable to his previous self. His body's recovery and the firmness of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was increased by many folds. Therefore, it would be extremely difficult for Big Guardian to kill his prey.

The current Jiang Chen looked very terrifying. It wasn't because he looked completely fine after receiving the continuous blows of Big Guardian, it was because he currently looked like a complete stranger, he literally looked like a bloodthirsty, ferocious beast. Everyone in Gu Palace was worried sick for him, they could somewhat imagine what the consequences that bloodthirsty Jiang Chen would cause.

At this moment, Big Guardian felt extremely annoyed, realizing that none of his attacks harmed Jiang Chen the slightest bit. He started to lose his composure.

“What the hell is going on with his bastard? How could this happen? His Qi is still rising, could he be advancing to the Ninth Grade Great Saint? No, I can’t let him succeed, or else, I will be doomed.”

Big Guardian swore. It was reasonable for him to feel worried now. Without delay, a large black sabre appeared in his hand. He lunged forward at Jiang Chen. He had to stop playing with fire, otherwise, he would be put into an unfavorable situation.

Hong...

Just then, the Qi inside Jiang Chen’s body burst out suddenly, as though it had been compressed for a long time. The energy from the burst was unimaginably powerful. At this time, he had finally refined all of those half-step Human Immortal corpses, the Ninth Level of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been fully condensed. He was now at the peak of Eighth Grade Great Saint, one step left to advance to the ninth grade.

However, the price Jiang Chen had to pay was too great. He was in a state of complete brutality and bloodthirst. If it wasn’t for the Edifying Light, he would have lost his mind entirely.

Dong!

The explosion of the Qi reached Big Guardian, sending him away. Jiang Chen’s chest was moving up and down, the compressed fury inside of him had reached a critical point.

Dong!

He made a tramp, stepping out a large hole in the void. At this moment, he had gone completely frenzied.

“Are you done attacking? It’s my turn now!”

Jiang Chen bellowed in a hoarse voice. It was obvious that he was struggling to control his consciousness while the bloodthirsty Qi was rolling in his body.

Roar...

He roared frenziedly, striking out with the True Dragon Palm towards Big Guardian and tore the void ahead apart,. In such a frenzied state, his combat strength had become even more powerful than before.

Big Guardian was in terror. It was ridiculous for him to feel pressured just because of Jiang Chen as he was a mighty half-step Human Immortal. He was the scariest genius of Saint Origin World. It was beyond his imagination to be intimidated by an Eighth Grade Great Saint.

Facing the mountain-like blood-red dragon claw, he slashed out his large sabre, intending to severe Jiang Chen's large dragon claw into half.

Clang!

An astonishing scene happened. The indestructible large sabre touched the huge dragon claw. However, the scene of slashing Jiang Chen's huge claw into half didn't happen. Instead, his combat weapon was grabbed by Jiang Chen firmly.

The whole scene seemed to be in slow motion. Everyone was stunned, especially Big Guardian. This move showed him the gap between him and Jiang Chen. He knew better than anyone how strong his strike was. No matter how powerful Jiang Chen was, he should've been sent flying away by the force of the sabre. But now, the sabre was caught by Jiang Chen's claw.

"You are finished."

By exerting a force on his arm, Jiang Chen seized the sabre from Big Guardian and threw it far away, as if the weapon was absolutely worthless to him.

Without having the time to react, Jiang Chen's sharp dragon clasped Big Guardian's shoulder. The razor-sharp finger pierced into his flesh; blood was gushing out from the wound.

Hiss!

Big Guardian shivered in pain, he even felt it in his innermost soul. At this moment, he finally felt a trace of fear from Jiang Chen. The bloody and brutal expression Jiang Chen had in his eyes right now didn't belong to the man he used to be. That was the eyes of a merciless creature that would kill everything.

Big Guardian couldn't help but feel terrified, he could already see the shadow of death in Jiang Chen's eyes. He could sense a strong Qi of death from his opponent.

Chapter 1042 - The Insanity of Bloodlust

The scene was frozen when the incomparably powerful Big Guardian, had fallen into the full control of Jiang Chen. He was immobile and could be torn in half at any second. The experts in the Desolate camp yelled. They could never believe that everything that happened today was real.

They were wondering if this Jiang Chen was still human. How could he be continuously creating miracles? It started from Second Guardian to Big Guardian. Every time, they saw Jiang Chen overcame his opponent, one step at a time until he succeeds in turning the tides around. How could anyone ever believe this without seeing it with their own eyes? Even those who were present thought that they were hallucinating, as if they were in their dreams.

Jiang Chen's overbearing performance made the three palaces relieved. They were now fully impressed by Jiang Chen. In their point of view, Jiang Chen was omnipotent and a person who was good at creating miracles. Ever since they started the war with Desolate Palace, he had been creating unexpected results. It was just like what the ancestor of Gu Palace predicted – Jiang Chen was the person that could change the fate of the three palaces.

Yet, none of the higher ups from the three palaces looked delighted. Every one of them was worried sick for Jiang Chen. Anyone who has a sharp eyesight could discern Jiang Chen's current condition. They were able to sense the bloodthirsty Qi was constantly eroding Jiang Chen's mind, like a wave of ferocious monsters. Once his consciousness was completely devoured by bloodlust, he would lose himself completely and turn into a killing monster; it would be a tragic end.

Putting aside the relationship they had with Jiang Chen, the fact that Jiang Chen stood up for them for so many times made him their lifesaver. Inside everyone's heart, he had occupied a supreme

position. They didn't wish to see their lifesaver sink into an uncontrollable state that would eventually lead to the destruction of the world. Given Jiang Chen's ability, they believed that it was better for him to run away from this battle and come back when his cultivation was strong enough. At that time, they believed that even the entire Desolate Palace would fall into his hands.

However, Jiang Chen didn't choose to flee. Instead, he stood in front of the three palaces, confronting the enemy on their behalf and causing the greatest and irreparable losses to Desolate Palace. To put it bluntly, the hundred-year-old plan of Desolate Palace was completely destroyed by Jiang Chen.

On the battlefield, Big Guardian had already been fully enveloped by Jiang Chen's Qi. He could clearly feel Jiang Chen's razor-sharp claws going deep into his shoulder, breaking parts of his bones. It was a pain that almost tore his soul.

"No, I, Big Guardian will never lose to an Eighth Grade Great Saint! Argh....."

Big Guardian bellowed painfully. He was reluctant to yield. At this critical moment, he forced out all of the energy inside his body. Layers of energy waves wreaked havoc on the battlefield. The destructive force of such energy was enough to destroy everything in its path.

However, all of these didn't affect Jiang Chen at all. First, it was because Jiang Chen was in a state of madness. Second, Jiang Chen's combat strength had gone far beyond the level of Big Guardian. An aura of a devil king was radiated from Jiang Chen, as his fury mingled with his Qi. Under such pressure and control, any counterattack from Big Guardian was useless. He would never be able to break free from Jiang Chen's grip.

"Listen carefully. In this world, there are some people who can't be trifled with and there are some words that should not be spoken. Ever since you attack Big Yellow and claimed that he was a

beast, you have already been doomed. That was the bottom line of my patience and you have crossed it ignorantly.”

Jiang Chen’s ruthless eyes glared at Big Guardian unblinkingly. His voice was emotionless, so cold that it sent chills down people’s spine. Also, his hoarse voice sounded like he hadn’t spoken in ten thousand years. The bloodlust had influenced his mind while the Edifying Light kept his human side awake.

Chi La!

“Argh.....”

Miserable cry reverberated over the sky as Jiang Chen’s scary dragon claw ripped Big Guardian’s shoulders off. The sound of breaking bones and flesh was heard clearly. It gave anyone who heard it the creeps.

That wasn’t done quickly. It process was done slowly. Jiang Chen was tearing down the flesh and bones of Big Guardian piece by piece, slowly. It was extremely horrifying and bloody scene. Blood spattered and splashed on Jiang Chen’s body and face, yet he felt indifferent to it.

“Argh.....”

Big Guardian let out a shrill wail, people could hear him enduring the intense pain. That kind of pain was a hundred folds greater than the suffering of Ling Chi Execution. This was probably the torture that Big Guardian wanted to do on Jiang Chen at the beginning, however, he was the one being tortured by his prey instead.

Hiss.....

Everyone who watched the battle gasped for air, especially the experts in Desolate camp. Their faces turned pale, one after another. Some of them were so afraid that they trembled like a cicada.

It was too cruel. Never had there been such a ferocious figure in

the world. In their hearts, Jiang Chen wasn't human anymore, but a bloodthirsty wild beast that had no emotion.

“Ha-ha.....”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. The blood of Big Guardian sprayed on his face, turning him into a bloodstained maniac. He now looked like the embodiment of massacre and cruelty, totally immersed in the joy of killing and slaughtering. It seemed like only blood and killing could make him feel better and happy.

“Jiang Chen, you crazy devil! You aren't human!”

Big Guardian roared hoarsely, but it was of no use. He was doomed to die in Jiang Chen's hands, and he would die in the most tragic way possible.

Hong Long.....

At this moment, a big movement was sensed from Desolate Palace. This movement was a lot stronger than before. A large hole appeared in the sky. Cold wind blew strongly. Five silhouettes emerged above the battlefield simultaneously. All of them were elders with fluttering clothes. The aura emitted from them could stir up the fright from the bottom of one's heart and admiration that forced many of them to kneel down. They just stood there, giving people the feeling of nothingness, as if their existence were too high for them to comprehend. Without a doubt, that was a feeling that one would emit when one reached the Immortal realm.

That was right. All of them were Human immortals. Although they were only at the early stage of the Immortal realm, they were the highest beings in Saint Origin Palace. As a matter of fact, their eyes were powerful enough to kill a mortal.

“My god! They are all Human Immortals! Damn! Jiang Chen's right! The Human Immortals of Desolate Palace haven't ascended to the Immortal World. Besides, there are five of them. How are we going to fight against them?”

“It’s over. Jiang Chen is finished. With five Human Immortals together, Jiang Chen won’t stand a chance no matter how great he is.”

“Darn it! I hadn’t expected Desolate Palace to have hidden such a great plot. Those Human Immortals has been staying in Saint Origin World in the last one hundred years because of the Immortal Mark in Ancestor Greenlotus’ possession. Even if they attack now, they won’t arouse the force of the Immortal World, however, all of us will perish in just a flash.”

.....

The people from the three palaces were panicking, the thing that they worried the most had finally appeared. Jiang Chen was right. The Human Immortals of Desolate Palace were still here. They were the existence that none of them could resist.

Upon their arrival, they saw the bloody of Jiang Chen tearing down the body parts of Big Guardian slowly. Then, their expression changed instantly. Not just that, as Human Immortals, they were able to discern what happened here by studying the Qi of the battlefield. They realized that every one of the higher ups of Desolate Palace were slaughtered by that frenzied dragonman. Now, even Big Guardian was going to die in his hands. The hundred-year-old plan of Desolate Palace was completely destroyed. All the efforts of these five old ancestors had been in vain. How could they possibly accept that all of the talents they personally nurtured were dead? Instantly, they were outraged.

“Dammit!”

A Human Immortal old ancestor couldn’t resist his anger any longer. “Little beast, I demand you to release him at once!”

“Bah! Who gave you the right to order me?”

Jiang Chen didn’t care about who interfered with his activity. All he wanted to do was kill Big Guardian. He wouldn’t let his prey

escape even if the Heavens come and save his prey. A tremendous force immediately shred Big Guardian to pieces. At the same time, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda sucked in all the remaining pieces of the body.

“No!”

In the distance, Tyrant yelled. As a monk of Buddha sect, he knew all too well the condition that Jiang Chen was going through. His brother was going mad. Jiang Chen might be able to maintain his consciousness with the Edifying Light earlier, but after devouring Big Guardian, his last bit of willpower would be consumed by the bloodlust, and will turn into a real beast.

However, Jiang Chen ignored Tyrant’s warning. It was just like what Tyrant had said, Jiang Chen’s frenzied state had reached its peak after devouring the corpse of Big Guardian. Even the Edifying Light couldn’t suppress such great amount of bloodlust. The blood-red color of his eyes became even more intense.

At this moment, he had lost himself completely and turned into a real killing machine.

The absorption of Big Guardian had given him a wild boost of energy. But because of that, he had lost his consciousness completely. He also couldn’t circulate his dragon transformation skill as usual. Thus, his cultivation remained at the peak of the Eighth Grade Great Saint. If he could advance to the Ninth Grade Great Saint, perhaps he would be able to kill Human Immortals.

“Argh! That brutal monster! He has ruined our palace’s hundred-year-old plan! This loss is too great to bear. I hate myself for not killing this brat earlier.”

That Human Immortal old ancestor shouted mournfully. Not long ago, during the Great War in Western Domain, they had predicted that Jiang Chen would go to the Devil World and die. So, they didn’t put him in their eyes at all, which led to a great disaster today.

Chapter 1043 - The End of the Three Palaces

The old ancestors of Desolate Palace cried out madly. However, the madness that they felt was entirely different from what Jiang Chen was currently experiencing. They had gone mad due to pain and anger of their failed one-hundred-year long plan. They had put so much effort in nurturing those geniuses just to execute today's great plan, the plan that would make Desolate Palace the sole ruler of Saint Origin World. This was the reason they had stayed in the Mortal World in the last hundred years. They wanted to see the world conquered by their palace before they ascend to the Immortal World to further their cultivation.

Being a Human Immortal cultivator, wouldn't they want to ascend to the Immortal World and explore a better environment for cultivation? They had hidden themselves in Desolate Palace for a hundred years, only to reap what they sowed.

When their great plan was about to be completed, a man named Jiang Chen had obstructed, destroying all their foundation—the supreme geniuses nurtured by the old ancestors were all dead, not even their remains were left behind. This was a loss too heavy for them to bear. Even if they killed Jiang Chen and wiped all the three palaces out, they wouldn't be able to restore to their former glory without another 100 years of time.

What these old ancestors couldn't accept more was that they ignored the existence of Jiang Chen. From the very beginning, they had already noticed that Jiang Chen was a terrifying genius that could grow rapidly. Desolate Emperor also mentioned that Jiang Chen was a monstrous genius that could create miracles. Even so, they failed to pay this unknown young man any attention due to their pride, thus giving Jiang Chen sufficient time to grow which resulted to today's event.

If they decided to sneak into the Devil World and kill Jiang Chen, they wouldn't have suffered today's losses and Desolate Palace

would have successfully become the supreme ruler of Saint Origin Palace.

Due to their overconfidence to their geniuses, they did not pay attention to the war, which they deeply regretted now. It was all too late when they felt that something was not right because Jiang Chen had already slaughtered all of their geniuses.

Roar... *Roar...* *Roar...*

Jiang Chen's tyrannical roars reverberated through the sky. He now had lost his mind completely, making him no different than a peerless wild dragon. From top to bottom, his body was filled with brutal killing intent.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

This was the only word left in his mind. Only by killing could he express the bloodlust boiling inside of him. The boundless Qi that kept surging out of his body turned the atmosphere chaotic.

“What do we do? Little Chen has lost himself completely.”

Having never seen Jiang Chen in such a frenzied state before, Han Yan said while clenching his fists tightly. It was strange and scary. Though he wanted to help Jiang Chen, there was nothing he could do.

“His mind has been eroded by bloodlust. There's nothing I can do to help since I don't have the Great Compassion Mantra that could suppress the brutal Qi in his body. I'm afraid that the only one who possesses such a skill is Grandmaster, but he's imprisoned in Desolate Palace. No one can help Little Chen now...” Tyrant's tone was full of worries and solemnity as he truly had no ability to save Jiang Chen.

Knowing Jiang Chen's predicament but not being able to lend a helping hand hurt them so much, as if a blade was slicing their heart.

“Kill...”

Jiang Chen roared madly once more. Then, he shifted his attention to the Human Immortals and attacked, sending out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.

“What an arrogant and ignorant brat! In that case, I will kill you.”

One of the Human Immortals who was still angry was provoked when he saw Jiang Chen attacked.

The old ancestor clawed using his hand. Waves of energy started to rise around him. In order to avoid affecting the law of Saint Origin World and causing mass destruction, Human Immortals must create an independent battlefield that was firmer than the world barrier.

Even with the newly-created battlefield, Human Immortals couldn't attack as they pleased. They needed to consider the impact of each attack they launched to prevent the world from being blasted into nothingness.

With a wave of his hand, all the combat dragons struck out by Jiang Chen were immediately destroyed. Then, he clawed out his hand that turned into an indestructible cage, trapping Jiang Chen inside.

Roar... *Roar...* *Roar...*

Jiang Chen roared furiously. He didn't stop attacking but neither of his attack could shake the cage. It was literally impossible for him to break free from the imprisonment. Due to he had gone completely mad, he couldn't stop attacking the cage. His mind only think of one thing—killing.

“Not good.”

“We are finished. The Human Immortal experts are too strong. They are incomparable and undefeatable.”

“If Jiang Chen dies, we will all die. Even if we die, we owe him too much. He has sacrificed himself for our sake.”

.....

Seeing Jiang Chen become completely powerless, his allies exclaimed in worry.

“Old man will kill you right now. No, you can’t die easily. I will draw out your Yin and Yang soul and let you feel the torture that the world could offer, and die from the greatest torment in the Heaven and Earth.”

The old ancestor’s eyes were red. The amount of hatred he had for Jiang Chen was like the ocean.

Ka... *Ka...*

By exerting force from his palm, Jiang Chen’s body began to crack. Pieces of dragon scales flew from his body and blood splattered from his wounds. In an instant, Jiang Chen had become a man covered with blood, causing many people to avert their eyes from the bloody scene.

Roar... *Roar...*

However, it seemed as if Jiang Chen had also lost his senses. Without caring the injuries he had, he continued to attack the cage blindly like a killing machine.

“Wait a minute.” At this time, another Human Immortal spoke.

He was ranked as the First Ancestor and was the oldest ancestor of Desolate Palace. The one who was punishing Jiang Chen right now was the Fifth Ancestor.

He neared Fifth Ancestor, looked at the brutal Jiang Chen and said, “Fifth Ancestor, this man killed Big Guardian while being only an Eighth Grade Great Saint. If you take a look at his terrifying transformation technique, he must have lots of secrets in his body. Let’s not kill him first. We have to dig his secret. A monstrous genius like him rarely appears even in ten thousand years’ time. If discovered the secrets he has, it will bring our palace enormous benefits.”

“I agree. Today, almost all of our geniuses have fallen; and we will need at least another hundred years to restore our losses. This is simply unacceptable! But this brat has plenty of secrets. I have never seen an Eighth Grade Great Saint kill a half-step Human Immortal. If we find out about his cultivation method, our palace will benefit enormously. This little beast is going to die anyway; we’ll just have to suck dry the value he has.” Second Ancestor agreed.

Only then did Fifth Ancestor regain senses from his anger. Though he badly wanted to torture and kill Jiang Chen, he couldn’t deny the facts stated by First Ancestor and Second Ancestor. Jiang Chen’s existence was a miracle in the entire Saint Origin World. No genius as scary as him had ever appeared. Therefore, it was impossible that this little beast had no secrets inside of him.

If it was before, perhaps they wouldn’t feel interested in Jiang Chen’s secret but after suffering such a huge loss, they felt the need to discover his cultivation method to help them restore their glory. It would be a great blessing if Desolate Palace could produce monstrous geniuses like Jiang Chen.

“Alright. We’ll imprison this little beast and study him closely,” said Fifth Ancestor. After holding Jiang Chen captive, he turned to face the three palaces.

All of them looked deathly pale. After learning that Jiang Chen was doomed, they wouldn’t be too optimistic about their own fate. Since the beginning of the war, they had been creating miracles in every turn. They never thought they would face such a tragic outcome.

“What do we do with the them?” asked Fourth Ancestor.

“It will be too easy to grant them death now. Bring all of them back and turn them into our slaves.”

Fifth Ancestor had always acted incisively. He raised his hand,

and a light streamed out towards the Five Elemental Tisura Formation. As it touched the grand formation, the supposedly indestructible grand formation crumbled instantly. All the experts who were supporting the grand formation suffered a great backlash and spurted out blood.

Hua La...

Fifth Ancestor raised his hand once more, creating a storm that wrapped the entire Gu Palace like a net. Any living thing in Gu Palace was sucked into the storm.

With another wave of his hand, all of the people in Gu Palace vanished. They were all taken away by Fifth Ancestor.

This was the scariness of the Human Immortals. Their level had transcended the realm of the mortals. Any of their casual strike could destroy the world completely. All mortals were nothing but insects before a Human Immortal. Not even the mighty half-step Human Immortal had the ability to resist their power.

Jiang Chen's allies began to despair their own fate. They could imagine that their fate would be a hundred times more tortuous than death. Though they were still alive and just became slaves of Desolate Palace, the hatred Desolate Palace had for them was limitless.

The world-shaking war ended. The three palaces failed to turn over the tide and had fallen into the hegemonic grip of Desolate Palace instead.

Everything was over. Could Jiang Chen, the only known variable, continue to produce miracles? It could be said that no one would believe it anymore.

Chapter 1044 - The Prelude of Destruction

The sudden emergence of the Human Immortals had silenced the entire Saint Origin Palace. The sky was filled with the stench of blood. This was the bloodiest and the most tragic war since the creation of the Saint Origin Palace. None of the eight palaces was spared from this war. Currently, all seven palaces had become desolate lands. Everyone who was still alive has been brought back to Desolate Palace to become slaves.

Looking at the situation from the surface, it seemed like Desolate Palace had become the supreme ruler of Saint Origin World.

But the price they paid was very great. It was a price that was beyond their imagination.

All of these happened because of one person – the monstrous person named Jiang Chen.

At this very moment, inside the spatial zone of Desolate Palace, a huge cell was occupied by all the people of the three palaces. Their cultivation base had been sealed away. So everyone, including the half-step Human Immortal experts, had no choice but to bear the brutal scolding and whipping of the experts from Desolate Palace. Some of the half-step Human Immortals wanted to commit suicide, they couldn't bear such humiliation; unfortunately, under the supervision of the experts from Desolate Palace and their cultivation being sealed, they didn't have the strength to kill themselves.

The emotions of melancholy, grievance and other strong emotions were lingering amongst the crowd of the three palaces. It was unfortunate that all of the palaces would become slaves for generations. It was a suffering worse than death.

“Ai! The Heaven wants us dead. Jiang Chen is going to die and no one is going to save us. This is the end of our three palaces and future.”

“I wonder how Jiang Chen is now. After falling into the hands of those Human Immortals, I’m afraid that he will suffer a fate, a hundred folds more horrendous than us.”

“No, Jiang Chen isn’t dead yet. He may still be able to produce miracles. He must be able to. He is the key in this crisis and there’s nothing that he can’t do.”

.....

Every one of them looked gloomy, but there were some who still had confidence in Jiang Chen. They believed that as long as Jiang Chen lived, there would still be a chance. Although they themselves didn’t believe in miracles, they had some kind of inexplicable confidence in Jiang Chen.

“He won’t die. Even if everyone is dead.”

Han Yan said coldly. The confidence he had in Jiang Chen is greater than what he had in himself.

By now, the ones who still had an unshakable confidence in Jiang Chen were Han Yan and Tyrant.

Meanwhile, in the deep layer of the spatial zone, Jiang Chen was trapped in a cage made entirely of the Immortal Qi. He had now returned to his original form, but the insanity of bloodlust was still invading his mind, his body was encompassed by a layer of blood-red cocoon, created from the Qi of brutality.

*Roar... *Roar... *Roar... *

Hong Long.....

The sound of roars and violent attacks kept on echoing from the cell. The thought of killing continued to invade his mind from time to time, giving him no other desire than to break open this cell and continue his slaughtering.

However, this was a cell personally built by a Human Immortal. He wouldn’t be able to break it no matter how powerful he was,

unless he advance to the Ninth Grade Great Saint because there was a huge difference between an Eighth Grade and a Ninth Grade Great Saint.

It was a pity that Jiang Chen had lost his consciousness, and his control over the dragon transformation skill. Therefore, it had become impossible for him to advance to the Ninth Grade Great Saint now.

Outside the cell, all of the five ancestors had unleashed their divine sense to break the line of defence of Jiang Chen's mind to decipher his secrets. However, they eventually found nothing.

"This brat is so weird. We can't even decipher his secrets even with our abilities."

Fifth Ancestor said, feeling annoyed.

"I can go deeper into his soul using the Soul-Assimilation Technique to retrieve his memory, we will then be able to decipher the secret that he has."

Said Third Ancestor who casted the Soul-Assimilation Technique on Jiang Chen. After that, he shook his head, implying that he too, couldn't harvest a single benefit from Jiang Chen mind.

"How did it go?"

The other four asked.

"This brat has fallen into a state of insanity, not a single memory of his past is left inside of him now. Nothing could be found inside his mind, unless the brutal Qi is suppressed and his consciousness is restored."

Said Third Ancestor.

"It's not possible. I've tried it. I have no idea what cultivation method this little beast practiced. The brutal Qi inside his body is too strong and cannot be removed."

Second Ancestor shook his head. It was the first time that all five

of them felt helpless. The bizarre nature of Jiang Chen's cultivation had troubled them all.

"If he is that useless to us, let's just end him for good."

Fourth Ancestor waved his hand, his face was filled with impatience, feeling that it was unnecessary to waste any more time on an insane man.

"No, this man must have lots of secret inside of him. We can't kill him first. By the way, did you forget about another capable man who may be able to help us."

Fifth Ancestor suddenly thought of a person.

"You mean Ancestor Greenlotus?"

The others' eyes glittered.

"Exactly. Ancestor Greenlotus is an eminent monk of Buddha Sect. Rumour has it that the supreme scripture of Buddha Sect is under his possession. So, I'm positive that he will be able to suppress the turbulent Qi inside of this brat. Once this brat regained his consciousness, we will be able to reap all the secrets from him."

Fifth Ancestor revealed a cold smile.

"But will Ancestor Greenlotus help us?"

First Ancestor frowned.

"Don't worry. Ancestor Greenlotus is a man of compassion. In his heart, we are his enemy, but Jiang Chen isn't. I won't believe that he will only watch Jiang Chen endure such a great suffering. He will certainly help him out."

Fifth Ancestor had a look of confidence on his face. He understood Ancestor Greenlotus quite well. Even if Ancestor Greenlotus refused to help him, he would at least help an innocent man like Jiang Chen.

Unfortunately, the wise Fifth Ancestor wouldn't be able to figure

out the strong bond between Jiang Chen and Ancestor Greenlotus. If they knew that Jiang Chen was the World's Greatest Saint and had infiltrated the cell of Ancestor Greenlotus before, they would probably slap Fifth Ancestor's mouth a few times for suggesting this foolish idea.

Getting the help of Ancestor Greenlotus was no different than digging the grave of Desolate Palace. However, in order to obtain the secrets in Jiang Chen mind, they had to give it a try. Besides, across the entire Saint Origin World, Ancestor Greenlotus was the only possible person that could remove the brutal Qi in Jiang Chen's body.

However, they would never have thought of the consequences of making this decision. It would already be too late by the time they realise their mistake.

“Very well. In that case, we will bring this little beast to meet Ancestor Greenlotus. We will wait until he extracts all the brutal Qi from this brat's body before we begin to uncover this brat's secret.”

First Ancestor said, and immediately, he brought Jiang Chen towards the cell of Ancestor Greenlotus along with the other four ancestors.

Chapter 1045 - The Moment of Life or Death

The wall of the sealed secret chamber was ripped open all of a sudden, waking the meditating Ancestor Greenlotus. He lifted his head and felt astonished to see the five old ancestors appearing at the same time. Although he had already been imprisoned for a hundred years, the one who always come to find him was Fifth Ancestor, and this was the first time he saw the five of them appearing at the same time.

“Five ancestors coming here at the same time? It seems the matter isn’t an insignificant one.”

Ancestor Greenlotus spoke, he looked calm and unafraid despite facing five formidable Human Immortals. Being an eminent monk, his disposition wasn’t comparable to any ordinary mortals. Due to him being imprisoned here for a long time, he had already lost concern for his life. When a person had become indifferent to life, there was nothing in this world that could scare him.

“Greenlotus, this man has lost his consciousness and his whole body is filled with brutality, which turned him into a killing monster. I know that you can restore his sanity.”

Fifth Ancestor waved his hand and an illusory cage materialized. Ancestor Greenlotus saw the one inside the cage, a white-clothed youth roaring incessantly and attacking frenziedly at the cage, eager break free from the imprisonment.

Upon seeing this, Ancestor Greenlotus’ expression changed slightly, but it was quickly restored to normal. Staying composed despite the imminent danger was the most fundamental disposition of a real eminent monk, but the seemingly calm Ancestor Greenlotus didn’t feel quite composed in his heart. Emotions were stirring inside of him because he knew that the white-clothed youth was Jiang Chen; he also knew about the conflict between Jiang Chen and Desolate Palace

If he didn't know Jiang Chen, he would probably regard this youth as one of the geniuses of Desolate Palace, and the ancestors had all come here to seek his help; but, after meeting Jiang Chen last time, and knowing the hostile relationship between Jiang Chen and Desolate Palace, he couldn't help but doubt the ulterior motive of the old ancestors for seeking his help.

After a while, Ancestor Greenlotus stared directly at Jiang Chen, studying him. He started to frown when he sensed the strange Qi of Jiang Chen.

Why is his Qi so brutal? He is in complete bloodlust. What actually happened in Saint Origin Palace? Jiang Chen is a wise person, and will never do anything he isn't sure of, much less turn himself into an insane monster. I need to find out what exactly happened.

Ancestor Greenlotus muttered in his heart.

Now that Jiang Chen had fallen into the hands of Desolate Palace, it baffled him why these five ancestors wanted his help. He would refuse to help them if they failed to provide him a clear explanation.

"I don't know him. Plus, he has already gone completely mad. I can't save him even with my abilities." Ancestor Greenlotus said flatly.

"Greenlotus, I know that you can save him. You are an eminent monk of Buddha Sect, I imagine that you don't wish to watch him be devoured by his insanity too," said Fifth Ancestor.

"I can try to help him, but you have to tell me what happened to this man first," replied Ancestor Greenlotus.

"I don't mind telling you more about him. His name is Jiang Chen. He has destroyed our palace's great plan and has killed all of our half-step Human Immortals and Ninth Grade Great Saint experts. All the geniuses personally nurtured by us were dead,

however, we don't know the cultivation method he practiced that allowed him to devour the corpses of those experts. I concluded that it had to be the essence of the corpses he consumed that turned him into this monster." Fourth Ancestor said unabashedly.

There was no longer anything they could hide. He was filled with anger by the way Jiang Chen slowly ripped Big Guardian apart, and how he was devoured by Jiang Chen. He wanted to rush forth and shred Jiang Chen to pieces so much.

"What?"

Ancestor Greenlotus exclaimed after listening to this shocking news. His eyes couldn't help but shift to Jiang Chen again. He noticed that Jiang Chen's cultivation base was merely at the peak of the Eighth Grade Great Saint, nevertheless, he was still able to kill all the experts of Desolate Palace which was spectacular. He was afraid that only Jiang Chen has such strength across the entire Saint Origin World.

Although he wasn't able to witness the event, he could still imagine how incredible it was when Desolate Palace's hundred-year-old plan was sabotaged and destroyed by a single man. As such, it was understandable how furious these five ancestors were feeling right now.

"Haha! Isn't this good? I have never thought that your great plan would fail so miserably just because of this young man. This is karma. Haha!"

Ancestor Greenlotus burst into laughter. He really felt pleased. After so many years of being imprisoned in this chamber, it was impossible for him not to hold any grudges against them.

With regards to Ancestor Greenlotus' reaction, none of them felt surprised. If they were put into Ancestor Greenlotus' position, they would probably feel more delighted than he was.

"Cut the crap, Greenlotus. Get rid of him now." Fifth Ancestor

said impatiently.

“This man has killed so many of your people, but you are asking me to save him now. It is obvious that you all have some kind of hidden agenda. I’m afraid that this man will end up worse in your hands after that. In that case, why should I save him?” said Ancestor Greenlotus.

He wasn’t a fool. He had already guessed the intention of these five ancestors. After losing so many geniuses, they would need at least a hundred more years to restore their peak. Therefore, Jiang Chen would become their test subject, trying to uncover the secrets in his body and use it to produce new geniuses. Unfortunately, they were unable to find anything from Jiang Chen. So, they decided that he might be able to help. Given his wisdom, it wasn’t a problem for him to figure out their motives.

“Greenlotus, you have been imprisoned here for a hundred years, don’t you long for your freedom? I promise you, as long as you save this brat, we will grant you freedom,” said Fifth Ancestor.

“Is that for real?” Ancestor Greenlotus replied with a feigned surprise.

He knew better than anyone that Desolate Palace would never let him go, even if they got the Immortal Mark from him. However, in order to make the five ancestors believe him, he had to feign his desperation for freedom.

“That’s right. Let’s do this now.” First Ancestor spoke.

“In that case, I will help him. This man is suffering greatly because of the state he is in. Being a merciful Buddha, I will relieve him of his suffering.”

Ancestor Greenlotus put his palms together in a compassionate way, but he had another thought in mind. “Jiang Chen, you are a wise person. I suppose the current situation is also one of your calculations? Anyway, I can help you remove all the brutal Qi in

your body with my Great Compassion Mantra. However, you will surely face a tragic situation after that. So we have to give this a try: during the process of removing the brutal Qi, I will impart the Immortal Mark into your body. You are a miracle of Saint Origin World, perhaps you have the ability to refine this Immortal Mark. If you can really refine it, you will obtain unimaginable benefits, and perhaps allow you to reverse the current situation, but if you fail to do so, we'll lose everything. By that time, the Immortal Mark will fall into their hands and our lives will come to an end. As such, this is a gamble that will decide both of our lives.”

Chapter 1046 - The Immortal Mark

Entering the Body

Ancestor Greenlotus was a sagacious man. With the current situation, the only person he could rely on to change his fate and the fate of Saint Origin World was Jiang Chen.

It had been a hundred years since he discovered the Immortal Mark accidentally. He failed to refine it because he hadn't been recognized by it. Although he wasn't sure if Jiang Chen could refine it, he was certain that Jiang Chen had greater luck than him. As such, Jiang Chen had a better chance of refining it. Judging from their current situation, the only way out of this crisis was to boost Jiang Chen's cultivation using the Immortal Mark. Only then could Jiang Chen be powerful enough to fight the five ancestors. But if this failed, every hope they had would crumble.

This was a huge gamble; judging from this, it showed that Ancestor Greenlotus was a decisive man. He knew that there were some things that he should push through even if he wasn't sure of the outcome, otherwise he would lose everything in the end.

*Roar... *Roar...*

Inside the cage, Jiang Chen was just like before, madly attacking the cage. The bloodthirsty Qi radiated from his body was getting heavier. Ancestor Greenlotus felt somewhat uneasy seeing all of these. If Jiang Chen didn't get properly treated in time, he would be finished as soon as the brutal Qi had taken root in his innermost soul. At that time, he was afraid that not even the Great Compassion Mantra would be able to help.

"Greenlotus, don't waste any more time. Get rid of his brutal Qi quick."

Fifth Ancestor hustled. He had no qualms about letting Ancestor Greenlotus save Jiang Chen: after all, they were Human

Immortals. As such, it was impossible for Ancestor Greenlotus to do something that could hurt them.

“It’s been such a long time.”

Ancestor Greenlotus slowly rose from the ground. In a flash, his body glittered with golden light—the purest Buddha light under the Heavens, without any impurities in it. He looked weak and walked unsteadily, but his eyes were filled with vigor.

In the eyes of the five ancestors, Ancestor Greenlotus was already a half-crippled man ever since his Immortal Soul was broken back then. He had lost all his splendor and turned from a robust middle-aged man to a withered old man.

“Let me in,” said Ancestor Greenlotus.

“No, he will kill you.” Fifth Ancestor immediately denied.

Although Jiang Chen had lost his sanity completely, his combat strength was just as powerful as before. Being a peak Eighth Grade Great Saint, no cultivators below Human Immortal realm was a match for him. Thus, Ancestor Greenlotus would probably be shredded to pieces given how weak he was right now.

“It’s fine. I have my own ways. Otherwise, I can’t heal him,” retorted Ancestor Greenlotus.

“Just let me in. I will use the supreme scripture of Buddha Sect to save him, but none of you is allowed to watch the process using your divine sense. If I found out that any of you is using divine sense to peek at my method, I will immediately stop the procedure at once.”

“Very well. Let him in.”

First Ancestor responded very quickly, knowing that Ancestor Greenlotus must have some kind of unique methods and wouldn’t joke about his life.

As a matter of fact, Greenlotus’ purpose of doing this was because

he wanted to impart the Immortal Mark into Jiang Chen's body without being noticed. The five ancestors had already been prying into his Immortal Mark for a hundred years now. So, they wouldn't have a problem detecting it if he wasn't close enough to Jiang Chen.

As for the Great Compassion Mantra, it was the supreme scripture of Buddha Sect; not everyone had the ability to cultivate it due to its obscurity. Even the five ancestors wouldn't be able to grasp its meaning even if he told them the whole mantra.

Chi La!

Fifth Ancestor waved, opening the entrance of the cell. Then, he closed it after Greenlotus entered. The five of them kept their divine sense while their eyes stared hard at the situation inside.

Roar...

The moment Greenlotus entered, Jiang Chen lunged towards him like a mad man.

Greenlotus reacted quickly. At this moment, he was no longer the weak and slow old man. Vital force rushed out his body as he yelled at Jiang Chen, "Tai!"

A huge golden character was launched, it was then imprinted in Jiang Chen's glabella. It seemed like a dazzling golden talisman. It was the most profound talisman of Buddha Sect. Due to it being casted by Ancestor Greenlotus, the effect of the talisman varied greatly.

The insane Jiang Chen looked stupefied, as if he had been hit hard on the head.

"En?" Ancestor Greenlotus exclaimed in shock.

Although he knew that the talisman should at least give a temporary relief to Jiang Chen's condition, he was still surprised it had such a good effect on him.

After an instant, Ancestor Greenlotus understood the reason behind it.

“Haha! This is a lucky coincidence. I didn’t expect him to have acquired the Edifying Light extracted from the Great Compassion Mantra. Because of this, my Great Compassion Mantra was able to take effect on him so quickly.”

Ancestor Greenlotus felt delighted. The seriousness of the problem had been reduced after learning that the Edifying Light was inside Jiang Chen’s body.

“Po Lu Jie Di Shuo He Luo Ye...”

Ancestor Greenlotus put his palms together while his mouth was constantly spitting out divine sanskrit. A paragraph of abstruse incantation filled the entire cage, like divine bird flying in the sky before it went straight into Jiang Chen’s body.

Pa!

Greenlotus struck out his palm on Jiang Chen’s head; and, a strong Buddha essence began to flow into Jiang Chen’s body.

In only half a minute’s time, Jiang Chen had partially recovered from his condition.

Subsequently, he opened his eyes and was immediately aware of what was going on.

“Greenlotus.” Jiang Chen yelled using divine sense.

“Don’t speak. I am circulating my Great Compassion Mantra to clear off the brutal Qi inside your body. Those five old men are watching us. Listen, I will now impart the Immortal Mark into your body. Try your best to refine it as this will be our last chance. If you can refine it, your cultivation base will skyrocket. After that, I’m afraid that not even Human Immortals would be your opponents. Moreover, after refining it, you will become its controller. These five old men will lose the protection of the Immortal Mark and ascend to the Immortal World at once.”

Ancestor Greenlotus's words were transmitted into Jiang Chen's head through divine sense.

"Bring it on. This is still within my calculation. If it wasn't for your presence, I wouldn't have recklessly consumed those corpses."

Jiang Chen's lips curve into a smile. He was really an astute person. He was already able to anticipate this event earlier, even though he wasn't sure if this would work. In any case, he thought that men should sometimes gamble in their lives.

"Alright. I will impart the Immortal Mark into your body now. Then, refine it while I remove the brutal Qi in your body. Those five old men have agreed not to observe us using their divine sense. Once we succeed, they are certainly going to regret their decision," said Ancestor Greenlotus.

The next thing that would happen would solely depend on Jiang Chen's luck.

Humph! If I can refine the Immortal Mark, I will never give them the chance to ascend to the Immortal World!

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. How could he be so kind, letting these five old men leave the Mortal World? If he succeeded, he would make them stay and kill them.

*Buzz... * *Buzz... *

Ancestor Greenlotus casted the Great Compassion Mantra non-stop into Jiang Chen's body. With the shine of the Buddha Light, the internal condition of Jiang Chen's body was changing constantly—the brutal Qi inside his body was reduced sharply. Upon seeing what's happening, the five ancestors looked delighted that they had picked the right person to help.

A white column of light shot out from Ancestor Greenlotus' palm. Because his palm was placed on top of Jiang Chen's head, none of the five ancestors noticed it.

This white column of light was no doubt the Immortal Mark. Jiang Chen's body began to tremble as soon as it entered his body

Jiang Chen circulated the dragon transformation skill madly to completely encompass the Immortal Mark, it gave him the feeling as if he was going to ascend to the Immortal World. However, the Immortal Mark was something that belonged to the Immortal World and represented its law. Therefore, it would be difficult for one to actually refine it.

However, Jiang Chen didn't give up. He is not a man who would easily accept defeat. Plus, this was his last chance. He couldn't fail no matter what, otherwise, he and the rest of them would face a tragic end.

The Immortal Mark is a superior existence. So only a greater existence can suppress it. My dragon transformation skill is definitely many times greater than the Immortal Mark. Suppress it!

Jiang Chen bellowed. He had an incomparable confidence in his dragon transformation skill.

Roar...

Suddenly, a deep dragon roar was heard from his innermost soul. That was the roar of an ancient dragon that only he could hear. In his innermost soul, he saw an illusion of an ancient dragon that looked so real and rushed out towards him. The dragon was filled with the aura of divinity. It looked as if it was the only everlasting and unique existence in the Heavens. And, this was the second time that he had witnessed an ancient dragon inside his soul.

The dragon opened its mouth wide and swallowed the Immortal Mark.

It then disappeared after subduing the Immortal Mark. Immortal Mark now was integrated completely with the Qi of his soul. Infinite Immortal Qi was now flowing in all directions inside his

body, spreading to all of his limbs and bones.

Chapter 1047 - The Ultimate Counterattack

Roar...

The nourishment of the Immortal Mark stimulated Jiang Chen to let out a long roar. In this instant, he was refining the thing that signified the highest law of the Immortal World—Immortal Mark.

If it was completely refined and integrated into his body, he would get boundless benefits.

In the five ancestors' point of view, the outburst of Qi from Jiang Chen's body was merely because Ancestor Greenlotus was forcing the brutal Qi out of his body. So they didn't suspect that it was something else.

During the purification, they had to admit that Ancestor Greenlotus was a very capable monk. He was worthy of being called the most powerful eminent monk of Buddha Sect.

While the Immortal Mark was being refined, new dragon marks were forming in Jiang Chen's body. His Qi was soaring rapidly. As there was a huge gap getting from Eighth Grade Great Saint to Ninth Grade Great Saint, it was very difficult for one to advance. However with his strong foundation and the help of the Immortal Mark, it would not be special for him to push his level to the ninth grade. Besides, he had once achieved the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint in his past life and had never been stuck in any bottlenecks in his previous cultivation path.

"Jiang Chen, don't panic. Suppress the energy in your body and don't break through the Ninth Grade Great Saint first."

Ancestor Greenlotus spoke in his mind.

"I understand." Jiang Chen replied.

He knew how dangerous their current circumstance was. With five extremely powerful Human Immortals, and especially the First Ancestor who had reached the peak of early-stage Human

Immortal, he could imagine what would happen if he became careless in the slightest. Experts like them could immediately advance to the middle-stage of Human Immortal if they had entered the Immortal World and used the resources there.

In order to deal with these five ancestors, merely advancing to the Ninth Grade Great Saint certainly wasn't enough. He must, with the help of the Immortal Mark, reach the peak of the ninth grade. That way, killing early-stage Human Immortals would be a piece of cake.

If he advanced to the ninth grade now, it would arouse the notice of the five ancestors, and he would then be stopped by them. Thus, he needed to press down the energy in his body until the Immortal Mark was fully refined.

By that time, his counterattack would be unrivalled; he would turn the defeat into victory, and the history of Saint Origin World would have to be rewritten.

Buzz... *Buzz...* *Buzz...*

Buzzing sounds rang as tremendous changes were taking place in his body. The benefits that he had received from the Immortal Mark was endless. At the same time, he was using the Edifying Light along with Ancestor Greenlotus' Great Compassion Mantra to eliminate the brutal Qi left in his body. It would take at most another minute to get his body entire cleansed.

A minute later, all the brutal Qi in his body was cleared, but to buy him more time to completely refine the Immortal Mark, he acted as if still he was insane to give the five ancestors the impression that he was still in the state of bloodlust.

With the rate the refinement was going, it would take half an hour before its completion; but, to the five Human Immortal old ancestors, 30 minutes wasn't anything at all. Adding the fact that they were very interested in the secrets of Jiang Chen, they would still wait patiently even if it took three days' time. Once Ancestor

Greenlotus cleared all the bloodlust off his head, their task would be accomplished.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The tremor of his body intensified, not because of the brutal Qi but the Immortal Mark that had brought him too much of energy. The accumulated energy inside his body would burst unless he allowed himself to break through to the Ninth Grade Great Saint now.

The dragon transformation skill had become scarier. The time taken for it to refine the Immortal Mark was shorter than what he expected—it took only 20 minutes.

The moment the Immortal Mark was fully refined, a vast stream of energy surged out of his body and swept through the cage like a storm.

Roar...

He let out a dragon roar once more. The infinite energy was turning into new dragon marks, pushing the number to 96,000!

Bang!

This number marked the Ninth Grade Great Saint; but his advancement did not stop yet. In a few blinks, several hundred dragon marks were formed due to the abundant energy.

According to the description of the dragon transformation skill, hitting 100,000 dragon marks would allow the dragon to ascend. At his current grade, he needed 4,000 more dragon marks to break through into the Human Immortal realm.

He had a feeling that 100,000 dragon marks was not the limit of the dragon transformation skill. It might be just the starting point as he strongly believed that there would be numerous levels beyond the Mortal realm.

In another blink, a total of 1,000 dragon marks were formed.

Ka... *Ka...*

The impenetrable cell began to shudder violently, cracking sound was heard and cracks appeared on the surface as though it couldn't bear the energy of Jiang Chen and would explode at any moment.

“What's going on?”

Fifth Ancestor looked anxious as he felt like he was losing control of cage.

“Not good. Stop them! Son of a b*tch! I don't know what this Greenlotus did to that brat, causing him to advance to the ninth grade. We can't let him continue to grow, otherwise we will lose all our chances!”

First Ancestor's expression darkened. It all happened so quickly and sudden; they were completely caught off guard.

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen had reached as many as 99,000 dragon marks, signifying that he reached the peak Ninth Grade Great Saint; leaving him with only a step away from the Human Immortal realm.

“How could it be so fast?”

The five ancestors' expressions changed dramatically. Without delaying any further, all five of them struck out powerful seals towards the cell.

Too bad, it was too late for that!

They were destined to face such a tragic end the moment they decided to let Ancestor Greenlotus save Jiang Chen.

Roar...

Jiang Chen had gone frenzied. His body burst into the half-dragon form and ripped an opening on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

“Greenlotus, get in quick!”

He roared at Ancestor Greenlotus. Immediately, Greenlotus rushed into the pagoda.

Hong Long...

The instant Ancestor Greenlotus entered the pagoda, violent energy exploded, tearing the rods of the cage open. At this moment, the number of dragon marks in Jiang Chen's body had reached the scary number of 99,500, leaving him another 500 more to break through to the Human Immortal realm.

Deng... *Deng...* *Deng...*

The ancestors suffered a great backlash and were sent several steps back. Currently, shock were painted all over their faces and the way they looked at Jiang Chen was like they were seeing a ghost. They had forgotten the last day when they had truly been shocked by something or someone.

Even though Jiang Chen had merely advanced to the Ninth Grade Great Saint, his power was just too scary for sending the five Human Immortals away using only his Qi.

“Haha! I'm going to settle the score with these five old men.”

He clawed at the void, ripping off a portion of the spatial zone. A large hole was produced in the sky above Desolate Palace. Not only that, all the spatial zones of Desolate Palace crumbled simultaneously. Everybody, including those who had been captured, appeared on Desolate Palace. They looked confused not knowing what had happened. As they looked up at the sky, they saw an overbearing blood-red dragon besieged by the five Human Immortal ancestors.

“My god, what exactly has happened? Look! That's Jiang Chen!”

“Haha! Jiang Chen isn't dead. Did you all notice his Qi? He had reached the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint. He is now even stronger than the Human Immortal experts. This is a miracle... No, he has created another miracle!”

“He is undeniably monstrous! He is peerlessly monstrous! I didn’t even think there will be such a big turnaround. I now wonder if Jiang Chen could defeat the five Human Immortals and turn defeat into victory.”

.....

Everyone was astounded. Whether it was the enemy or the ally, all of them were watching the scene with their mouths hanging open. None of them had thought that there would be such a counterattack in the last moment. It wasn’t important regarding what had exactly happened to Jiang Chen. What was important was the result and the sudden countermove had lit up their hopes again.

“I knew that Little Chen wouldn’t die so easily.”

Han Yan beamed after knowing that Jiang Chen was alright.

High above in the sky, the Human Immortal ancestors were still in a state of shock. They were completely clueless of what had happened to Jiang Chen. Ancestor Greenlotus was supposed to only suppress the brutal Qi in Jiang Chen’s body, so how could he turn so powerful all of a sudden?

“Jiang Chen, tell us what has happened.”

Fifth Ancestor clamoured.

“Haha! You five old idiots! This has been my plan all along. Ancestor Greenlotus and I have known each other for a long time. He imparted the Immortal Mark which you all have been yearning for 100 years to me and I have fully refined it. Right, don’t think that you all can ascend to the Immortal World now because I won’t allow that. All of you are destined to die in my hands.”

He laughed sneeringly.

Chapter 1048 - Being Caught in One's Own Trap

“What?”

After listening to what Jiang Chen said, the five ancestors exclaimed. Their expression turned incomparably ugly. Given their experience and wisdom, they naturally knew that Jiang Chen wasn't lying. It was the only possible explanation to the current situation. No matter how heaven defying Jiang Chen was, it was impossible for him to advance to the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint within such a short period of time, unless something aided him—the Immortal Mark.

“You're able to refine the Immortal Mark?”

Fifth Ancestor asked in an angry tone blended with regret.

“That's right.”

A voice sounded, then a withered old monk materialized in the sky. It was Ancestor Greenlotus. After coming out of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and looking at his surroundings, he heaved a huge sigh of relief after a being imprisoned for a hundred years.

“Grandmaster!”

Tyrant, who was in Desolate Palace, immediately called out to Ancestor Greenlotus. Although the current Ancestor Greenlotus didn't look the same as the statue in Greenlotus Mountain, both of them had the same charisma. That's why Tyrant was able to identify the old man as his grandmaster on the first sight.

“Greenlotus, you plotted against us?” Fifth Ancestor said furiously.

“Amitabha.”

Ancestor Greenlotus put his palms together instead of replying to Fifth Ancestor. At this moment, enormous changes started to take

place inside his body. A layer of golden light was radiating from the surface of his body. To one's surprise, his withered body was being rejuvenated.

In this short period of time, his appearance also started to change, from a withered old monk to a middle-aged robust monk with glittering eyes. His current cultivation base was at the peak of half-step Human Immortal. In just a few days' time, he would turn into a Human Immortal and ascend to the Immortal World.

"I didn't expect Grandmaster to be so handsome."

Tyrant beamed. At first, he felt sorry for Ancestor Greenlotus the moment he saw his withered appearance. He thought that it was pitiful that his grandmaster had lost all of his glory and became a dying old man. However, the instant transformation of Ancestor Greenlotus shocked him.

"Greenlotus, I have never thought that you have been hiding your cultivation base all these years. However, I'm curious about how you were still able cultivate even after your Immortal Soul was broken," said First Ancestor.

Over the years, they had always regarded Ancestor Greenlotus as a half-crippled man. The only reason they kept him alive was because of the Immortal Mark that was in his possession. They had not thought that he wasn't actually withering and dying, but had been restoring his cultivation base instead. If he wasn't imprisoned in the secret chamber, he would've ascended to the Human Immortal realm long ago.

"You don't have the wisdom to understand my cultivation method. The biggest mistake you made was to let me treat Jiang Chen. It gave me the chance to act." Ancestor Greenlotus said sarcastically, not attempting to hide any of his intentions anymore.

"It's not possible. The Immortal Mark signifies the law of the Immortal World. It couldn't be refined so easily." Fifth Ancestor

said in disbelief.

“In this world, there are things that you cannot judge with common sense. There are some people who can always create miracles and Jiang Chen is one of them. He is an individual that has great luck. So, it wasn’t strange that he could refine the Immortal Mark. Anyhow, I was just making a gamble, fortunately, it turned out well.” Ancestor Greenlotus said with a snicker.

The fact that Jiang Chen didn’t die and was able to reincarnate was enough to show how great his luck was. If Jiang Chen wasn’t able to refine the Immortal Mark, Greenlutos was afraid that no one else throughout the entire Saint Origin World would be able to do so.

Although it was a huge bet, it still ended pretty well.

“How are you feeling right now? Are you regretting it now?” Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders and said flatly.

The sentence he spoke was like a thorn jabbing in the ancestors’ hearts, causing them to spurt out a mouthful of blood. It would be a lie if they said that they didn’t regret it, particularly Fifth Ancestor, the one who suggested uncovering Jiang Chen’s secrets, which turned out to be a foolish decision. This had given Jiang Chen and Ancestor Greenlotus the chance to reverse their situation. They all felt so frustrated for stepping into their own trap.

“Haha! Jiang Chen, it is true that we have given you the chance to turn the tides, but don’t get all over yourself. You think that your current level is enough to defeat us? How ridiculous is that? You have no idea how powerful a Human Immortal is. Despite how strong you have become, you won’t be a match for a Human Immortal. You are courting death not taking advantage of the Immortal Mark.” Fifth Ancestor laughed and said.

It didn’t concern him that Jiang Chen had advanced to another level, his opponent was just a Ninth Grade Great Saint after all. In

their point of view, a Great Saint absolutely wouldn't be a match for a Human Immortal, let alone five Human Immortals.

“Old man, cut your crap. I can kill you in just a single move. You Human Immortals are as fragile as insects to me. I used the Immortal Mark to stop any of you from ascending to the Immortal World because I don't want you to escape your death today.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was domineering. It was impossible for him to let any of the five ancestors go. Besides, none of the early-stage Human Immortal was his opponent.

“Greenlotus, I need you to save the people below and gain control of Desolate Palace. Leave these five old men to me,” said Jiang Chen to Ancestor Greenlotus.

“Alright.”

Ancestor Greenlotus vanished in a flash and appeared to where the other experts were held captive. After freeing all of them from their imprisonment, they all turned somewhat savage, but instead of attacking the remaining army of Desolate Palace, they focused their attention on the battle between Jiang Chen and the five ancestors.

They weren't idiots. They knew that their fates solely depended on Jiang Chen's performance. If he killed the five ancestors, Desolate Palace would face their end, but if he failed to defeat them and was killed instead, the fate of the three palaces would remain unchanged.

“Do you think Jiang Chen can kill the five ancestors, the five mighty Human Immortals?”

“Don't worry. I have faith in Jiang Chen. He has already created too many miracles, and given his present cultivation base, it won't be a problem for him to kill those five ancestors.”

“The fate of our palaces is now in his hands. If he eliminated those Human Immortals with his present cultivation base, he will

become the greatest cultivator in the history of Saint Origin World.”

.....

All of them were tensed up, worrying about the final outcome of their fate.

Chapter 1049 - One Slash to Take Down Fifth Ancestor

Above the sky was a solid battlefield, newly-created by the five ancestors. By exploiting the ability of the Immortal Mark, the five of them did not ascend to the Immortal World.

These five Human Immortals had locked onto Jiang Chen's Qi. The hatred they had for Jiang Chen was indescribable. What they desired most right now was to eliminate Jiang Chen even if they couldn't uncover the secrets of his body anymore.

"Come on! Enlighten me about how powerful Human Immortals really are." Jiang Chen's voice echoed loudly.

His body was filled with majestic combat intent. Fighting against Human Immortals really stirred him up.

"Let me face him. I would like to see how powerful a ninth grade mortal can be."

Fifth Ancestor moved, reaching Jiang Chen in a flash. He clawed in the air, then boundless waves of golden air pounced on Jiang Chen. That was a golden storm, a powerful Immortal Wind that was like a sharp blade, slashing everything in its way, including humans.

"Is this what a Human Immortal only got? Such an attack is useless against me."

Without saying another word, he struck out the True Dragon Palm and clawed ahead, ripping apart the oncoming storm instantly.

Swoosh!

Such leisurely move from Jiang Chen shook everyone's heart. The Flaming Wings sprouted on his back and he approached Fifth Ancestor like a specter, and struck with the Golden Dragon Seal.

Three wild dragons came roaring out from different directions, encircling Fifth Ancestor.

“He’s powerful...”

Fifth Ancestor’s expression changed drastically. He had not thought that a Ninth Grade Great Saint could be this powerful. His opponent made him feel pressured.

“Heaven Tyrannical Palm!” Fifth Ancestor bellowed, striking out with a terrifying combat technique.

For an instant, the sky was blotted out by golden palm seals, each the size of a house. They were flying everywhere, trying to destroy the golden dragons casted by Jiang Chen.

Too bad, Fifth Ancestor had underestimated the power of the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. The Golden Dragon Seal had the most powerful attack amongst the five dragon seals. Plus, given Jiang Chen’s cultivation base, no ordinary early-stage Human Immortal would be a match for him.

Hong Long...

The golden palm strikes collided with the golden dragons and vanished, leaving the golden dragons as intact as before.

“Argh...”

Jiang Chen’s attack caused the mighty Fifth Ancestor to let out a wail. When the three golden dragons faded, Fifth Ancestor’s face was seen again in the scene; but, his body was covered in blood and his Qi had dropped sharply.

“Not good.”

“Fifth Brother!”

The other four ancestors yelled. First Ancestor, who had the highest cultivation base, lunged at Jiang Chen’s direction to rescue Fifth Ancestor. They had severely underestimated Jiang Chen. He was afraid that Fifth Ancestor would be killed at any second if he

didn't make a move to save him now.

“Humph! You think you can save him from my hands? None of you is capable of doing that!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph, and at the same time, the powerful Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand. Then, he made a slash that travelled at maximum speed. Even if First Ancestor blocked Fifth Ancestor's front right now, he wouldn't be able to save him or deflect the sword strike.

Pu Chi!

Fifth Ancestor let out a final wail the moment he was severed into two parts. Jiang Chen stuck his sword again and plucked the golden Immortal Soul out. It might not be useful to him, but he could keep it for Big Yellow who was still in a coma right now. If he could obtain the Immortal Souls of these ancestors, he might be able to awaken Big Yellow from his present state.

“Son of a b*tch!”

First Ancestor cursed loudly and immediately sent out a beam of Immortal light but it was easily deflected by Jiang Chen. Currently, even a peak early-stage Human Immortal was no longer an opponent of Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen's too scary. My god, he is even stronger than those Human Immortals, he just killed a Human Immortal with a single slash! I wouldn't believe it if I didn't see it with my own eyes.”

“Truly awesome... this is a battle that could shake the whole world. Jiang Chen has created a miracle once again. Now, not even an early-stage Human Immortal is a match for him. Desolate Palace is doomed this time.”

“This is great! Our three palaces can finally see hope. The history of Saint Origin World will soon be changed!”

.....

Seeing Fifth Ancestor being killed and First Ancestor's attack being deflected, the experts from the three palaces cheered delightfully. This was a scene that they had been dreaming of. They never thought that it would actually come true.

The Desolate camp on the other hand looked completely dispirited and numb, unlucky encounters kept on happening ever since they struck Gu Palace.

“The four of you, come and fight together. Don't waste any more time.”

Jiang Chen pointed his sword at the four ancestors. Due to the Immortal World having been deceived by Jiang Chen's Immortal Mark, the four of them couldn't ascend. The only thing that they could do now was to fight Jiang Chen. Should they fail, they would meet a tragic end, just like Fifth Ancestor.

“This brat has become very powerful. We need to be extra careful. Perhaps there's still hope if we unite.” First Ancestor said grimly.

After his exchange with Jiang Chen, he truly felt the power of Jiang Chen. None of them, not even he—a peak early-stage Human Immortal—could stand a chance against Jiang Chen unless the four of them combined their strengths.

Hong... *Hong...*

The four ancestors were infuriated. They unleashed all of their Qi and powerful combat weapons materialized in their hands. These weapons were infused with Immortal Qi. Their combat power and damage was surely incomparable to any Great Saint Weapon.

However, this fact applied to anyone excepte Jiang Chen. His current completed Heavenly Saint Sword was no doubt the greatest Combat Weapon throughout the entire Saint Origin World, which was surely enough to deal with Immortal Weapons.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen made the first move, leaving the four Human Immortals unable to react. By combining the Spatial Shift and Flaming Wings, his movement became so fast and unpredictable. This time, his target was Fourth Ancestor.

Chapter 1050 - The First Man in Saint Origin World

Jiang Chen moved too fast, so fast that he made First Ancestor look slow. He was just seconds away from Fourth Ancestor. The other three ancestors felt that they couldn't react in time.

“Watch out Fourth Brother!”

First Ancestor screamed in alarm.

Clang!

However, the warning didn't help much. The Heavenly Saint Sword let out a sharp howl, and what approached Fourth Ancestor was a patch of sword net sealing him inside like a cage.

He!

Fourth Ancestor bellowed. He was highly confident because he was an early-stage Human Immortal expert, after all. He channeled all the energy into his Combat Weapon before swiping it against Jiang Chen's.

Clang!

The collision between two horrific Super Weapons produced a large spark, crushing the void around.

“Argh!”

With a horrible wail, the Combat Weapon left his grip and his arm exploded into a mist of blood. He was in a complete daze. You could never understand the scariness of Jiang Chen until you fought him. So, Fourth Ancestor now understood the reason Fifth Ancestor died just now. An intense fear was stirred up from the bottom of his heart. That was the Qi of death which he had never felt before.

“Humph! Go to hell.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. He made another swipe with the Heavenly Saint Sword, not giving Fourth Ancestor the chance to react, slashing him into two halves. Similarly, the Immortal Soul was plucked and kept by Jiang Chen.

Fourth Ancestor died in just a few blinks of the eye. The scene was so astounding. The onlookers couldn't hide the terror in their eyes. All of them felt as if this would only happen in dreams, those godlike Human Immortals were being killed so easily, just like slaughtering chickens.

“His power has exceeded the peak in his previous life. the five ancestors of Desolate Palace will surely die today.”

Ancestor Greenlotus revealed a hint of a smile at corner of his mouth. He understood Jiang Chen very well, especially the previous Jiang Chen when he was still the World's Greatest Saint. The ability to kill Human Immortal so easily brought him to a peak even higher than his past. He was the only one who could do this under the heavens.

The successive death of Fifth and Fourth Ancestor freaked the other three out, including First Ancestor who was the strongest Human Immortal among them.

“This man is beyond our capability. We must flee at once and ascend to the Immortal World, but first, we must leave Saint Origin Palace and range of the Immortal Mark.”

First Ancestor said to the other two ancestors decisively. He was certain that he could no longer defeat Jiang Chen unless he advanced to the middle-stage of the Human Immortal realm, which was kind of impossible in Saint Origin World as it only contained Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi.

As such, their only option was left to flee for their lives, and ascend to the Immortal World. Now that the entire Saint Origin Palace had been affected by the Immortal Mark, they had to leave this place so that the force of the Immortal World could sense their

presence once more.

Hua La.....

Before First Ancestor's tone faded, Jiang Chen's Five Elemental Power Spheres spread out across them, like an invisible net, shrouding the three of them within. It would be a joke if Jiang Chen allow them to escape at this critical moment.

"Listen up! I won't grant you all a very good end now that you've fallen into my hands. Plus, I will leave none of your Desolate experts alive."

Jiang Chen's Qi soared skywards, domineeringly. His ruthless words stunned the three old ancestors.

Aside from whether they could escape from the Jiang Chen's, he was radiating an imposing aura that wanted to eliminate every single living thing perished the thought of fleeing in their heads. As the old ancestors of Desolate Palace, it was frustrating enough for them to flee and leave their juniors behind, but if their escape annihilate their entire palace, they would certainly be traumatized by the loss.

"Jiang Chen, you are being really ruthless. We, Desolate Palace are willing to surrender to you. Let us go so we can ascend to the Immortal World. From then on, the whole Saint Origin World will be under your control. Don't go any further than that."

First Ancestor said. Given his status, only the Heavens know how difficult it was for him to say such words. Now, these ancestors had the feeling of spurting out blood, their hundred-year-old plan was ruined by a single man.

Besides that, they also regretted deeply not killing Jiang Chen when they still had the chance. Today's disaster wouldn't have happened if they hadn't let him grow so much.

Even if they kept Jiang Chen alive until the end, they shouldn't have let Ancestor Greenlotus meet Jiang Chen before he was

executed. They would then be able to continue their rule of Saint Origin World, it was relatively nothing to a Human Immortal to rebuild their forces even if they would have to spend another hundred years.

Too bad, everything was too late. There were many kinds of medicines and pills in this world, even pills that could revive the dead, but there is no pill that can cure regret. No one would be able to get such a pill no matter how much fortune and heavenly materials they have.

“Cut the crap and die.”

Jiang Chen didn't want to bother with First Ancestor's nonsense. He held his sword and lunged towards Third Ancestor.

The combination of the Flaming Wings and Spatial Shift created a perfect movement with terrifying speed. With addition of Jiang Chen's cultivation base, none of the ancestors was a match for him.

“Argh.....”

The panicking Third Ancestor was definitely no match for him. With a jab on the skull, Third Ancestor died without having the time to react, and his Immortal Soul and Combat Weapon were taken away by Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

Instead of stopping, Jiang Chen appeared before Second Ancestor like a ghost, slashing out countless streams of sword light that encompassed Second Ancestor, his fate had already fallen into Jiang Chen's hands.

Pu Chi!

The Heavenly Saint Sword was indestructible and razor-sharp, cutting the body in half with a slash. Likewise, the Immortal Soul and Combat Weapon were kept by Jiang Chen.

After taking down Third and Second Ancestor, only First Ancestor was left inside the Five Elemental Power Spheres. Of course, this almighty First Ancestor had already turned into a weakling before Jiang Chen.

Seeing Jiang Chen coming close to him, his face turned ashen. It gave him the feeling that he was confronting the god of death. When he saw his four brothers die, the inside of heart was surging. If Fifth Ancestor was still alive, he would've cursed outrageously.

Desolate Palace was managed by Fifth Ancestor previously, but he didn't put the monstrous genius, Jiang Chen in his eyes, which gave Jiang Chen plenty of time to grow. Not only that, he was also the one who suggested to uncover the secrets inside Jiang Chen's body and asked Ancestor Greenlotus' help. If it wasn't for his mistakes, Jiang Chen would've died long ago.

Unfortunately, the regret that he was feeling right now was useless, Jiang Chen had already grown to a level where they could no longer compete, they could only look him in awe.

"Haha.....Jiang Chen, I had never thought that someone as monstrous as you will emerge in Saint Origin World and ruin The hundred-year-old plan of Desolate Palace. Sad."

First Ancestor laughed melancholically.

"There are still many things you didn't think of. Your Desolate Palace would've been peaceful and fine if you didn't mess with me."

Said Jiang Chen flatly.

"Jiang Chen, I know that you will send me to hell no matter what. However, I beg you to do one thing for me."

First Ancestor said. He was smart enough to know that any resistance against Jiang Chen would only be pointless.

"I am not going to promise you anything, but I will give you the chance to speak up."

Said Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, I know that you aren’t a bloodthirsty devil despite your ruthlessness. I hope that you can give my people a chance to survive after I’m gone.”

First Ancestor said in a pleading tone. His fate had already been decided, but as the old ancestor of Desolate Palace, he needed to make sure the survival of his descendants. Otherwise, he wouldn’t die in peace.

“I know what I should do with Desolate Palace. It’s not up to anybody to decide my actions.”

Said Jiang Chen. All of a sudden, his murderous intent soared to the peak and a slash landed on First Ancestor’s neck.

“Old ancestor!.”

The five ancestors of Desolate Palace had fallen under Jiang Chen’s sword. A mood of melancholy descended upon everyone in Desolate Palace.

It was over. Desolate Palace was finished after years of dominance. Even if Jiang Chen let them live, he would not allow Desolate Palace to restore its power once again. From now on, he would be the first man in Saint Origin World.

Chapter 1051 - New Structure

The scene turned so silent that not even their breaths could be heard. Jiang Chen had returned to his human form wearing a snowy white clothes. The natural cold breeze in the air fluttered his dark hair as he stood in the void, making him look like an awe-inspiring War God.

That was an unreachable impression that made him the only godlike figure of the world.

He kept his Qi and came to Ancestor Greenlotus in a flash.

“Greenlotus, now that you’re free, I believe you will rise to the Immortal World soon,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“It will take not more than three days.” Ancestor Greenlotus said confidently.

His eyes paused and looked at Jiang Chen, and continued, “Brother, given your foundation and your cultivation base. I also believe that you will ascend to the Immortal World in no time.”

“I’m not in a hurry as there are still many things I haven’t settled in Saint Origin World. I would like to stay for a little longer.” Jiang Chen said smilingly.

He wasn’t anxious in becoming a Human Immortal. Though there’s only 500 dragon marks left, it would still take him a certain amount of time to advance. Besides, there were many things that he needed to deal with in Saint Origin World. Now that the whole Saint Origin World was under his control, he needed to spend some time with his family. He felt a trace of guilt thinking about how much he’s been missing his father, Jiang Zhenhai.

“What are you going to do with these Desolate experts?” asked Ancestor Greenlotus.

“They aren’t officially guilty and I’m not really a bloodthirsty monster. But, given the situation now, some compromises are

needed...” replied Jiang Chen.

Regarding the remaining people of Desolate Palace, he didn't intend to massacre them. It's against his conscience. After the huge war, the forces of the eight palaces had been scattered and some had even lost their leaders. Therefore, it was necessary for him to make adjustments to solve the present situation.

“Jiang Chen, what's in your mind?” Gu Firmament neared Jiang Chen and asked.

By now, either it was Gu Palace, Demon Palace or Bin Palace, all of them had regarded Jiang Chen as their commander, because their lives were saved by him. Without his presence, many of them would die.

“I have it figured out. The creation of Saint Origin Palace is a mistake. Though it is connected to Saint Origin World, it is just a place of ruins. And it shouldn't be the place that only connects to the passageway of Immortal World. From today onwards, all eight palaces will return to Pure Land. I will personally destroy this whole place. As for the major powers in Pure Land, it will remain like before; the eight major families will still remain. But I'm going to build a Martial Saint Dynasty in Saint Origin World, and it will act as the absolute authority in this world. Every one of the major families is bound to obey the commands and assignments given by Martial Saint Dynasty. In this way, all eight major families will be united and no family will ever attempt to rule the world,” said Jiang Chen.

He wasn't a man of hegemony and imperialism, but if he failed to unite all the major powers in Pure Land now, chaotic battles similar to today's would take place in the future. As he didn't wish to see such an event happening after he had entered a higher realm in the Immortal World and in order to ensure the safety of his families and friends, he had to make sure Saint Origin World listened to only one authority.

“En, this is a good idea. Saint Origin Palace shouldn’t exist. With the presence of Martial Saint Dynasty, I believe the situation in Saint Origin World will remain peaceful and stable in times to come.” Ancestor Greenlotus praised and nodded.

“Brother Jiang has saved all of our lives. We of the Bin Palace will be the first to support your idea of making Martial Saint Dynasty the absolute authority, and all of our future generations will be loyal to it.”

Bin Changxiao was the first to voice out his approval. With Jiang Chen’s ability and power, it was too easy to build a dynasty of his own to unite all the major powers in Saint Origin World.

“That’s right. Establishing a dynasty is going to be a historical moment. We agree to what Brother Jiang had said for he had saved all of us during the chaos. Besides, Martial Saint Dynasty will bring lots of benefits to the future development of Saint Origin World.” Heavenly Peng King said.

It was soul-stirring to have experienced the recent life-or-death events. But it had made them see through a lots of things. They would never defy Jiang Chen even in the slightest for he had saved them so many times.

“We, Gu Palace, will never disagree with Jiang Chen’s decision. What he suggested will save the whole world. Plus, he is now the strongest man in Saint Origin World. He has all the rights to do whatever he can. Gu Palace will support his idea of establishing Martial Saint Dynasty without hesitation.”

Gu Firmament nodded. Not just him but also the others were changing their views on things after their near-death situation, which changed the culture of the entire major clans.

Jiang Chen’s body shook and he came above the experts of Desolate Palace. “Desolate, Narang, Huo, Shi and Dan Palace, the Heaven will spare the life of the good. I, Jiang Chen, am not a bloodthirsty devil. Though you have lost the battle, I won’t kill

any of you or force you all to sign any kind of submissive contract. I won't regard any of you as slaves either. From now on, Saint Origin Palace will cease to exist. All of you must return to Pure Land, to your respective families. I will build a whole new dynasty named Martial Saint Dynasty that will truly rule all the major powers of Saint Origin World. Also, every expert of the eight major families will become citizens of the dynasty."

Jiang Chen's words reverberated like thunder. His tone was indisputable, there was no room for discussion. Or perhaps he wasn't intending to give the five major palaces the chance to voice their opinions because they didn't have such qualification.

The people of the five major palaces remained silent. All four major palaces except for Desolate Palace didn't have grudge against this as their fates had fallen into another clan's hands the moment they had surrendered themselves. So, there wasn't much difference between having Desolate Palace as their ruler or Martial Saint Dynasty.

No, the difference was still great. At that time, Desolate Palace regarded them as slaves whereas Jiang Chen gave them the rights to live like normal individuals and they could return to their family in Pure Land, though they had to become citizens of Martial Saint Dynasty. Judging from this aspect, Jiang Chen was their savior and they should be grateful for him. So how could they possibly have the courage to express dissatisfaction to him?

As for Desolate Palace, it was impossible to say that they had forgotten all the grudges and vengeance when he had slaughtered all of their higher ups. However, that was no longer important given the present situation, because they didn't even have the right to hate him now.

It was an act of compassion and kindness by allowing them to return to their family in Pure Land and lead a normal life. They should not complain or protest unless they wanted to force Jiang Chen annihilate the entire clan.

From his previous ruthless killings, he could eliminate all of them at his will.

After establishing Martial Saint Dynasty, he wouldn't fear that Desolate Palace would take revenge on them. With his own techniques and knowledge, the massive amount of pills, Combat Weapons, Combat Techniques he had and the help of Gu, Demon and Bin Palace, it was feasible that the forces of Martial Saint Dynasty would become impeccable.

"Little Chen, where have you decided to build Martial Saint Dynasty?" asked Han Yan.

"I will pick Nebula Sect. It isn't necessarily to build it in Pure Land. Besides, I was a disciple of Nebula Sect once," said Jiang Chen.

"Little Chen, I suppose a king is needed in the dynasty. I wonder if you have a candidate in mind," inquired Tyrant.

Jiang Chen lowered his head in contemplation. Han Yan and Tyrant certainly wouldn't be a king long enough to bring changes to the world as their talent would allow them to rise to the Immortal World faster than any other living being. As for his dad, it wasn't suitable either given his weak cultivation base. Moreover, none of the former members of Martial Saint Dynasty were qualified to become a king. The position consisted of the highest responsibility. Although the king would receive aid and guidance from the eight major families, the king himself must be competent and capable.

After a long moment of thought, he found the most suitable candidate.

"I think it will be Ah Nan. He's going to have a good time."

Jiang Chen beamed. Nangong Wentian had never appeared ever since he went into seclusion back in Nebula Sect. Though he was talented, he didn't have the heaven defying abilities like Han Yan

and Tyrant.

There was a saying that said: ‘Don’t let one’s own fertile water to flow into other people’s field’. Naturally none of them opposed the idea.

“Haha! This guy will become a good emperor!” Han Yan chuckled.

On the same day, Jiang Chen, Ancestor Greenlotus and all the half-step Human Immortals of the three palaces destroyed the Saint Origin Palace with their joint strength. All the experts of the eight palaces had returned to Pure Land. Finally, the hundred-year-old hegemonic Saint Origin Palace had vanished from the world and what was left was only its history.

The Saint Origin Palace was built because of Jiang Chen. It was destroyed also because of him. This might be what they called ‘karma’. Jiang Chen had left a hundred-year-old of history in Saint Origin World ever since he had fallen.

Chapter 1052 - The Ascent of Ancestor Greenlotus

Gu Family!

After destroying Saint Origin Palace, Jiang Chen and the others returned to Gu Family. Meanwhile, the process of building Martial Saint Dynasty had already began, which was too quick and sudden for the Gu Family. Gu Xuantian was in fear, seeing so many experts coming back from Saint Origin Palace.

The extermination of Desolate Palace and the other events that took place in Saint Origin Palace sounded like a dream to everyone in the Pure Land. From this, it showed that Pure Land and Saint Origin Palace had been disjointed for a long time. However, from this point onwards, such disconnection wouldn't exist anymore. The palaces in Saint Origin Palace had returned to the Pure Land, back to their respective families.

Without a doubt, Jiang Chen, the one who created a lot of glorious events in the Pure Land, was mentioned in all conversations and discussions, but none of those who knew Jiang Chen imagined that he could grow so rapidly. It was only not long ago when Gu Xuantian sent him to Gu Palace. They couldn't figure how he advanced to such horrifying level given such a short period of time. Plus, the news of him killing Human Immortals with his peak Ninth Grade Great Saint cultivation boiled their blood even though they didn't witness it with their own eyes.

The reason Jiang Chen stayed in Gu Palace was simple. It was because the people of Martial Saint Dynasty was there, including all his families and friends, like Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Chenyu, Wu Ningzhu, Yu Zihan, Wu Jiu and other old friends in Eastern Continent.

The undeniable fact about these people was that all of them had great improvements during their stay in the Pure Land. After

receiving so many high quality cultivation resources from Gu Family, it was impossible for them not to make any progress in cultivation.

They would gain access to even greater cultivation resources after the new Martial Saint Dynasty was established. Every one of them was a core member of the dynasty. Although their cultivation base was very far from the level of the eight major families, it wasn't impossible for them to catch up to the level of these major powers, for example, with all the great resources Yu Zihan didn't have previously, he was still able to reach such a cultivation and would soon break through into the Great Saint realm.

The atmosphere in Gu Palace was lively and bustling, while Han Yan had brought the army of devils back to the Devil World. After obtaining the Supreme Devil Wand, every single devil was now under his control. Thus, the devil army would never wage war on Saint Origin World again.

Jiang Chen had created a secluded spatial zone. He entered seclusion along with Big Yellow. To him, saving Big Yellow was the most important thing right now. Though Big Yellow wouldn't die because of the support of the Divine Beast Bloodline in his body, he still suffered a very severe injury after burning his own bloodline.

However, that wasn't a tough problem for Jiang Chen. He was now holding the Immortal Souls of those five Human Immortals. These souls contained tremendous amount of energy. As a human, he wouldn't be able to refine these souls like how he refined demon souls, but it was a different case for Big Yellow.

Five Immortal Souls.... If Big Yellow could refine all of them, it would be enough for him to recover. Not only that, his cultivation might even advance to another level. In the near future, he would ascend to the Immortal World and join Jiang Chen.

“Big Yellow, I have known you the longest. You have saved my

life twice even if the cost was high. In my heart, I have always regarded you as my closest brother even if you aren't a human. However, I won't believe that a stupid dog like you will die so easily. Here are five Immortal Souls. I hope that you can recover soon."

Jiang Chen said with a faint smile, staring at Big Yellow that was lying in front of him. Even though Big Yellow was badly injured, what he did was worthwhile, Jiang Chen had become the strongest man in Saint Origin World. No one would ever come to disturb or threaten them and their friends. Their safety was now ensured.

Hua La.....

With a wave of his hand, five dazzling Immortal Souls flew out, hovering above Big Yellow's head. A gust of energy erupted out of his hands onto the five Immortal Souls, causing them to burst into brilliance and wrapped around the entire body of Big Yellow.

Jiang Chen was so skillful that he was constantly striking out seals to lock all the Qi of the Immortal Souls, and prevent any of it from escaping. Then, it started to race into Big Yellow's body.

At the same time, Jiang Chen struck out a large amount of wood essence. It could not only heal himself but also other person. Moreover, its healing effect was greater than any divine pill under the Heavens.

However, due to the severity of Big Yellow's injury, it wasn't easy to heal him within a short period of time even with the help of wood essence and Immortal Souls. It would need at least a month's time for him to regain consciousness.

In Gu Family, Ancestor Greenlotus and Tyrant had not left yet. When Great Monk Ran Feng received the news about Ancestor Greenlotus, he immediately flew over to the Pure Land.

In a cultivation venue specially prepared by Gu Family for Ancestor Greenlotus, the three of them reunited for the first time.

“Master.”

Great Monk Ran Feng fell to his knees with a puff before Ancestor Greenlotus. His eyes grew misty. The relationship between him and his master was similar to the relationship between him and Tyrant; he had always regarded Ancestor Greenlotus as his father. He had waited bitterly for his master for more than a hundred years despite everyone claiming that his master was long dead. He didn't believe that his master would die just like that. At last, his hundred years of wait paid off, the feeling he have right now was too much and profound for anyone to express.

“Ran Feng, you have grown old.”

Ancestor Greenlotus bent over and held him up. His eyes were filled with kindness. Even Though he was a monk, he regarded his apprentice like his son and he only accepted one apprentice in his lifetime. This showed that the bond between the two of them was beyond any kind of comparison.

It had been more than a hundred years. The moment Ancestor Greenlotus was imprisoned, he had lost his hope that he would ever see light again. As such, seeing his own apprentice again made him overjoyed.

“I didn't expect that I'm able to see master again. I will have no more regrets even if I die now.”

Great Monk Ran Feng wiped the tears off his eyes. He couldn't remain calm due to the overwhelming emotions.

“Tyrant, come over and kowtow before your grandmaster.”

Said Great Monk Ran Feng.

Without hesitation, Tyrant strode forward, fell to his knees and kowtowed three times. In front of Ancestor Greenlotus, he wouldn't dare to show any sign of disrespect, in his heart, Ancestor Greenlotus was his master's master and his real idol.

All these years, he had lost count of how many times he had kowtowed in front of the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus. So, having the chance to kowtow before the real Ancestor Greenlotus exhilarated him very much.

Furthermore, he didn't forget that this was the eminent monk who crushed his own Immortal Soul and fused it with the Sarira. If it wasn't for him, he wouldn't have achieved this much and played a vital role in fighting against Desolate Palace.

To put it bluntly, today's situation wouldn't be as favorable as it seemed if it wasn't for Ancestor Greenlotus. Jiang Chen might still be in the state of madness and would've been killed by the five ancestors eventually.

“En, get to your feet.”

Ancestor Greenlotus nodded, feeling quite satisfied with this disciple of Great Monk Ran Feng. Tyrant already had reached a very high cultivation base despite his young age. He was sure that Tyrant was one of the most outstanding geniuses like Jiang Chen; a miracle under the Heavens.

“Ran Feng, little monk, I will ascend to the Immortal World in two days' time. Before I ascend, I will impart the supreme scripture of Buddha Sect – the Great Compassion Mantra to the both of you. I believe that it will bring you tremendous benefits, especially to little monk, you have a very high comprehension. Your cultivation base will improve by leaps and bounds, pushing you to another great height. So, I think it won't be too long before you ascend to the Immortal World too.”

Spoke Ancestor Greenlotus, highly regarding Tyrant's talent. With his eyesight, he was able to discern Tyrant's extraordinary comprehension skill. He even had to admit that Tyrant's talent was a notch higher than his. He was certain that this young monk was bound to have limitless achievements and might surpass his level.

After listening to Ancestor Greenlotus, both Great Monk Ran Feng and Tyrant felt incomparably excited. Being monks of Buddha Sect, it was impossible for them not to feel interested in the Great Compassion Mantra. However, Great Monk Ran Feng's emotion was different from Tyrant's. Instead of pure excitement and delight, he also felt a sense of sadness knowing that his master was going to part once again.

However, after a moment of contemplation, he understood the reason behind it. His master had already surpassed the Mortal realm and should've ascended to the Immortal World a hundred years ago. So, it would be a great loss if his master continued to stay stagnant in Saint Origin World.

"Ran Feng, there's no need to feel sad. It's a good thing that I'm ascending to another world. You should feel glad for me." Said Ancestor Greenlotus with a smile.

"Yes, master." Replied Great Monk Ran Feng with a bow.

"Well, I will teach you all the Great Compassion Mantra now. I will only tell you the how to use it. The success rate will depend on your comprehension ability and your luck."

Later, Ancestor Greenlotus imparted the content of the supreme scripture to both Tyrant and Great Monk Ran Feng. This would be the greatest gift that he could ever give them before he left.

Two days later, the void outside of Gu Family was filled with lightning and dark clouds. The thunder even shook the Pure Land. Many cultivators felt suffocated under such pressure.

Jiang Chen, who was treating Big Yellow, stopped immediately when he sensed the pressure.

"Greenlotus is ascending. I need to take a look at it. This is the Immortal Tribulation that I'm going to confront soon."

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled and he vanished in a flash.

Chapter 1053 - The Last Three Days

Hong Long Long...

The horrifying thunder strikes spread out for miles. Every thunderbolt was earth-shattering and frightening. This was the great Immortal Tribulation that was extremely rare to most people. At the present moment, countless pairs of eyes were fixing on that sea of lightning. Despite the distance, they still felt suffocated by the pressure of the thunderbolts.

Under the sea of lightning stood a figure glowing with golden Buddha light, making him like an invincible Buddha. The aura he emitted aroused people's reverence. It indicated that he was a peerless eminent monk and a true Buddha.

That wasn't the silhouette of anyone other than Ancestor Greenlotus. This was his heavenly tribulation. He stood very calmly below the dark clouds; there wasn't a sign of panic detected from his eyes. Instead, he felt very excited that he had the chance to experience similar tribulation like that of 100 years ago. In other words, he had finally arrived at the day that he would ascend to the high and mighty Immortal World.

Great Monk Ran Feng and Tyrant were both staring at him unblinkingly, particularly Great Monk Ran Feng who looked even more excited than Ancestor Greenlotus.

"There's no need to be too nervous, Great Master. You will have this day in the future."

Jiang Chen appeared at the side of Great Monk Ran Feng out of nowhere and then said with a smile while gazing at Ancestor Greenlotus.

"Brother Jiang, I think you will ascend to the Immortal World too very soon and will be the youngest to become an Immortal. ."

Great Monk Ran Feng looked over at Jiang Chen with earnest

appreciation. From now it seemed that he had made the wisest decision by befriending Jiang Chen. If he only placed his hopes on Tyrant, he had no idea how long it would take for him to see his master again or perhaps he wouldn't have such a chance at all. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, Ancestor Greenlotus wouldn't be able to reunite with them and ascend to the Immortal World.

"You are right. I will be ascending soon. I'm afraid another month's time will do," said Jiang Chen, nodding.

His understanding of dragon transformation skill was getting better, allowing him to predict his own progress. As for the last 500 dragon marks, he could condense them depending fully on his enlightenment. He estimated that it would take him roughly a month's time to rise to the Immortal World.

Regarding the Immortal World, he and Ancestor Greenlotus had similar thought. Both of them had waited for 100 years just to ascend to the new world. If he wasn't killed after he slashed open the gates of the Immortal World, he would've become one of the Immortals in the legendary world.

"Another month's time..." Tyrant muttered.

What Jiang Chen said made him feel a great amount of pressure. Though his cultivation base wasn't weak, he thought that it was simply impossible to ascend to the Immortal World in just a month's time. But with the help of Great Compassion Mantra that would push his cultivation base by leaps and bounds, he believed that he was not too far away after Jiang Chen had ascended to the Immortal World.

Hong Long...

Thunder rolled through the sky and lightning struck downwards like countless branches of electric sparks, encompassing Ancestor Greenlotus entirely in the sea of lightning. The scariness of the Immortal Tribulation was no doubt far worse than the Saint Tribulation. Aside from its destructive lightning, its horrifying and

overbearing pressure would devour the innermost soul of the tribulation bearer.

“Immortal Tribulation surely isn’t comparable to Saint Tribulation. Judging from our current cultivation base, it is possible that we will face the same kind of tribulation in the future. It is very good that we are able to watch Ancestor Greenlotus experiencing the tribulation. This will help us prepare before confronting our own Immortal Tribulation,” said a half-step Human Immortal of Gu Family.

“That’s right. To become a true Human Immortal, we will have to ascend to the Immortal World. This has been our objective in our road of cultivation.” Another half-step Human Immortal of Demon Race said.

To them, staying in Saint Origin World was no longer meaningful. There was endless of checkpoints in the cultivation road, but none of them would stop moving forward.

It took exactly twenty minutes to end the tribulation of Ancestor Greenlotus. There wasn’t any accident. Then, a ray of brilliant light descended from the sky, encompassing Ancestor Greenlotus before it turned into an illusory passageway that would lead to nowhere.

“Brother Jiang Chen, I will wait for you in the Immortal World.”

Ancestor Greenlotus vanished in an instant after leaving his last words for Jiang Chen.

The dark clouds that blotted the sky were gone. Ancestor Greenlotus had ascended to the Immortal World, leaving only his legends behind. Though no one had ever been to Immortal World, they were certain that it must be a massive and incomparable world.

The ascent of Ancestor Greenlotus had stirred up lots of people. It had given them a new objective that Great Saint realm was no

longer the end point but the starting point.

In the following days, Martial Saint Dynasty was in the making. In order to become the first dynasty of Saint Origin World, it was necessary to rebuild the entire Martial Saint Dynasty in Nebula Sect, making Nebula Sect a very important place in the world. This had made Nebula Kidd very happy and grateful for making the right choice at the very beginning.

Instead of visiting numerous places, Jiang Chen stayed in the Lan Ning World as though this place had become one of his garden while he was treating Big Yellow's injuries and comprehending the dragon transformation skill with his calm mind, causing his cultivation base to improve gradually.

In addition, he had also spent most of his time with his family. During this period of time, Lan Ling World was filled with laughter and noises. Jiang Zhenhai was smiling all day as his two filial daughters-in-law, Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu, was: one had been serving tea and the other had been massaging his back daily.

To put it bluntly, Jiang Zhenhai was currently the supreme overlord in the whole Saint Origin World because he was Jiang Chen's father. No one would dare to trifle with him even if Jiang Chen had ascended to the Immortal World. Even the half-step Human Immortals would show their respect and smiling faces to him.

But then, such a good time wouldn't last for long. About a month's time passed very quickly. Today, some very powerful energy waves erupted from a spatial zone in Lan Ling World.

"It's Big Yellow."

Jiang Chen looked rejoiced. The huge energy came from the spatial zone where Big Yellow was recuperating. After a month's time, Big Yellow finally had absorbed all the Immortal Souls and come to life.

Roar...

An earth-shaking roar sounded, and then Big Yellow flew out of the spatial zone and hovered in the void. Colorful lights were radiated from his huge and majestic body. He looked divine with pieces of golden scales covering his body. Three horns had appeared on top of his forehead, making him look like the embryonic form of Dragon-Horse. But this form disappeared very quickly and he returned to his usual dog look. This made the others doubt if he was pretending to be the legendary divine Dragon-Horse.

“That’s amazing! I’m afraid Big Yellow has reached the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint?” said Yan Chenyu in surprise.

“Not just the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint, he has absorbed five Immortal souls which allows him to comprehend the law of the Immortal World. If I’m not wrong, he can initiate the Immortal Tribulation at any time and ascend to the Immortal World.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered and he sounded incomparably excited, though it was a situation he anticipated a month ago. One should know that the massive energy of the five Immortal souls would bring Big Yellow unimaginable benefits. Therefore, it wasn’t uncommon that those energy would push Big Yellow’s cultivation base to the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint and even triggering the Immortal Tribulation.

“He is truly abnormal.”

Han Yan shook his head, feeling speechless. He and Tyrant had went into seclusion during this period of time in order to catch up with Jiang Chen’s footsteps. It was beyond their imagination that Big Yellow had gotten ahead of them so quickly.

Everyone assembled and looked up, studying the changes in Big Yellow. They felt relieved and happy that Big Yellow had fully recovered from his injuries and had made vast improvement in

cultivation.

“In three days’ time, Big Yellow and I will ascend to the Immortal World together,” said Jiang Chen abruptly.

As long as this word was heard, everyone was dumbfounded. Their faces darkened, especially the faces of Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu. Even though they had anticipated this day to come, they never expected it would come so fast.

It was a good thing that Jiang Chen was ascending to the Immortal World and they were supposed to feel happy for him, but there was a strong reluctance in their heart, making it hard to accept this great departure. They knew that this wasn’t a departure similar to any of the previous events. This was a goodbye that would last a long, long time.

“So soon?” Sighed Jiang Zhenhai.

“Dad, Xiao Yu, Sister Ning, Ah Yan, Tyrant, don’t feel sad about my departure. Ascending to the Immortal World is just another step forward in my path. Given your cultivation base, it is only a matter of time before you join me in the Immortal World. As such, this is going to a brief departure. Big Yellow and I will wait for you all in the Immortal World. In fact, we are just doing you all a favor by being the first to set foot in the Immortal World,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

He fully understood their current mood but he couldn’t delay his ascent to the Immortal World. He had already set the date that in three days’ time, the number of dragon marks in his body would reach 100,000, which was the day when both he and Big Yellow would ascend to the Immortal World. In this way, he wouldn’t feel lonely with Big Yellow as his company.

“Little Chen is right. This is only a brief separation. It won’t take long before we join them and fight side by side with one another in a battle and leave our mark in the new world, like how we produce our glorious events in Saint Origin World.”

Han Yan's Qi fluctuated.

Chapter 1054 - The Son of Dragon

In the past three days, Jiang Chen had secluded himself in a separated spatial zone. Now that the matters in Saint Origin World had been taken care of, what was left for him to do was to focus on his cultivation. Currently, with the number of dragon marks getting much closer to a hundred thousand, three days was definitely enough for him to advance.

Meanwhile, Han Yan, Tyrant, Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu had also gone into seclusion, trying hard to catch up with Jiang Chen's cultivation level. Despite their extraordinary talent, they needed to put in a hundred times more effort just to follow Jiang Chen's footsteps. After learning that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow would ascend to the Immortal World three days later, they worked very hard or else the gap between them would widen and they would become a burden for Jiang Chen once they ascend to the Immortal World.

Jiang Chen had put all his concentration on the dragon transformation skill. He looked incredibly divine with the phantom of a blood-red ancient dragon kept swirling around his body as if it was going to evolve into a real dragon any time.

Jiang Chen had reached a remarkable state where the dragon transformation skill was going to hit its peak. Strands of dragon marks began to condense automatically while his Qi Sea was expanding twofold its original size. Inside his Qi Sea, incessant dragon roars reverberated as though countless of dragons were lingering in there. It was absolutely unimaginable that he could create such a spectacular scene.

As the total number of dragon marks was approaching the 100,000 mark, he had gotten deeper understanding dragon transformation skill. He began to realize that the profundity of this skill was greater than what he could ever imagine.

“The dragon transformation skill is really a unique and peerless technique. When I first came in contact with this skill, I thought that 100,000 dragon marks was its limit. But now, it appears that I was badly mistaken. It is merely its early-stage. There is still a very long way to go before touching the true peak of the skill. Anyway, the stronger the skill becomes, the more beneficial it will be for me. My combat power will be even more terrifying after ascending to the Immortal World.”

Jiang Chen's eyes shimmered. His confidence in dragon transformation skill had increased further.

After reaching 100,000 dragon marks, he was going to turn into the true dragon form. Though his origin was still human, he possessed the True Dragon Bloodline. Plus, this was just the first step in the path of the dragon transformation skill.

“Reaching 100,000 will make me break through into the early-stage Human Immortal and the dragon transformation skill will undergo another round of metamorphosis, bringing me greater benefits such as pushing my level to mid-stage Human Immortal. If I'm not mistaken, the Immortal Tribulation will also provide another boost to my cultivation base, pushing myself further to the late-stage Human Immortal. If I really have reached that level, I no longer need to act passively when I'm in the Immortal World.”

A smile of confidence was seen at the corner of his mouth. This was the experience he had gathered along the way of his cultivation path. There was no doubt that the metamorphosis and the energy of the tribulation would let him advance by two grades.

Also, this would be a miracle if Jiang Chen reached the Immortal World with the cultivation base of late-stage Human Immortal, because it would definitely be harder to make an advancement after reaching the Human Immortal realm. It would surely shock numerous people after learning that he could leapfrog two levels.

Three days passed like a flash. Today, an ear-splitting roar burst

out of his body. At this time, he had condensed a total of 100,000 dragon marks.

“Haha! It transforms into a dragon and ascend to the sky when 100,000 dragon marks is reached!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. At this moment, he could feel countless of noble dragon Qi spewing out of his body. His bones started to change and the blood inside his body glowed brilliantly.

Roar...

A world-shaking dragon roar rumbled over the sky, followed by an enormous storm, drawing the attention of many people. Then they saw a blood-red dragon the size of a hundred meters hovering in the void.

It looked extremely powerful. No one knew how massive the energy was contained inside the dragon because its one casual move emitted so much energy that cracks appeared on the void.

“That’s the Qi of an all-powerful dragon! Could this be the true dragon in the legend?”

“Dragon is a sacred and divine being. No one has ever seen a true dragon in the history of Saint Origin World except for the aquatic dragons. Besides, I can sense a familiarity from this Qi. It must be Jiang Chen’s Qi as he could transform into a half-dragon form using a transformation technique. It must be him who has successfully transformed into a dragon, truly terrifying.”

“He is the son of dragon. It is a rare miracle that the rare genius Jiang Chen is also the son of dragon at the same time.”

.....

Many people exclaimed. All of them were shocked by the scene as nothing like this had never happened in Saint Origin World. It was truly spectacular to witness such a rare scene.

It was an auspicious omen to witness the descent of the son of

dragon. The appearance of such a being surely would bring infinite prosperity to Saint Origin World and Martial Saint Dynasty.

“This brat’s cultivation technique far exceeds everyone’s ability to comprehend. He has even evolved into a true dragon. It isn’t an exaggeration to call him the son of dragon despite his human origin.”

Big Yellow was astounded. He was the only person who knew about Jiang Chen’s secret but he had no idea how scary Jiang Chen’s cultivation technique was.

“Little Chen’s cultivation base has reached the early-stage Human Immortal but the tribulation hasn’t struck him yet. He must be using the Immortal Mark to block the traction force of the Immortal World.” Said Tyrant.

“His Qi is getting stronger as if he is going to break through into a higher realm. It won’t be impossible if he can break through into the mid-stage Human Immortal. He is truly a terrifying cultivator.”

Han Yan sighed, feeling speechless about his supernatural friend.

Currently, Jiang Chen had fallen into another profound state. With the help of the Immortal Mark, he could allow the dragon transformation skill to undergo metamorphosis first, pushing his cultivation base to the mid-stage Human Immortal, before he initiated the tribulation.

While he was absorbing the benefits of the metamorphosis, a message that said ‘The Advancement of Dragon Transformation Skill’ came pouring into his mind.

“Every advancement will require fifty thousand of dragon marks...”

He rolled his eyes in astonishment and disbelief after the message. It was ridiculous to condense 50,000 dragon marks before breaking through into another level, because in the Great Saint

realm, each advancement took only two thousand dragon marks. He could imagine how many dragon marks would be accumulated inside his Qi Sea when he had reached the peak of dragon transformation skill.

“But this is something acceptable as the gap between an Immortal and a Mortal is far too wide. It’s like the difference between Heaven and Earth. And every level in the Immortal realm is a giant leap. Judging from the benefits I will be receiving from the metamorphosis, it won’t be a problem for me to form another fifty thousand dragon marks,” said Jiang Chen.

The size of his Qi Sea had grown a hundred times bigger than before, making it look like an ocean of dragon marks and bloodline, while new dragon marks were forming like crazy.

110,000, 120,000, 130,000, 140 000 to 150 000 dragon marks!

The whole process took only a few minutes. And now, Jiang Chen’s cultivation base had broken through the mid-stage Human Immortal, reaching an unreachable level.

“It’s a pity that my true-dragon form doesn’t increase my combat strength more than ten times.”

He couldn’t help but sigh as the half-dragon form and true-dragon form gave the same level of strength. Nevertheless, with the tenfold combat strength, it was enough for him to eliminate an opponent one level higher than him.

There were quite a few secret techniques that could temporarily improve one’s strength, but they consisted of harmful consequences, and none of these techniques that could boost one’s strength by tenfold without any setbacks. It was considered rare and scary when one could boost the strength by three fold.

Therefore, it was a miracle that Jiang Chen was able to enhance his combat strength by tenfold without suffering any kind of side effects.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda buzzed when it reached the twelfth level of condensation. It was an unsophisticated pagoda with ancient talisman marks visible on its surface. It was also unimaginably solid and could be used as a peerless defense shield.

Heavenly Saint Sword, which had become the Immortal Weapon, and Ancestral Dragon Pagoda formed the perfect combination of offense and defense.

“Big Yellow, let’s initiate the tribulation together,” shouted Jiang Chen at Big Yellow who was standing below him.

“Wakaka! This is cool!”

Big Yellow laughed heartily and dashed skywards. If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen’s Immortal Mark, he should’ve been pulled by the traction force of the Immortal World as he had already reached early-stage Human Immortal.

Hong Long...

The instant Jiang Chen kept the Immortal Mark, the sky was overcast with thunderclouds. There were two pool of thunderclouds that looked different. Though both of them were initiating the tribulation simultaneously, they were both confronting it at two different spatial zones unless they wanted everything in a hundred mile radius destroyed.

Chapter 1055 - The Fatal Attack

Hong Long.....

The scene of the overcast sky where Jiang Chen and Big Yellow confronted the tribulation was exceedingly spectacular. It was totally incomparable to Ancestor Greenlotus' Immortal Tribulation. One of them was a super monstrous genius and the other was a demon with Divine Beast Bloodline. Each of the lighting strikes certainly was many folds greater than the lightning faced by any average Human Immortal monk.

Roar...

Big Yellow seemed as if he was bathing in the ocean of lightning. His magnificent body was spinning incessantly. Every time the lightning struck him, it only felt like an itch to him, totally harmless.

“Wakaka! This is nice!” Big Yellow yelled in excitement.

A day like this was surely very memorable and super exciting. After surviving through this, one would soar to the Heavens and to another world, like a butterfly breaking free of its cocoon.

To any cultivator who had the ability to initiate tribulation, the ocean of lightning could vastly improve their strength and power. Take Big Yellow, who possessed the Divine Beast Bloodline, for example, not just his combat strength would be improved, his physique would grow sturdier after experiencing the scary lightning strikes.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen had no idea what the tribulation he was facing was called, but he could sense that its power was at least two folds greater compared to Big Yellow's. Every lighting strike had the power to destroy the land below, turning it into ruins.

But then again, none of the strikes could deal any damage to him with his huge dragon body kept on swirling. Over the course of his

cultivation, he had gained a great deal of experience from all the lightning tribulations he had encountered. Plus, his body had been trained to absorb massive amount of lightning, which made him immune to any of these lightning strikes.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The Heavenly Saint Sword had turned completely into a divine-looking dragon sword that was spiralling around Jiang Chen. The light that radiated from the sword ripped the void apart. It was the Natal Weapon that had accompanied Jiang Chen in his past life and would continue to do the same in this life. Though it had only reached the Human Immortal realm before, the scariness of its power was beyond anyone's imagination.

“That's amazing! Jiang Chen's Lightning Tribulation is at least tenfold scarier than Ancestor Greenlotus'. I'm afraid that only he is capable of initiating and bearing such horrifying tribulation. If it had been us who is in his situation right now, I have no doubt that we would certainly die miserably in the ocean of lightning.”

“That's right. I was there when Ancestor Greenlotus initiated his tribulation, but it can't be compared to Jiang Chen's. He is bound to achieve infinite achievements in the future. I'm certain that he won't be an ordinary Human Immortal when he ascends to the Immortal World.”

“That's for sure. This man has great luck that will follow him for the rest of his life.”

.....

No one wasn't surprised, even for those half-step Human Immortal ancestors who had the clearest understanding about the cultivation in Human Immortal realm. They were able to determine Jiang Chen's terrifying talent just by looking at the power of the lightning tribulation. They were sure that he wouldn't be just like any mediocre Immortal who had just arrived in the new world.

At the moment, Jiang Chen was undergoing a unique kind of advancement under the lightning. Both his Heavenly Saint Sword and Ancestral Dragon Pagoda were being enhanced, particularly the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda which could devour massive amount of lightning and convert it into its own energy. It seemed like the Twelfth Level of the pagoda would be fully condensed the moment the tribulation ended.

Also, with the help of the tribulation, his cultivation was soaring unceasingly. The dragon marks in his body were condensing madly.

From 160 000, 170 000, 180 000, 190 000 until 200 000 dragon marks!

It lasted for 20 minutes and the total number of dragon marks in his body had reached the 200,000, pushing his cultivation to the late-stage Human Immortal. With this kind of power, he could resolve almost any danger that he would encounter.

Meanwhile, Big Yellow's tribulation had also reached its end. The overcast sky had returned to its usual color. Both of them were standing together, gazing down at the crowd below.

“Chen Er.”

“Brother Chen.”

“Little Chen.”

.....

Everyone, including Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Chenyu, Wu Ningzhu, Han Yan, Tyrant, Wu Jiu, Yu Zihan and Nangong Wentian and many more, became tense. They were his family and friends. They looked grim because they knew it was now the time for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to ascend to the other world.

Jiang Chen wasn't an irresolute and hesitant man. He wasn't emotionally affected when he decided to withdraw the Immortal Mark.

Hong Long...

Immediately after that, two golden columns of light radiated from above, encompassing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They were the passageway that would lead to the Immortal World. Soon, both of their bodies began to fade.

“Dad, forgive your unfilial son. Xiao Yu, Sister Ning, Ah Yan, Tyrant, Ah Nan, I will wait for you in Immortal World. Please help me take good care of Martial Saint Dynasty.”

They vanished completely after leaving his last words. Although they were gone forever, they had left an eternal mark and glory in this land. Jiang Chen’s name would certainly be an unforgettable symbol and history in this world.

After the both of them left, instead of having some small talk, all of them went back into seclusion. They had already set their next goal, to advance to the Immortal realm. They had to admit that their lives were going to be boring without Jiang Chen by their side. They loved to be with someone as passionate as Jiang Chen and have that adrenaline rush feeling once in a while. They had decided to follow Jiang Chen’s footsteps and be by his side, helping him create another world of their own the moment they arrived in the Immortal World.

.....

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow felt as if they had entered some kind of illusory tunnel. They let go of themselves, allowing the unseen force to push them upwards.

“I wonder how the Immortal World looks like. I’m getting really excited.” Jiang Chen’s eyes shone.

Since they had entered the passageway, he noticed that Big Yellow was in some sort of deep contemplation.

“Big Yellow, what’s bothering you?”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head.

“Nothing. I have recovered some of my old memories regarding the Immortal World. Would you like to hear something about it?”

Big Yellow smirked.

“You know some things about the Immortal World?”

Jiang Chen was stunned. Although Big Yellow possessed the complete Divine Beast Bloodline, he had never been to such a place. So how was it possible that he knew something related to it? Does he really have the primordial memory of the Immortal World?

However, Jiang Chen didn't ask about that. He wanted to hear what kind of things existed in Big Yellow's memory. After being reincarnated in Saint Origin World, he was like an all-powerful person who had everything under his control, but in the Immortal World, it was totally a new place to him.

“The vast Immortal World is too big for one to imagine, and Human Immortal is the lowest realm in this world. So, being a Human Immortal is no big deal in the Immortal World,” said Big Yellow solemnly.

Jiang Chen's expression changed after listening to Big Yellow. He had never thought that Human Immortals, who were godlike figures in Saint Origin World, was the most ordinary being in the Immortal World. This would certainly deal a mental blow to any expert who had just ascended to the Immortal World.

“There are many realms after Human Immortal realm such as Earth Immortal, Heaven Immortal, Divine Immortal, Golden Immortal realm, etc. We are reaching the end of the passageway. I will explain more when we are inside of the Immortal World,” said Big Yellow, but the passageway shook violently all of a sudden. Then, they started to see light at the end of the tunnel.

But at this moment, Jiang Chen felt an extremely dangerous Qi from the bottom of his heart before he saw a white-coloured light

fell on him from the top all of a sudden, like a sharp and indestructible blade cutting through the passageway. It seemed like its target Jiang Chen alone.

“Something’s wrong, Big Yellow, get away!”

Jiang Chen was startled. Even with his late-stage Human Immortal strength, he felt as powerless as an ant while confronting this light.

Because they were travelling in the same passageway, Big Yellow would be affected if he really was attacked. Immediately, Jiang Chen stretched out his arm to separate the passageway into two by force. In the blink of an eye, Big Yellow disappeared.

“Dammit! What the hell is going on?” Big Yellow cursed.

He had lost sight of Jiang Chen after being separated from the passageway. It was a pity that he couldn’t help even though he knew that Jiang Chen was currently facing an unprecedented danger.

Jiang Chen on the other side was locked down by the ray of light, not giving him the chance to escape.

“Son of a b*tch! Who’s trying to kill me? Could there be an enemy of mine even before I arrive in the Immortal World?”

Jiang Chen swore angrily. Clearly, someone was trying to take his life while he was ascending to the Immortal World. Without much thought, he summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to wrap his body.

Hong Long...

The so-called unbreakable Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was broken the moment the ray of light landed on it. Then, it continued, hitting onto Jiang Chen’s body.

Barf!

He spurted out a mouthful of blood. The damage of the Ancestral

Dragon Pagoda and the attack of the ray of light had dealt an unimaginable damage on his body.

He felt as if his soul was going to break as well, and he could die at any second. However, instead of killing him, the ray of light branded a mark in his innermost soul.

“This is a Soul Imprint. It seems like someone wasn’t trying to kill me, but only wanted to injure me badly. However, he can locate me any time with this thing inside my soul. In other words, someone will notice my presence the moment I arrive the Immortal World. Who is that someone?”

It took him a few moments to figure the motive behind the attack.

Chapter 1056 - The Terrifying Law of the World

Jiang Chen was currently in an extremely bad situation. That previous ray of light was enough to blow him to powder. Apparently, the attacker was trying to leave a brand in his innermost soul instead of killing him straightaway.

Even though he was still alive, he had suffered severe injuries and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been broken. It would take a certain amount of time for it to be fully rebuilt. With the backlash and the unprecedented injuries he had suffered, it wasn't an exaggeration to describe his current condition as life-threatening.

Using only the healing force of wood essence, his recovery was a lot slower. He also wasn't able to circulate the dragon transformation skill as both of his Qi and blood had been damaged. He initially thought that it would be a smooth-sailing process to ascend to the Immortal World. However, even before he reached the Immortal World, he was already attacked and was badly injured. With such a fragile condition, he was afraid that anyone in the Immortal World would be able to crush him to death.

"My injuries wasn't the scary part. That person who secretly attack me terrified me the most. I must seal the imprint that has been left inside my soul with the Immortal Mark, otherwise, I will be killed at any time."

Jiang Chen's shrewdness allowed him to understand the seriousness of the situation didn't lay on his injuries but on the Soul Imprint that was branded in his innermost soul. Clearly, there was someone in the Immortal World that didn't want him to live. So, if he failed to conceal the mark left by the attacker, his fate would fall into someone else's hands the moment he arrived in the Immortal World.

In this critical moment, the only practical thing to do was to use

the Immortal Mark in his body. Even if he wasn't sure where the Immortal Mark come from, he was positive that it should be able to conceal the Qi of the Soul Imprint, like how it concealed the Qi of the Human Immortals in Saint Origin World.

The instant the Soul Imprint was concealed by the Immortal Mark, in an enclosed miniature spatial zone somewhere in the center of the Immortal World, a good-looking blonde man changed his expression dramatically.

“Damn! The Soul Imprint has disappeared. I’ve no idea what means that man used to block my Soul Imprint. Humph! Even though you can get away with this, you can’t get away from me as long as you reach the Immortal World. It’s only a matter of time before I find you. I would like to see the man who had killed my incarnations looks like.”

Said the blond man coldly. Unimaginable pressure was emanated from all over his body. It even trembled the air around. His cultivation had already reached an unfathomable stage. Due to the Law of Immortal World being different from Saint Origin World, only experts who were Immortal King or above had the ability to manipulate the Laws of the Immortal World.

This blond man was without a doubt a scary being. If Jiang Chen were to meet this man in person, he would certainly be shocked, because this blonde man looked exactly like Nan Bei chao.

On the other side, after concealing the Soul Imprint with the Immortal Mark, Jiang Chen continued his ascent. Currently, he had lost all of his strength, completely exhausted. What he needed most right now was to sleep, so he closed his eyes.

It’s Nan Beichao. No one in the Immortal World will attack me besides him.

The instant he fell asleep, a name appeared in his mind. It was impossible for him to have made any enemy in a place which he hadn’t been to before, unless it was Nan Bei chao – the man who

had sent his incarnations to the Mortal World. He also thought that the true Nan Bei chao must be a very powerful Immortal in the Immortal World, or else, he wouldn't be able to sense Jiang Chen's existence and tried to kill him the moment he ascended from the Mortal World.

Bang!

He was rebounded off into a new world by some kind of spatial force from the passageway. All he could sense was the abundant amount of Immortal Qi, flowing through his body before he fell and blacked out.

.....

Hiss!

As he slowly regained his consciousness, he felt an acute pain that caused him to gasp for air, but he didn't open his eyes, he was too tired to do so. He guessed that the ground must be a land of rubble and stones. And judging from the damp atmosphere around, he imagined that this was some kind of a deserted place.

I should have arrived in the Immortal World. I wonder how long I have been unconscious. Let's find out what place is this.

In his heart, he was feeling somewhat grateful that he was still alive, that he didn't suffer any serious injury when he was still unconscious.

Due to his physique being too badly injured, he couldn't move. Then, his expression changed drastically when he unleashed his divine sense to explore the area.

What's going on? I'm a late-stage Human Immortal. Adding the Great Soul Derivation Technique, my divine sense must be exceedingly extraordinary, so how can my divine sense only cover a hundred radius of the area?

There was no way that he wouldn't be surprised about it. Given his current cultivation base, his divine sense was strong enough to

wrap around the entire Saint Origin World, he could even detect every single movement of every living creature. So, it was rather strange that his current divine sense could only cover a hundred mile radius.

However, he soon realised the different spatial structure of this world. It was nothing like Saint Origin World. The law of this world was incomparably firm and the spatial barrier was indestructible. Even if he had the power of a late stage Human Immortal, it wasn't enough for him to fly freely in the void, let alone penetrate the spatial zones.

“Damn! The Immortal World is too firm. No wonder Big Yellow said that Human Immortal realm is the lowest level in this world. According to the laws of this world, both Human Immortal and Earth Immortal experts won't be able to travel through the air unless one reached the Heaven Immortal realm. In that case, I still have the advantage.”

Jiang Chen concluded after sensing the laws of this world and guessed that only Heaven Immortal expert could fly through the air.

However, he wasn't an ordinary Human Immortal. He was equipped with the Flaming Wings which was enough to support his flight. Although he couldn't go very fast, it was more than enough to match general Human and Earth Immortals.

Moreover, his combat strength of late Human Immortal realm was powerful enough to kill any half-step or early Earth Immortal. He could even handle a middle stage Earth Immortal. If he used his dragon form, he could even kill a late stage Earth Immortal.

However, those were just his estimation. The current Jiang Chen surely wouldn't be able to do so after suffering such severe injuries. Now, even a Human Immortal could slaughter him easily.

“This is a land of ruins. This explained why I wasn't discovered by anyone during my coma. I have to recover as soon as possible,

otherwise, I won't be able to go anywhere in this world. And, if I encounter any demon beast, I will surely be dead. All my glory will be washed away if I become poop of a demon beast right after I arrive in the Immortal World." Jiang Chen smiled bitterly.

Chapter 1057 - Han Cong

Jiang Chen had no idea where he was right now, he didn't even have the strength to get up and his divine sense could only cover a hundred mile radius. What he knew was this place was full of rubble, like a wasteland that no one would want to go.

Now, there were two things which he wanted to do most. First was to heal his injuries and restore his strength. Immortal World wasn't a place like Saint Origin World. In this world, he was just an insignificant being with his present cultivation base. And also, with his current injuries, his life could be threatened by anyone he meet.

Second, it was to remove the Soul Imprint as soon as possible, though it wasn't an easy thing to do. He guessed that the one who attacked him must be some sort of an overlord figure in this world, and the imprint carried the attacker's consciousness and divine sense. But it was only a matter of time before his omnipotent dragon transformation skill refine it completely.

Furthermore, he estimated that after the refinement, he would obtain great benefits—probably advancing to another level.

Of course, the urgent task right now was to heal his injuries before refining anything.

If it had been someone else, it wouldn't have been possible for the person to recover in half a year's time even with the help of elixirs. Jiang Chen, however, could shorten the time by many folds.

The dragon transformation skill and wood essence weren't any kind of mediocre skill and element. They consisted of the most powerful healing ability in the Heaven and Earth, greater than any precious elixirs. So, it wouldn't be a problem for him to recover within a shorter period of time.

With my current condition, I'm afraid it will take seven days for me to fully recover. Luckily I'm located in this deserted land.

After that, he circulated the dragon transformation skill and channeled the wood essence to his limbs and other parts of his body, this immediately gave him a pleasant and comfortable feeling like receiving rainwater again after suffering a long period of drought.

Three days passed like a twinkle of an eye. He was still in a critical situation but he was a lot better now than three days before, at least now he could move, albeit not too much. Even though he now had restored his cultivation base, he still needed to recover and any attempt to battle would be very damaging

As his wounded physique slowly recovered, the broken Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was also being repaired gradually—up to five levels of the pagoda had been rebuilt.

Now his body no longer looked like a crippled man but he was still lying down on the ground, immobile. He took a deep breath of Immortal Qi and couldn't help sighing emotionally. "This place is densely filled with Immortal Qi, it is just like the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi in Saint Origin World. Cultivating in such an environment will allow even the most ordinary cultivator to advance to Human Immortal realm. It explains why Human Immortal and Earth Immortal are at the bottom of the pyramid."

He continued, "It's a pity that I have lost contact with Big Yellow, no idea where he is currently. He knows a lot about the Immortal World and he would be able to help me clear my doubts if he is here. At any rate, I need to achieve full recovery first before attempting to find out more about this world."

"Let's go. Hurry up! We can't afford any delay!"

At this moment, a rough voice was heard along with lumbering footsteps. Jiang Chen tensed and swept across the area with his divine sense. He found a group of seven or eight people in plain

clothes rushing their journey.

The leader was an middle-aged man of around 40 years of age. He looked incomparably buff, had a beard and the strongest cultivation base – half-step Earth Immortal. The other few were relatively younger. The youngest among them seemed even younger than 20 years old. They were not as strong as the leader. Most of them were merely mid-Human Immortal experts and two of them were late Human Immortal expert.

The thing moving in the middle of the group was a carriage covered with a yellow cloth. The fact that so many of them were staying so close to the carriage indicated that something was very precious in it.

“Chief, how many Immortal Meta Stones do you think we can exchange with this much of herbs?” asked one of the youth who seemed like fifteen or sixteen-year-old premature kid, but he wasn’t a weak cultivator. He’s a peak mid-Human Immortal. In a small area like this, he had to be the talented genius.

In the Immortal World, any ordinary person could reach the Human Immortal realm at the age of ten. Any advancement higher than that would be extremely hard to achieve. Besides, advancement and cultivation required large amount of resources. In some remote areas where resources were scarce, it was considered a very good achievement to reach the peak of mid Human Immortal realm at the age of fifteen or sixteen.

“I estimate that these herbs can be exchanged for a hundred pieces of Immortal Meta Stones. Ah Cong, I have brought you out this time to gain experience of the world. Don’t embarrass me when we arrive Yan City.”

The leader said in an indulging tone and smiled.

“That’s of course. I, Han Cong, am the number one genius of Han Village. How can I afford to create an embarrassing scene? My goal is to leave Han Village to further my cultivation in Yan City,” said

Han Cong proudly.

“Haha! Don’t get all over yourself. Yan City is a big place guarded by Heaven Immortals. You have to pay more attention to your impulsive behavior or else you will regret it after offending some serious expert in there.”

Someone laughed while the others snickered.

“Huh?! Chief, looks like someone is lying over there.”

The youth Han Cong yelped all of a sudden seeing a man on the ground at a near distance. The others turned towards the direction and saw the same thing.

“Let’s go over and look.”

The chief was striding towards Jiang Chen but Han Cong was the first to reach Jiang Chen with his speed.

Jiang Chen frowned slightly. The last thing he wanted right now was to be disturbed during at this critical stage of his recovery. Plus, he was clueless about the background of these people and whether they were a threat to him.

“He seemed to have suffered bad injuries,” said Han Cong.

“Forget it son, we still have our journey ahead of us.” Someone said.

“No way, I’ll ask him about it. We can’t let him die if we can save him.”

Han Cong was a warm-hearted person. He lowered his head and asked, “What’s your name and why are you here?”

Jiang Chen’s face was expressionless as his pair of eyes swept across these people. He totally ignored Han Cong’s questions. All he wanted was these people to leave him alone as quickly as possible.

“Hey! He is asking you a question! Are you deaf?!” Someone chided impatiently.

But Jiang Chen still remained silent.

“It seems he is either a mute or a fool. Let’s go, we’ll leave him here to his own business. We can’t afford to delay anymore. There are still three or four more days before we arrive in Yan City. Supervisor Huang will blame us if we are late.” Someone said.

“That’s right. We don’t even know this man. We don’t have to care about him.”

The rest of them clearly weren’t interested in Jiang Chen. What they were interested in were the Immortal Meta Stones, so reaching Yan City was their only objective.

Jiang Chen’s heart was filled with satisfaction after hearing their remarks.

“No Chief, we can’t let a person die just like that. Although this is a deserted land, there will be some demon beasts emerging in this area. If we leave him here, most probably he will be eaten by them or killed by some bad guys. Besides, we have found him first. You all should know that saving one from death is better than building a seven-story pagoda for God. If you all refuse to help him, I will.”

Han Cong was a young vigorous man with a compassionate heart. He wouldn’t want to leave someone to die on his own if he could save him, otherwise it would become a trauma in his memory.

After listening to the youth, Jiang Chen felt a warmth in his heart. He glanced at the youth and saw a head of dense black hair, a pair of bright eyes and good-looking face. Despite both of them not knowing each other, this youth insisted in saving him. Clearly, this was an act of kindness with no other hidden motives.

In addition, Jiang Chen wasn’t familiar with this place. Although he hadn’t encountered any dangerous events for the past several days, that didn’t guarantee that he wouldn’t in the following days. With his current condition, he would be defenseless if a demon beast found him here.

As such, it was a good thing if he could stay with this group of people. They could act as his protection while he was recovering. More importantly, these people could provide answers to his baffling doubts about the Immortal World.

“Haha! I never thought that Ah Cong has such a compassionate heart. In that case, Chief, let’s take this man with us. We’ll save him from the maw of the demon beasts.” Someone laughed.

“Alright, Ah Cong, it’s good that you have a compassionate heart. We will bring this man along with us.” Chief nodded.

“Thank you, Chief.”

Han Cong became jubilant, he immediately picked up Jiang Chen and laid him on the carriage which was spacious enough for Jiang Chen’s body and other things.

Through the yellow cloth, he could smell the fragrance of herbs. Given his experience, he could tell what kind of medicinal materials were these relying solely on his nose. Despite having seen most of these materials before in Saint Origin World, these herbs had greater medicinal effects and grades as they were grown and nourished by the Immortal Qi in the Immortal World.

The most common herb among them was the Immortal Grass, which was many times more precious than the same grade of herb in Saint Origin World.

“Ai! We are slow enough in your journey. Now with this nuisance on the carriage, we will have to protect him and the carriage if anything happens.” Someone said discontentedly.

“Second Uncle, why don’t you have a little compassion in your heart? Saving people is as easy as raising your arm. If anything really happens along the way, I will protect him.” Han Cong patted his chest and said.

Chapter 1058 - Seeing the Poisonous Toad Again

“Hehe! It’s rare to have someone as righteous as Ah Cong.”

The chief chuckled and looked at Han Cong in a more indulging way. It was a blessing for the village to have such a righteous young man.

Jiang Chen, who was still lying on the carriage, revealed a hint of a smile on the corner of his mouth. He thought that these people should be villagers of some small village and found him in a remote land far away from their village. These people were unpretentious and modest, which was totally different from what he imagined. In addition, the youth’s kindness had warmed his heart since his arrival in the Immortal World. However, someone like this youth would most likely be deceived by other people.

In the following two days, this group of villagers kept walking without stopping while Jiang Chen put all of his concentration in recovering. What he heard the most along the journey was the discussion about the exchanging of herbs for Immortal Meta Stones.

Despite his lack of knowledge and experience about the Immortal World, he was still able to grasp the idea that Immortal Meta Stone was somewhat similar to the Saint Rank Restoration Pill in Saint Origin World and was essential in cultivation, however, the former was incomparably precious and difficult to obtain. In order to get those stones, these remote villagers needed to travel all the way to Yan City just to exchange for it, using their herbs and any valuable materials used in the furnace.

I still don’t have any Immortal Meta Stone right now. I will need to get some of those stones after I’m fully healed.

The Immortal Meta Stones’ function was the same as Saint Rank

Restoration Pill. From the advancement scripture he saw in his recent advancements, it stated that every breakthrough would require 50,000 dragon marks, which also meant that the energy consumption would be incomparably tremendous.

The massive amount of True Meta Stones he got in Void Triangular Domain had already been consumed before he broke through to the late Human Immortal realm. So currently, he was left with nothing and had to start collecting things again.

In other words, he needed to start all over again in this new world.

Within these two days, he was still acting like a mute. His recovery had reached the mid-Human Immortal, but due to him having suffered serious injuries all over his body, he would still be unable to fight before he fully recovered. Though he could move his muscles now, he still kept lying down like a crippled person. During these past two days, except for Han Cong coming to ask him about his condition, no one else cared about him. Perhaps Jiang Chen was just a nuisance in their eyes. None of them was willing to take care of a nuisance, let alone talking to a mute nuisance.

However, these things didn't concern Jiang Chen at all because he would be able to completely recover in another two days' time. Additionally, he was going to reward all of these people who brought him along with them.

Suddenly, he felt a sense of danger at the bottom of his heart while the others were still laughing and joking around, totally clueless of what would happen. He had already lived one life before and had an incomparably sharp perceptive technique. As such, he could instinctively be alerted when there was danger.

"Stop." Jiang Chen suddenly sat up and said in a deep voice, startling them.

Han Cong and the rest were looking at Jiang Chen with their

astonished eyes. For two days, they all thought that he was really a mute.

“You...aren’t you a mute?” Han Cong widened his eyes.

“Brat, who are you? Why are you pretending to be a mute?”

Someone asked coldly, immediately turning hostile, which was a rational move after learning that the seriously injured mute suddenly sat up and spoke. And his vigorous eyes made them doubt that he was acting as a spy.

“I’m Jiang Chen. No doubt, I was seriously injured before and has been treating my injuries within these past two days. I am very grateful for your help, but hear me out, danger is just ahead of us. We have to be ready for it.” Jiang Chen cupped his fists and said.

Speaking of danger, it made the chief, who was a half-step Earth Immortal, frown. He then looked around but sensed no dangerous Qi in the distance.

“Brat, are you lying to us? If there’s any danger, wouldn’t Chief sense it first? Say who are you really!” Another villager was becoming even more hostile.

Dong!

However, as soon as his words faded, a deep noise was heard all of a sudden. The land began to tremble and the Qi of danger was aroused in everyone’s heart. They were a group of tough villagers that had been through life and death ordeals, so they instantly sensed what was wrong.

They were now certain that danger was just around them.

The way they looked at Jiang Chen changed slightly, their hostility decreased a little and was replaced by respect. They now realized that this young man wasn’t as simple as they thought because not even their chief, a half-step Earth Immortal, sensed the danger before him.

“It could be a demon beast, be careful everyone!”

The chief fluctuated his Qi, releasing the Qi of a half-step Earth Immortal.

Croak!

A harsh croak was heard and the revolting smell that brought by the chilly wind made them feel like puking.

Dong!

In the next moment, a huge figure leaped down from the first summit, blocking the path in front of them. It was a giant poisonous toad with a body covered with green pustules, a pair of glossy green eyes, like the eyes of the Netherworld. Anyone who looked at it directly would shiver in fear and feel their soul freezing.

Its eyes were locked onto them. The poisonous Qi that was drifting around its body was a lethal poison of Heaven and Earth.

“Poisonous Nether Toad!” yelled the chief.

Having seen many extraordinary things, he was able to identify the beast by a glance. Not only his tone changed, but also the expression of all the other villagers. They now looked like they were in despair.

“What the hell? It is a late Human Immortal Poisonous Nether Toad! Why are we so unlucky? We are all finished now.”

“Human Immortal demon beasts are normally weak and Chief alone can handle any kind of them, but this poisonous beast has fatal poison all over its body. Even Chief can’t kill this toad without dying from the lethal poison.”

“What shall we do now? The Poisonous Nether Toad is a very ferocious beast and it won’t stop hunting us down until we die.”

.....

Everyone felt desperate, even the expression of the chief

darkened so much.

“Listen, I’ll stop this poisonous monster and you will all retreat immediately. You all must remember to protect Ah Cong no matter what.”

The chief gritted his teeth. At this critical juncture, he had to give up himself to save the others.

“Chief, let’s fight this poisonous toad together.”

Someone’s eyes had already turned red, obviously not afraid of death.

“You bastard! With your cultivation base, you can’t even get near to the toad. How can you fight it? Listen to me, retreat now!” said the Chief in a solemn tone.

“Don’t panic everyone. This Poisonous Nether Toad isn’t as scary as you think. Follow my instructions and none of you will die.” Jiang Chen said all of a sudden.

The Poisonous Nether Toad and Nether Python had the same property – top grade poison of Heaven and Earth, but it wasn’t lethal to Jiang Chen at all, his body contained such poison.

“Brother Jiang, don’t boast in front of us. This beast is known as the king of all poisons. It is our tragedy that we have encountered one of these today.”

The chief looked over at Jiang Chen with a bitter smile.

“Stop talking nonsense. You won’t die if you listen to me, otherwise none of you will live. I have once devoured the demon soul of Nether Python, which makes me immune to any kind of poison. So this Poisonous Nether Toad is harmless to me. But because I’m still recovering, I’m unable to confront it. Chief, this toad has a weak spot right below its jaw. Given your cultivation base, you’ll be able to kill it with one hit and while you are lunging forward, ignore the poison because I can assure you that you will be safe and sound, even if you have touched the poison,” said Jiang

Chen.

He had an innate majestic Qi that made people admire him unconsciously.

“Is this some kind of a joke? Aren’t you asking Chief to die? And who will believe that you have eaten the demon soul of Nether Python?”

“That’s right, Chief, don’t listen to him.”

.....

The villagers were unwilling to believe Jiang Chen, feeling that he was just bragging and kidding with Chief’s life.

“I will only say this once, it will be too late if you don’t act now.”

Jiang Chen finished his words and closed his eyes, and stopped paying attention to the chief. He believed that the chief was a wise man and would know what to do.

“Alright, I will follow your instructions for just this time.”

The chief gritted his teeth and focused on the bottom jaw of the toad.

“Chief.” Some villager was trying to stop him.

“It’s enough. I’ll die anyway. I might as well follow his way.”

The chief yelled. A sword materialized in his hand. Although there was an Immortal Qi swirling around the sword, it was merely a half Immortal Weapon. For a village like Han Village, it was virtually impossible to obtain a low rank Immortal Weapon, let alone a true Immortal Weapon.

Croak!

The toad lunged, opening its maw and spitting out a flow of green air that produced ‘Chi-Chi’ sound in the air. It was imaginable how corrosive the poison was.

He!

The Chief leaped six meters high all of a sudden from the ground and dodged the poisonous spit. If the toad was without the lethal poison, the chief could probably defeat it with ease, he was after all a formidable half-step Earth Human Immortal expert.

Seeing him avoid the attack, the toad became angry. Its sturdy body pounced down on him. Then, all the pustules on its skin burst, shooting out arrows of green liquid like rain. Those were the fatal poison that could kill any living creature.

“Dammit! I will defeat you!”

Such scene sent numbness down his back, but there was no turning back, or else his people would die. All he could do now was to do what Jiang Chen instructed earlier on. His eyes was focused on the lower jaw of the poisonous beast.

Chapter 1059 - The Ascendant

At this moment, every one of them felt extremely nervous, particularly Han Cong whose face had grown pale. He was still a youth who had little experience about the real world, after all. Only Jiang Chen was composed. Almost every time when he encountered a problem, his face would be full of confidence.

Despite the danger of the scene, as long as the chief did as Jiang Chen said, he would be able to kill that poisonous toad easily. If the fatal poison was taken out of the equation, it would be easy for the half-step Earth Immortal chief to finish the toad using all of his might.

Ignore the poison and hit its weak spot.

The chief heard Jiang Chen's voice in his mind. While facing a rain of poisonous arrows, it was impossible for one to feel unafraid about it, but the chief had no other ways besides gritting his teeth and do what Jiang Chen told him to do. For some reason, he felt an inexplicable confidence in that mysterious young man on the carriage.

“Successive Rainstorm!” The chief bellowed.

The sword in his hand shook. Countless sword light radiated out from the sword, forming a huge sword web that were launched like a rainstorm, colliding with all the oncoming poisonous arrows.

Crack...

There was poisonous liquid everywhere, making it almost impossible to deflect them all even with the dense Successive Rainstorm. Countless of poisonous fluid had landed on the chief's body and instantly permeated through his skin.

Hiss!

The chief sucked in a deep breath. The poison of the Poisonous Nether Toad was claimed to be extremely toxic. He could feel that

the poison was eroding his body rapidly. Fortunately, he was still able to prevent the poison from attacking his vital organs with his half-step Earth Immortal Qi, but it was fundamentally impossible to get these poison out of his body. To put it bluntly, if Jiang Chen wasn't telling the truth, he would be dead for sure.

But he couldn't care that much anymore. While withstanding the corrosive poison in his body, he had to attack. He then made his most powerful attack; his speed was doubled and his sword moved like a venomous snake, reaching below the jaw of the Poisonous Nether Toad in a blink.

Croak!

The Poisonous Nether Toad felt great danger. It hadn't thought that this man would be so fierce and fearless. The advantage it had was the lethal poison that would make anyone who saw it move far away. Even in the battle, the opponents would try their best not to get close to it. Below its jaw was the weak spot protected by lots of poisonous fluid. Though it was its vital spot, it had never been its concern.

Unexpectedly today, it had encountered a person who didn't fear death and its poison. What was more frightening than that was this person had accurately found the weak spot under its jaw.

It started to realize the danger, but it was too late. It was impossible to dodge the sword attack of the chief in this split second, as the toad wasn't as strong as the chief.

Pu Chi!

It happened as what Jiang Chen predicted. The tip of the sword penetrated through the jawline of the poisonous beast. Innumerable blood poured out from the hole and onto the chief's face.

“Argh...”

“Croak...”

The chief and the Poisonous Nether Toad wailed at the same time. The toad's lower jaw was fragile. Once broken, all of its origin was destroyed. In other words, this sword had taken the life of the poisonous beast.

The chief, on the other hand, was suffering from severe poisoning. If he wasn't saved by an expert now, he would die in minutes.

“Chief!”

Han Cong roared while the others' eyes turned bloodshot. The chief had always been a high and respected figure in their hearts. He represented the hope of Han Village and the strongest expert in their village. If he died, it would deal a huge blow to the village.

“Come over here quickly!” Jiang Chen yelled in alarm.

The chief wouldn't dare ignore him given his critical state. While enduring the excruciating pain of the lethal poison, he raced towards Jiang Chen using his fastest speed. Now, the rest of them were looking at the both of them worriedly, but was also full of anticipation. It seemed as if Jiang Chen wasn't bragging and had ways to treat their chief.

Pa!

Jiang Chen placed his palms behind the chief's back and started circulating the dragon transformation skill. Then, all the poison in the chief's body flowed into Jiang Chen's body through his palms, as if they were being summoned. In just a few blinks, all the poison had been sucked away by Jiang Chen.

The chief's face was full of shock to see such an unimaginable scene. Without experiencing this personally, he wouldn't believe that there was such a strange thing in the Heavens and Earth. One should know that the poison belonged to the Poisonous Nether Toad. How could anyone suck away all the lethal poison so easily? He could also feel that Jiang Chen didn't just extract the poison out

with some kind of skill but absorbed the poison directly.

“Don’t move, you have been injured by the poison. I will help you heal them,” said Jiang Chen and channeled the wood essence into the chief’s body.

Then, his body trembled and the shock on his face intensified. The wisp of wood essence gave him a comfortable and vigorous feeling that could bring even a dead wood to life. In just one minute, he could feel that all of his wounds had healed. Not just that, he had gotten some benefits due to the effect of the wood essence. His cultivation even improved a little, leaving him only a step away from the true Earth Immortal realm.

“It’s done.”

Jiang Chen removed his hands from the chief’s back. The poison that he absorbed was harmless to him and became his nourishment.

The chief stood up, looking high-spirited, far away from death or injured. Whereas the Poisonous Nether Toad ahead was already long dead. No Qi could be sensed from it, but the lethal poison was still in its huge body, making no one unable to go near it.

“Chief, are you alright?”

The villagers surrounded him and studied him thoroughly. They heard it when their chief screamed in agony and had seen the poison rained down on him. They had a hard time believing that their chief was as good as new after a short treatment from Jiang Chen.

“Haha! I’m fine, very fine indeed!”

The Chief laughed happily. He turned to look at Jiang Chen with a dignified eye expression, cupped his fists and deeply saluted. “Never thought that Brother Jiang Chen is a man who keeps one’s own counsel. You are really very capable and also an extraordinary expert. Even the Poisonous Nether Toad could easily be handled by

you. If Brother Jiang Chen wasn't here today, I'm afraid we would be in real danger."

"There's no need to be overly-courteous, Chief. You all have saved me and I naturally can't watch you all die."

Jiang Chen smiled. Knowing that this group of villagers were kind-hearted people, he wouldn't allow the Poisonous Nether Toad to kill them.

"Brother Jiang Chen is omnipotent, instantly finding the weak spot of the rarely seen Poisonous Nether Toad with just a glance."

"Not only that, Brother Jiang is immune to the toad's poison. For a miraculous human being like him, I wouldn't believe it even if I was threatened to death."

"Brother Jiang, I, Han Second, apologize for the offensive words that I have spoken. I hope that Brother Jiang will forgive me for being so outspoken. If it wasn't for you today, Han Village would have been hit hard by casualties."

.....

After the battle, the villagers completely changed how they viewed Jiang Chen. Those who had spoken disparagingly about Jiang Chen promptly apologized to him. Of all the experiences they had gained from the outside world, they were able to discern the peculiarities about this young man who radiated such composure that it did not match his age, and could remain calm in the face of extreme danger. They had no doubt that such a man was no ordinary person.

"See, like I said, it was right to save lives. Good people with good deeds will be blessed and rewarded."

Han Cong had a joyful look on his face. "Big brother Jiang, I can see that you are only a few years older than me. So from now on, I will call you big brother. I didn't think that you are so powerful."

"Haha..."

Then, all of them burst into laughter that filled the area. It had pulled Jiang Chen closer to the rest of them. They no longer regarded him as an outsider, but a friend.

They continued on their journey. As for the corpse of the Poisonous Nether Toad, they just leave it there. No one except those Poison Cultivators would ever get close to it. Although Jiang Chen was able to refine its demon soul, he wasn't interested in refining the demon soul of a late Human Immortal beast.

“Brother Jiang Chen, I'm Han Changling, the chief of Han Village. May I know where did Brother Jiang Chen came from? And why did Brother Jiang Chen came to this remote place named One-Line-Sky?” said Han Changling.

“One-Line-Sky? To be frank, I don't know what this place is and where I was. I hope Chief can tell me more about that,” replied Jiang Chen.

“Are you sure, big brother Jiang? You don't even know One-Line-Sky? You aren't an ascendant, are you?”

Han Cong looked over at Jiang Chen in surprise. The rest of them did the same. How could Jiang Chen not know where One-Line-Sky was?

“Ah Cong is right about that. I'm indeed an ascendant. I have just ascended from the Mortal World and had suffered some injuries even before I arrived here. So, I'm a blockhead when it comes to anything about the Immortal World.” Jiang Chen spoke truthfully.

He could tell from Ah Cong's tone that ascendants weren't strange in the Immortal World. So there was no need for him to hide it. These people wouldn't hurt or harm him.

“I thought so.”

Han Changling nodded. The way they looked at Jiang Chen was filled with a hint of respect. They were born and raised in the Immortal World, so they knew about the ascendants. In their point

of view, every one of them who succeeded in ascending to their world was respectable people, with strong willpower and extraordinary abilities.

Chapter 1060 - Yan City

The ascendants were regarded as a group of special existence in the Immortal World. Even though there were a lot of them, they were still considered a very tiny group, like a grain of corn in the wide sea of the super huge Immortal World, but every one of them were respected by the locals.

“Why are you all looking at me like that? Is there a problem with ascendants?” asked Jiang Chen curiously.

“It seems like Brother Jiang doesn’t know that ascendants have a very significant status in the Immortal World. For a young ascendant like you, you should be able to get a good position in a major power or prefecture. You can also gain lots of cultivation resources from them,” said Han Changling.

“Why’s that?” asked Jiang Chen, confused.

“We all know that the cultivation resources in the Mortal World are scarce, so anyone who ascends to our world possesses great perseverance and talent. Individuals like you will be respected wherever you go. The fact that you ascended to our world at such a young age proves that you are a first-class genius in the Mortal World. If you follow us to Yan City and announce your identity, the majors power in the city will immediately recruit you,” replied Han Changling.

“I see.”

Jiang Chen suddenly realized that the path in the Immortal World wasn’t as difficult as he thought. It seemed like the ascendants were a whole lot better than many of the locals, however, he could never let anyone other than this group know about his true identity.

“Chief and brothers, you must all promise Jiang Chen one thing. Never tell anyone that I’m an ascendant. From now on, none of

you should never mention it. I don't want anyone besides the few of you to know who I am."

Jiang Chen's tone changed all of a sudden. If he hadn't been attacked by the light ray, he would probably make good use of his identity. But now, he could say nothing about it to the public, as someone in this world was trying to put him to death. Also, because he had yet to refine the Soul Imprint in his body, the one who wanted to kill him would be able to identify him easily at the moment. So, the privileges he might get from his identity would also bring harm to him.

"Brother Jiang, may I ask why? It'd be a waste if you won't make good use of it." Han Cong looked at Jiang Chen in a dubious way.

"That's right, Brother Jiang, this is a good deal." The others added.

"This is a personal secret. I hope that you guys can keep it a secret."

Jiang Chen's tone became indisputable.

"Very well, Brother Jiang. We will never reveal your identity to others. You've saved my life from that Poisonous Nether Toad—a great kindness to which not only me but all my brothers in Han Village owe to you. It's only right that we do you a favor in return." Han Changling patted his chest and said.

He knew better than anyone how dangerous it was to encounter the Poisonous Nether Toad. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen saving his life, it wasn't hard to imagine what would happen in Han Village. If he really died, he was afraid that his village would be attacked by the surrounding villages.

"Chief, to be frank, I don't know anything about your world. I'd be glad if you could continue guiding me," requested Jiang Chen.

As his recovery was almost complete, he could talk and heal at the same time.

“Brother Jiang, let me tell you something about our world. I once saw a rough map of the Immortal World. The size of our world was too huge for one to imagine. I’m afraid that I will never have the chance to go around the entire Immortal World in my lifetime.” Han Cong sighed.

“Ah Cong, don’t try to reach for something that is beyond your grasp. Don’t talk about the whole world. You’re already good if you can build a good reputation here in One-Line-Sky.” Han Second mocked.

“Don’t be ridiculously. Quickly tell Brother Jiang more about our world. But Brother Jiang, we are basically just telling you what we saw on the map,” said Han Changling.

“Brother Jiang, the boundless Immortal World is divided into nine great immortal domains, namely: the Exquisite Immortal Domain, Mi Luo Immortal Domain, Fengchi Immortal Domain, Yellow Spring Immortal Domain, Ethereal Immortal Domain, Everlasting Immortal Domain, Radiance Immortal Domain, Measureless Immortal Domain and Fulfillment Immortal Domain. Each and every one of these domains runs independently. The domain we are in right now is the Ethereal Domain. It is a very huge place, we don’t even know how huge it is.”

Han Cong explained about the Nine Great Immortal Domains that he saw from the map. To him, and the rest of them who lived in the deep mountains, it was extremely difficult to travel. So, for them, traveling from one domain to another was only a wishful thinking.

“The Immortal World sure is huge. Saint Origin World isn’t comparable to it at all. By the way, what about the One-Line-Sky that you all mentioned?” Jiang Chen continued asking.

“Brother Jiang, we are in One-Line-Sky. It is the most remote part of the Ethereal Immortal Domain, with a few dozen billions of miles and rolling mountains that you can only see a line outlined

by the tops of the mountains in front of the sky in every direction. This is why they named it One-Line-Sky. In this region, there are hundreds and thousands of sects and clans. Our Han Village is merely a remote village in this region, it is not worth mentioning at all. For so long that I have lived, Yan City is the biggest place I have ever been to. In One-Line-Sky, Yan City is just a small city and there are innumerable of them. I don't think that I will have a chance to venture into other places, but it is not the same for Ah Cong. He is a gifted and talented young man. If he is accepted by some cultivation sect in One-Line-Sky, it will be regarded as the greatest honor of Han Village," said Han Changling with a smile.

Jiang Chen gaped as he listened to Han Changling's introduction. Now it seemed like the scale of the Immortal World was beyond his imagination. A mere One-Line-Sky was already a few dozen billions of miles in size. It was almost as large as Saint Origin World. If cultivators like Human Immortals and Earth Immortals who couldn't fly travelled, he was afraid that they couldn't even walk out of One-Line-Sky in their lifetime, let alone getting to the center of Ethereal Immortal Domain.

Plus, no one knew how many regions like One-Line-Sky there were across the whole Ethereal Immortal Domain, one of the Nine Great Immortal Domains. It was terrifying.

But it had ignited Jiang Chen's spirit. If he couldn't leave anything in such a gigantically large place, all of his efforts in coming here would be in vain.

In the subsequent moments, the others started to add in what they knew, telling him mostly about the general situation of the Immortal World. But whatever they said were just from the records; not their personal experience. Since there's no one among them who had left One-Line-Sky before, they were already considered pretty good to know this much of stuff.

However, they were clear about the things in Yan City. One of the things they normally did was hunting, which was also their

living. It was common knowledge that Immortal Meta Stones were vitally important to Human Immortal cultivators. So, even low grade Immortal Meta Stones were regarded as an incomparably precious item. There were also many other villages which treated Yan City as a place to exchange Immortal Meta Stones. They would bring herbs, raw materials used to craft Immortal Weapons, and different levels of demon souls for exchange.

In this generation, Yan City wasn't regarded as a small city anymore. In addition to the Prefecture of the city, there were also other powers. Those villages who came in frequently would have their own traders. For instance, Han Village would always trade with the Prefecture. When trading, the Prefecture would have an appraiser weighing the value of the items they brought.

Two days later, they finally arrived in Yan City after crossing mountains and rivers. In fact, it wasn't very far from the place where Jiang Chen was saved. If it were in Saint Origin World, he could travel to the city instantly. It was a pity that the Laws of this world was extraordinarily horrifying. Its spatial structures were unusually strong, causing Human Immortals to solely depend on their legs to travel.

Looking at the city from a distance, it looked magnificent. The few hundreds of miles large city had walls built with rocks. Judging from the scale of this city, it was like most of the common cities in Saint Origin World, relatively similar to Red City, however, there was an invisible trail of noble aura emitted from the city, which was incomparable to any of the cities back in Saint Origin World.

“Haha! Yan City sure is a big place. I'm going to have a good time here this time.”

Han Cong was incomparably delighted. He sprinted towards the entrance of the city.

Seeing this, a hint of a smile appeared at the corner of Jiang

Chen's mouth. Han Cong was an inexperienced youth who came to Yan City for the first time, he also had a kind heart, which would make him vulnerable to deception.

"We have arrived in Yan City. Brother Jiang, why not take a stroll in the city since you aren't sure of where to go yet?" said Han Changling.

"Alright."

Jiang Chen nodded. Currently, he had already recovered his peak strength—late Human Immortal realm—and walking was not a problem anymore. With his present strength, he could easily kill any half-step Earth Immortals and early Earth Immortals. He could even fight a mid-Earth Immortal expert. And all of these could be done without using his dragon form.

His next step was to find ways to refine the Soul Imprint. The man trying to get rid of him man would certainly spare no efforts in finding him. This was why he warned the Han villagers not to reveal his identity as an ascendant. He wouldn't need to doubt what these overlords would do after they found out about him.

Although the Immortal Mark could conceal the Qi of the Soul Imprint, the imprint still existed inside his body. He wouldn't be able to sleep well if he couldn't get rid of it as quickly as possible.

Chapter 1061 - Minding Other People's Business

The Soul Imprint was extremely difficult to refine but that didn't concern Jiang Chen. With the Immortal Mark in his body, he was certain that the killer wouldn't detect him. Besides, his dragon transformation skill had gotten unimaginably stronger. It might be able to refine anything, including Soul Imprints in the Heavens and Earth. So, he had been circulating the dragon transformation skill to try and refine it from time to time, believing that it would be completely absorbed in no time.

It was midday. The city was bustling with activities. There were also some who got here with their carriage, dressed up almost the same way as the Han villagers; they had also come here to exchange for Immortal Meta Stones. In this age, the existence of villages like Han Village was beyond counting.

Ordinary people were required to pay a certain amount in order to enter Yan City. According to the regulations set by the Prefecture, everyone who entered the city must pay a low grade Immortal Meta Stone. As for those cultivators who came from remote villages, a low grade Immortal Meta Stone was simply too expensive. So, no one would come here for fun because a low grade Immortal Meta Stone was enough to fuel one's cultivation.

But due to Han Changling having good rapport with the guards, they were exempted from paying those expensive low grade Immortal Meta Stones.

"Chief, you are amazing! Even the guards gave you a friendly smile." Han Cong looked over at Han Changling in admiration.

"That's of course, I have lost count of how many herbs our village has given to the Prefecture. This is where I earn the reputation from."

Han Changling stroked his beard and said proudly.

Inside Yan City was even busier than it looked outside. The streets were spacious. Although it was the first city Jiang Chen ever came to since his arrival in the Immortal World, he wasn't interested in the city at all. His experience and knowledge was beyond what he was seeing here. Thus, he didn't feel the need to observe around like a foreigner.

It wasn't the first time the group had come to this city, so they didn't look as excited as Han Cong who looked so exhilarated and full of energy. He moved closer to almost all the things that caught his attention

"Ah Cong, don't wander around. We will head to the Prefecture first. After we're done with the exchange, I will personally bring you around the city to have some fun," said Han Changling.

"Alright, Chief." Han Cong nodded.

The Prefecture was located at the central part of Yan City. With Han Changling, who was very familiar with the place, leading the way, they arrived at the gates of the Prefecture very quickly. Buildings and pavilions were erected behind the walls of the Prefecture. The huge gates looked majestic and there was a huge empty square right outside the gate. People normally wouldn't even dare to approach the gates or hang around in this area aimlessly because it meant disrespecting the Prefecture—the noblest place in Yan City.

"What a majestic place." Han Cong's eyes glittered, this was his first time coming here.

"Ah Cong, don't talk nonsense." Han Second warned.

In this place, they had to be careful with their actions and gestures to avoid offending the Prefecture and ending their only source of precious Immortal Meta Stones.

Han Cong seemed shocked, retreated to join the back of the group

and shut his mouth. Han Changling strode towards the gates and cupped his fists at the guards. “Brothers, we are from Han Village, we have brought some herbs from our village.”

“En, wait here, I’ll inform the steward.”

One of the guards said in an incomparably cold tone, turned and walked into the Prefecture. It was an honor to serve as guards of the Prefecture, which was why they all looked so arrogant and cold.

After a while, a group of people walked out from the inside. The leader among them wore brocade clothes. He seemed about Han Changling’s age with a fatter head and bigger ears, but had the face of a rich man. He also had the same cultivation base as Han Changling—half-step Earth Immortal.

Behind him were four or five bodyguards. None of them was weak as even the weakest among them was mid Human Immortal.

“You are Han Changling?”

The leader looked at Han Changling with eyes full of contempt.

“That’s right. These are the herbs sent by us personally from our village – Han Village. They are first-rate herbs. However, I wonder why Steward Wu hasn’t come out yet.”

Han Changlong cupped his fists quickly, fearing that he’ll show any signs of disrespect.

“I’m Huang Liu, the cousin of Steward Wu, you can call me Steward Huang. From now on, I will be handling all the trivial matters like this one.”

Huang Liu said, shaking his head, that the meat on his fat face started to shake as well. Adding his innate sense of superiority and proud-looking face, he was a typical scumbag. It gave Jiang Chen the urge to leave a shoe print on his face.

“So you are the cousin of Steward Wu, my apologies for the

disrespect. Quickly get the herbs here, guys!” said Han Changling.

The group then swiftly pulled the carriage over and pulled the yellow cloth off, revealing numerous amount of first-rate herbs on the carriage.

“Steward Huang, what do you think about these herbs?” Han Changling asked with a smile.

“En, it’s not bad.”

Huang Liu nodded, and then ordered one man behind, “Give them the Immortal Meta Stones and bring the herbs inside.”

“Yes, Steward.”

The bodyguard threw a crude storage pouch that landed right on Han Changling’s hands.

“Many thanks, Steward Huang.”

Han Changling cupped his fists, and then opened to check the storage pouch like usual, but his facial expression changed the instant he looked inside.

“Steward Huang, this isn’t right.” Han Changling said with a frown.

“What’s not right?” Steward Huang asked impatiently.

“With the similar quality and amount of herbs, we always get a hundred low grade Immortal Meta Stones, but why do we only have fifty this time?” said Han Changling.

“This is how much your things are worth. Begone.”

Huang Liu waved, gesturing Han Changling to leave.

“Steward Huang, it wasn’t easy for us to make a visit in this city. Last time, Steward Wu gave us one hundred stones, but now, we only got half of it. I won’t be able to provide a reasonable explanation for this, these herbs are the collective efforts of all the villagers.”

Han Changling was angry in his heart but didn't dare express it on his face.

"Your personal matter is none of my business. Now that these things are handled by me, I have decided to give you fifty for this exchange." Huang Liu replied with a cold smile.

"Steward Huang, I doubt that anyone would ever come to trade with the Prefecture after what you have done. And I think you must have taken our fifty stones to treat your guests?"

Han Cong was the first to lose his patience, given his young and vigorous energy.

"Brat, who are you? You are just a lowly folk. How dare you speak to our Steward in such a manner? Do you want me to chop off one of your legs?"

A bodyguard retorted viciously.

Han Cong wanted to spit out more words but was stopped by two other villagers. Every one of them knew that this was the Prefecture and causing a trouble here wouldn't bring them any good. Clearly, this new Steward deducted their reward on purpose, but there was nothing they could do besides suppressing their anger and grievances, after all, they couldn't afford to offend the Prefecture.

"He's a lowly person? What about you? A Pekinese?"

Suddenly, a flat voice sounded from someone, stunning everyone, including the Han villagers. Every one of them shifted their attention to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen was a man who would never forget people's kindness. So how could he watch the Han villagers being bullied by someone else and do nothing about it? He knew that the villagers had worked so hard just to collect these herbs. This big-headed guy must be a real jerk to intentionally cut half of their rewards that was so scarce and important in cultivation.

“Brat, what did you say?”

The bodyguard glared at him, having the impulse to shred Jiang Chen into millions of pieces right away.

“Don’t talk nonsense Brother Jiang. We should leave.”

Han Changling was startled. He quickly pulled Jiang Chen away from the confrontation. Everyone knew that this was the Prefecture; the last thing they would do was to offend them, unless they want to destroy their only source of Immortal Meta Stones.

“Chief, there are some animals who don’t know when to stop. If you turn a blind eye this time, you will certainly face the same thing next time you come. Although Han Village isn’t a strong force, it has its own dignity,” said Jiang Chen.

There were some things in this world which he could ignore, but there were some which he must interfere. Besides, the matter right now was no longer insignificant. They didn’t dare act because of fear, but he, Jiang Chen, feared no one, even in this world.

“Brat, who’s the animal that you are referring to.”

Huang Liu, who just turned and left, returned to the gate with an angry face. To him, it seemed like someone was starting a rebellion here. He had never been insulted in Yan City before.

“Can’t you understand what I’m trying to say? You must have a severe brain problem.” Jiang Chen blurted out straightforwardly.

Facing a disgusting person, he would surely not be polite.

“Courting death!”

A mid Human Immortal guard strode near to Jiang Chen and raised his palm, intending to slap him.

Pa!

A clear sound of a slap was heard. To everyone’s surprise, the one who was slapped wasn’t Jiang Chen, but instead, it’s the guard who attempted to slap. Despite their distance, Han Changling didn’t

even see when did Jiang Chen struck. The guard was sent to the ground with just a slap.

“People like you dares to attack me? Get lost!”

With a kick, the guard was sent 10 meters away from the scene, causing him to wail in pain; half of his face swelled up like a swine.

“Big brother Jiang is awesome!”

Han Cong's eyes lit up immediately. Not just him, but also the other Han villagers were in disbelief. This was the first time that they witnessed Jiang Chen's power which was entirely different compared to his ability to absorb lethal poison from the Poisonous Nether Toad as that was just some kind of unique technique. Seeing his ability to send a mid Human Immortal flying with just a casual strike literally impressed every one of them.

Chapter 1062 - The Maw of a Lion

Some were shocked and many were in fear, especially the Han villagers. No matter how powerful Jiang Chen was, this was the Prefecture of the city where countless Earth Immortals and some Heaven Immortals lived. So, making trouble here was equivalent to digging one's own grave.

Now that he had beaten the guard, it was impossible to let this matter go. Han Village would certainly have a hard time after offending the Prefecture.

Hua La!

Just after Jiang Chen kicked the mid Human Immortal away, the rest of the bodyguards and guards besieged him. Each of their faces were filled with anger and disbelief as they looked at Jiang Chen. In their eyes, Jiang Chen was just some super audacious grunt who dared to attack their people in front of the Prefecture. It was the first time that such an incident happened in Yan City.

“Brother Jiang.”

Han Changling panicked. He never thought that this young ascendant would be so rash. He knew that Huang Liu wasn't a person to be trifled with, but now that Jiang Chen had attacked their man, they surely wouldn't let this matter slip.

“Chief, stand on the side. I will seek justice for all of you today. Your carriage of herbs isn't just worth a hundred low grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

Jiang Chen's face was cold. He gestured Han Changling to stop saying anymore words, he already had an idea how to solve this matter.

“What an arrogant young man! I guess you have eaten the gallbladder of a bear and leopard for you to be so audacious! What's your name?”

Huang Liu raged and glowered at Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen announced his name, then he continued in a composed tone, “Ask your superior to come out.”

“Haha! Good, good! I have finally met an unruly man. I have no idea what gave this much courage but what you did today will cost you your life. Kill him!”

Huang Liu laughed sarcastically, then ordered while gritting his teeth.

Hong Long...

As soon as Huang Liu's words trailed off, all of the guards' powerful Qi erupted. In addition to the mid Human Immortal guards, there were also late Human Immortal guards. Although they weren't the higher ups in Prefecture, it was their first time seeing someone as audacious as Jiang Chen. They must let this man know the unbearable consequences of hitting the people of the Prefecture.

Bang... *Bang...* *Bang...*

A shocking scene appeared once more. It happened right after the guards lunged forward at Jiang Chen. Each and every one of them was thrown away by a powerful force as they let out an agonizing cry before they landed on the ground 30 meters away. None of them were able to get up, including those late Human Immortal guards.

When the onlookers looked back at Jiang Chen, he was still standing on the same spot, as if he was not the one who sent those guards away. He had gotten rid of all the elite guards in such an easy way.

“What?”

This time, it wasn't just the Han villagers. Even Huang Liu

couldn't help but exclaim, changing his view on Jiang Chen entirely. He tried to examine Jiang Chen again but found nothing extraordinary.

“So powerful. He's just an ascendant who recently arrived in our world. How could he be this powerful? Not even those late Human Immortal experts were his match. He is really powerful.”

Han Changling felt the need to reexamine Jiang Chen once more. Any ascendant who arrived in their world would generally be early Human Immortal, and no matter how powerful an early Human Immortal could be, he or she wouldn't be a match with a late Human Immortal expert. So, they were totally shocked by Jiang Chen's power.

“Chief, it seems like we have underestimated him,” said Han Second in a low voice.

“Jiang Chen, though you are very strong, you won't be able to leave this city today, I'm going to kill you myself.”

Huang Liu charged, unleashing all of the Qi of a half-step Earth Immortal. Judging from his Qi, it was a lot more powerful than Han Changling. He had already reached the peak of the half-step Earth Immortal, and was only a step away from the true and scary early Earth Immortal realm.

But it was a pity that his opponent was Jiang Chen, he had no advantages at all. He would surely end up lying on the ground, just like the other guards.

Pa!

Right at the same moment when Huang Liu moved, Jiang Chen acted. His speed was more than a hundred times faster than Huang Liu. Huang had lost his chance to react the moment he attacked because that was when Jiang Chen's palm landed on his face.

“If you move again, I will kill you.”

Jiang Chen's tone turned incomparably cold, so cold that it

penetrated Huang Liu's bone.

The side of his face was now trickling with cold sweat. When he saw Jiang Chen's eyes, he was sure that those pair of cold eyes had the intention to kill. He had no doubt that Jiang Chen would immediately kill him the moment he moved. He had lost all the sense of security despite being in the Prefecture.

What terrified him the most was that he felt a coldness that came from his innermost soul despite him being a half-step Earth Immortal while being controlled by this young opponent. He was totally powerless to counter attack.

Jiang Chen's Qi was full of power and suppression, it was like a huge mountain, pressing against him so hard that he couldn't breathe properly.

"Y-y-you dare to kill me? This is the Prefecture. You should know what the consequences are if you kill me here!"

Huang Liu's tone was shaky, but he sounded confident again when he mentioned the 'Prefecture'.

"You should be glad that this is the Prefecture. Or else, you'd be long dead. You better not challenge my dignity, because if I want you dead now, you will be dead in a second," said Jiang Chen coldly.

"Listen, bring the superior here who can negotiate with me."

Then, with a kick on his belly, Huang Liu flew into the Prefecture along with a wail of pain.

"Jiang Chen, you bold son of a b*tch! Wait for me!"

Huang Liu threatened then went crawling away.

"It's finished. We are all finished."

Han Changling was dumbfounded. He hadn't imagined that Jiang Chen would be so powerful that not even a half-step Earth Immortal was his opponent. Although he didn't know how strong

Jiang Chen really was, he was certain that the Prefecture was a place that shouldn't be provoked no matter how powerful Jiang Chen was.

Jiang Chen was wearing a white robe. He stood right outside the gate of the Prefecture. The corner of his mouth curled slightly upwards, showing a trace of faint smirk and extraordinary confidence.

It wasn't long before another group of people rushed out from the inside of the Prefecture. Every one of them had powerful Qi. The first in the group was a man who looked about fifty-year-old, with a sturdy body instead of a plump one. He also had an extraordinary demeanor. A hint of ruthlessness was exuded from his eyes that told everyone that he wasn't a person to be trifled with. What was even scarier was his cultivation base—early Earth Immortal realm, a true Earth Immortal expert.

Though the gap between a half-step Earth Immortal and early Earth Immortal might sound just a step away, the actual difference was day and night. Anyone who was a half-step Earth Immortal was merely approaching the Earth Immortal realm, they weren't really Earth Immortal experts yet.

Chapter 1063 - Yan Qingcheng

“Haha.....100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones? You have the maw of a lion, brat. I think you are obsessed with those stones for claiming that your lowly carriage of herbs is worth that much. Humph! You surely is an ignorant brat! I really have no idea where you got those guts from, daring to act outrageously in front of the Prefecture. Take him down. I'd like to see whether he still dares to resist.”

Steward Wu burst into laughter, as if he had heard the funniest joke in the world. Had that lowly villager gone out of his mind for wanting 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones? He must have thought that low grade Immortal Meta Stones could easily be picked on the street.

Jiang Chen's words had completely angered Steward Wu, who immediately ordered to take him down.

Hua La...

The experts led by Steward Wu moved. Their speed was swift and sharp as they besiege Jiang Chen in a matter of seconds.

“You think you can deal with me with these rotten potato and spoiled eggs? Get lost!”

Jiang Chen totally didn't put these people in his eyes. All of a sudden, his Qi fluctuated; an invisible energy surged out of his body like tidal waves and lunged in all directions indiscriminately.

Bang... *Bang...* *Bang...*

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

All the experts who rushed forward were pushed flying away by Jiang Chen's force, landing on the ground 40 meters away and wailed agonizingly. This scene shocked both Steward Wu and Huang Liu. They knew that there were two half-step Earth Immortal experts among them, but none of them were able to get

close to Jiang Chen. It was absolutely not an accident, nor incompetence from their experts. The only explanation for this was that Jiang Chen was just too strong.

Steward Wu couldn't help but begin to carefully examine Jiang Chen. With his eyesight, he was able to discern Jiang Chen's cultivation just from his attack, but because of that, he was shocked even more.

"It's unbelievable that a young late Human Immortal expert can defeat a half-step Earth Immortal expert so easily." Steward Wu said in a low tone.

His face was filled with disbelief. As the steward of the Prefecture, he had great knowledge and experience, however, it was rare for him to encounter such a genius like Jiang Chen.

Nevertheless, that didn't give him a reason not to punish this young man, this matter involved the dignity of the Prefecture. If the Prefecture of Yan City couldn't even handle a puny late Human Immortal, he would certainly be fired by his superior for being so incompetent.

Jiang Chen stood there with his hands behind his back. His face was indifferent, totally not showing any interest of conversing with Steward Wu. Today, there was only one great thing that he wanted to do, which was to seek justice for Han Village and bring them more benefits. This would also help him lay a foundation in this new world.

Therefore, someone who was powerful and had high position in the Prefecture must come out and face him. As for this Steward Wu, he obviously wasn't the powerful superior he expected.

"Cousin, this brat doesn't seem like a weak opponent. Should we inform Big Miss?" Huang Liu whispered.

"Humph! Informing Big Miss just because of this puny late Human Immortal young man? Where should I put my face after

that?”

Steward Hu let out a cold humph. Although Jiang Chen had a very mystical performance, he wasn't a true Earth Immortal expert like him. He had great confidence in eliminating this young man.

“You don't have to attack because you are no match for me at all.”

Jiang Chen pointed to Steward Wu and shook his head. Even if Steward Wu was a mid Earth Immortal expert, he was still not an opponent for Jiang Chen.

“What an overly arrogant brat! Since you want to die so badly, I will fulfil your wish now. After you, all these Han villagers will have to die as well.”

Steward Wu raged. With his identity and reputation, no one had ever talked to him like that, especially an outsider.

A powerful wave suddenly rushed out of Steward Wu's body. With a swift speed, he appeared before Jiang Chen in a blink, locking on Jiang Chen with his divine sense, wrapping him with the wind. Then, he struck out a few palm strikes, creating a dozen of clear palm seals that charged at Jiang Chen. This was an attack of a true Earth Immortal expert which shouldn't be underestimated.

The villagers tensed, knowing that Han Village was tied together with Jiang Chen's fate. If Jiang Chen died, their village wouldn't be any better. So, they hoped that Jiang Chen was powerful enough to defeat Steward Wu even if his chances was very low. It was because Steward Wu was a true Earth Immortal expert and was incomparable to a half-step Earth Immortal like Hang Changling.

Jiang Chen's move was very simple while facing those dense palm attacks. He just gently raised his palm and smashed forward,

producing a cracking sound. Then, all the palm seals of Steward Wu shattered before making an impact on Jiang Chen.

Pa!

Jiang Chen's speed was too fast. After pulverizing all the palm seals, he made a swift slap on Steward Wu's face, creating a clear slapping sound. But what felt wasn't just a slap, it was like a force of a mountain was pressing against his face, causing him to suffocate. Under such an overwhelming force, he had lost the power to resist.

Steward Wu let out a wail like the other guards, and was kicked flying by Jiang Chen. Although he was an early Earth Immortal expert, he still faced the same outcome like those Human Immortal guards. In other words, early Human Immortal and early Earth Immortals didn't matter to Jiang Chen at all.

“What?”

This time, all the villagers were absolutely shocked. Each and every one of them widened their eyes, watching the scene in disbelief. They hadn't even dreamt of such a scene. It seemed like Jiang Chen's power was way beyond their estimation.

“That's amazing! He's an ascendant who has just arrived in the Immortal World. How could he possess such a terrifying combat strength?”

“Brother Jiang is domineering. We can't let this drag on, it won't be in our favor as the time goes by.”

“I can sense the aura of confidence all over his body. Perhaps he still has some kind of trump card that he hasn't shown us. I don't believe that he demanded those 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones just because he wanted to get those stones. Do any of you realize that Brother Jiang is doing all of these to draw the powerful superior out of the Prefecture?”

“That's right. I don't think he is a madman, since a brainless man

wouldn't have ascended to our world. He must have his own reason for doing this. We'll see how it goes, our fate is already tied with his anyway. It's no use worrying so much."

.....

All the villagers were in shock, but they weren't fools. Jiang Chen's astonishing power had given them a certain level of confidence.

Now, the air of the Prefecture was filled with wails. On the floor laid the injured guards. It was the first time that something like this had ever happened in Yan City. No one would ever dare to be wild at the Prefecture. If this incident was spread out to the public, it would certainly set an uproar throughout the city.

Huang Liu was still standing there, but his expression had already changed. All of his anger and arrogance were gone, his eyes were now filled with fear.

"Jiang Chen, you-you-you just wait here..."

Huang Liu said and ran back into the Prefecture.

After a while, another group of people walked out of the Prefecture. This time, there were up to 30 of them. Each one of them was outrageously strong. The Qi emitted from them was enough to show that some of them held a prestigious position in the Prefecture. There were a few elders who looked like guests but had a late Earth Immortal cultivation base. Experts with this level of cultivation base was probably among the top throughout this entire city.

Looking at the scene, anyone could tell how deep Jiang Chen had gotten this matter to. He had drawn out the higher ups of the Prefecture.

This time, the leader was not a late Earth Immortal elder, but rather a young woman who looked to be in her twenties, dressed in a long light blue dress, with a straight waist-length dark hair and

some strands of hair touched her delicate face due to the breeze, natural-red lips and a pair of gem-like glittering eyes.

Every gesture she made emitted the aura of nobility. Apart from her beautiful appearance, she also had pride displayed on her expression. Even Jiang Chen had to admit that this was a truly beautiful girl. Her beauty was almost on par with Wu Ningzhu and Yan Chenyu.

What surprised him more was her cultivation base. She had already reached the scary late Earth Immortal realm at such a young age. It seemed like the Prefecture still had talented cultivators in the city.

“She’s beautiful...”

Han Cong’s eyes were staring at the girl, and almost lost his mind.

“Don’t stare at her. She’s the Big Miss of the Prefecture, Yan Qingcheng. No one is allowed to blaspheme her, the way you look at her is already considered a blasphemy to her.”

Han Changling immediately pinched Han Cong hard. The first beauty of Yan City was someone they seriously didn’t want to offend.

Brother Jiang, she’s Yan Qingcheng, the only daughter of the City Lord. She has a uniquely high position in the Prefecture. I didn’t expect us to draw her out. It seems like things are getting more and more difficult.

Han Changling spoke to Jiang Chen via divine sense.

“Big Miss, that’s him.” Huang Liu pointed at Jiang Chen.

When Yan Qingcheng and the other elders saw the scene outside, their gaze immediately shifted to Jiang Chen, their eyes displayed an angry glare and had the impulse to rush forward and shred him into pieces. To them, it was outrageous. No one had ever dared to create trouble in front of the Prefecture, let alone beat up their

people. They couldn't imagine how much audacity this young man had.

Only Yan Qingcheng was looking at Jiang Chen with her very composed pair of gem-like eyes, studying him from top to bottom, as if trying to peel the facade of this bold young man.

Chapter 1064 - Panic-Stricken

Jiang Chen glanced casually at Yan Qingcheng, but then stayed silent with his confident and charming face and posture.

Yan Qingcheng couldn't help but shiver whilst a hint of shock flashed in her eyes. With her looks, that she was very confident in, no male in Yan City was as indifferent as Jiang Chen every time they looked at her. She could sense that Jiang Chen's composure wasn't a facade.

There were only two explanation to this situation. One was she wasn't charming enough and second was Jiang Chen was just too composed. She had never doubted her own charisma, but it was rare to see a young man as composed as him.

Adding the fact that he, who was merely a late Human Immortal expert, could easily defeat early Earth Immortal expert shocked her even more. She was claimed to be a rare genius in the city. When she was still at late Human Immortal realm, the strongest opponent that she could fight was a half-step Earth Immortal expert. She wouldn't stand a chance if she were to fight a true Earth Immortal expert. So, comparing her to this young man, who could defeat an early Earth Immortal expert with just one strike, made her feel inferior to him.

In addition, Jiang Chen's boldness had astounded her. She couldn't believe that a late Human Immortal expert would come over and cause trouble, beating up the people of the Prefecture. Either he was a brainless man or he had greater trump cards to win the fight.

Looking at Jiang Chen's appearance, he didn't seem to have a brain problem. Also, a person with brain problem would not have defeated an early Earth Immortal expert.

Because of this, she felt interested in this young man. She would like to see what kind of trump cards does he have for him to be so

bold and injure so many of her people.

“Big Miss, let me kill this first person to disrespect the city for good. We can’t allow him to destroy the dignity of the Prefecture.”

An intermediate Earth Immortal elder spoke. His body had been shrouded by Immortal Qi. It seemed like he was ready to charge at Jiang Chen at any time with just a word from Yan Qingcheng.

“No, I’ll take care of him.” Yan Qingcheng said.

Her gentle voice contained a trace of resoluteness, she sounded like a heroine.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Yan Qingcheng stepped forward and asked.

“That’s right.” Jiang Chen’s tone was indifferent.

“You have injured my people. I suppose you have a good reason for doing this?”

Yan Qingcheng smiled faintly. Her name fitted her features perfectly, because this smile was enough to overthrow all the men in the city.

“It’s because they provoked me first.”

Jiang Chen shrugged disapprovingly.

What?

As soon as she heard the reason, Yan Qingcheng became even more dumbfounded for a brief moment. She expected it to be a more solid reason. The truth was that she had already known everything that happened here. Since Huang Liu wouldn’t dare risk his life for 50 low grade Immortal Meta Stones by lying to her, he told her the truth.

So, she expected Jiang Chen to give her a good reason for his actions. Such a short and vague answer dumbfounded her. Adding the domineering aura that she sensed from Jiang Chen’s body, her

interest in Jiang Chen was stirred up.

“What a brazen and audacious brat! It seems like he’s just picking on us!”

“Big Miss, don’t waste your breath with this wild man. Let me kill him now. I don’t believe that he has still a life to live after injuring our people.”

“Kill him! He’s too presumptuous. He’s just a puny late Human Immortal. Does he really think he’s some kind of a powerful figure?”

.....

“Jiang Chen, I heard that you demanded 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones with just this carriage of herbs?”

Yan Qingcheng ignored the angered experts behind her and continued to ask.

Jiang Chen nodded, realizing that Yan Qingcheng wasn’t a rash person. Putting her status and position into the picture, he felt that she was the right person to speak to.

“Depending solely on this carriage of herbs, it surely isn’t worth that much, but I can turn them into high grade pills that will make 100,000 Immortal Meta Stones a small number.”

He stated his intention in a very calm manner. He had always been a meticulous person and would never fight an uncertain battle. He saw the importance of an alchemist after learning that these villagers didn’t even complain even if they travelled thousands of miles just to deliver a carriage of herbs. He was sure that an alchemist was still a respected figure in the Immortal World, especially in a small region like One-Line-Sky.

Since he couldn’t use his identity as an ascendant, he should make good use of his skills in alchemy. With his skills, it would be a piece of cake for him to convert these herbs into pills. He could already imagine how these people would treat him after knowing

that he was an alchemist. On the contrary, if the Prefecture failed to see this opportunity to build rapport with a rare alchemist, they would surely be idiots. But idiots couldn't have ruled Yan City for this long.

Sure enough, Yan Qingcheng's expression changed dramatically after listening to Jiang Chen.

"You're an alchemist?"

Yan Qingcheng's eyes sparkled.

"Of course."

Jiang Chen sounded as calm as the breeze. When the experts of the Prefecture heard that he was an alchemist, they immediately changed the way they looked at him. Their glaring eyes were now mixed with a hint of respect.

Seeing their dramatic change, Jiang Chen realized that he had underestimated the status of an alchemist in this new world. A high ranked alchemist was a person not to be trifled with. In other words, Jiang Chen should not be accounted guilty for beating up these impulsive guards. Instead, they should blame themselves for opposing a noble and respected alchemist.

"Words alone have no proof," said Yan Qingchen

A smile was seen on Jiang Chen's face. He grabbed the carriage, and immediately, all the herbs flew towards his direction. Under the control of his soul power, the herbs were divided automatically into a few groups. The whole process happened in an instant.

Yan Qingchen's eyes glittered after seeing what happened. As a respected figure in the Prefecture, she had seen quite a lot of stuff about concoction even though she wasn't an alchemist. She saw that Jiang Chen had classified all these herbs so accurately, and every group of herbs could produce one pill.

This fact alone was enough to prove that he was an alchemist.

“My god.”

Han Changling who was watching at the side was shocked. Naturally, he had some knowledge about alchemist afters delivering herbs for so many years, but he had not thought that Jiang Chen, an ascendant they saved halfway in their journey, was actually an alchemist. He knew how valuable an alchemist was all too well. A good alchemist would be treated respectfully even by the City Lord. If Jiang Chen was really a powerful alchemist, it wouldn't be a problem even if he had killed a few of their people, because the Prefecture wouldn't risk losing a good alchemist just because of the lives of a few insignificant people.

“Come on, is Brother Jiang really an alchemist? No wonder he was so resolute and demanded 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

“Haha! I never thought that Brother Jiang is an alchemist. If he can really concoct pills using these herbs, he would surely be welcomed by the Prefecture. By then, not only our village will be out of danger, but we'll also have benefits.”

“Brother Jiang is truly amazing! I knew that he still has a hidden trump card when I saw how confident he was.”

.....

The villagers had gotten excited. A moment before, they were on the brink of collapse knowing that they had offended the Prefecture big time, because that would doom not only Jiang Chen but also their village. However, none of them thought that Jiang Chen would have such a strong trump card.

Hu... *Hu...*

With a wave of his palm, fire rushed out, immediately filling the air in front of the gate with a sea of fire. All the herbs were encompassed by it. Crackling sound was heard as the herbs began to melt.

“What? How can there be such a way of concocting pills?”

“That’s right. Refining so many herbs at the same time? That’s impossible to do. Plus, those herbs are used to concoct different types of pills. Could it be that he’s planning to make different pills simultaneously?”

“No, that’s not possible, that’s literally impossible. Even a great alchemist could not concoct so many pills at the same time.”

.....

The elders of the Prefecture were shocked. Their faces were full of disbelief. Although there’s no alchemist among them, they still had seen how a pill was made. The reason why there were limited number of alchemist was because the concoction process was too cumbersome and troublesome. An ordinary being wouldn’t be able to control it.

Therefore, even the alchemist in the Prefecture had to refine the herbs successively before combining them. And even so, there was a certain rate of failure. So one could imagine what the result would be if an alchemist refined all the herbs at the same time.

Yan Qingcheng’s eyes were growing brighter and brighter, she was astounded by Jiang Chen’s technique. Every herb was melted and combined rapidly to form a pill, different combination of herbs would produce different kind of pills. Despite the complexity of the process, with Jiang Chen skill, he didn’t make even a single mistake in the process. This scene was enough to shock everyone there.

To Jiang Chen, concocting pills was too simple and easy to achieve. He found no difference between the pills of the Immortal World and the pills of Saint Origin World. However, due to the herbs being nourished by dense Immortal Qi here, the pills concocted from them were considered true Immortal Pill.

Chapter 1065 - Two Hundred Thousand

True Thunderfire was used in previous translations for one of the flames in concoction of Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, now it's changed to Lightning Flame.

True Dragon Fire > True Dragon Flame

Ignoring everyone's surprised look, Jiang Chen composedly concocted pills. The grades of the pills were determined by the quality of the herbs. And all the herbs delivered by Han Village were very high in quality, as they wouldn't dare send inferior quality herbs to the Prefecture.

However, all of these herbs were commonly seen, so only ordinary Immortal Pills could be produced from them, but because of its ordinariness, a lot of people demanded it. Different alchemist would concoct different grades of the same pill. Pills that were concocted using Jiang Chen's Great Soul Derivation Technique, Lightning Flame as well as True Dragon Flame was no doubt the finest of the finest.

Crack *Crack* *Crack*

Crackling sounds were emitted incessantly as the herbs were melting down in rapid speed. The way Jiang Chen concocted those pills looked so casual and easy, and it seemed like there was no possibility that he would fail.

The whole scene turned silent, they were too busy staring at Jiang Chen. In their point of view, it was a miracle and an enjoyment to be able to see such a way of concoction.

Steward Wu, as well as the other guards climbed to their feet. They too were attracted by Jiang Chen's action, as if they had forgotten about the pain in their bodies.

Yan Qingcheng's eyes looked obsessed. Although she had no idea whether these pills would be a success or not, she was totally

fascinated by the method of concoction.

A few minutes later, the sea of fire receded back into Jiang Chen's body. Meanwhile, a strong fragrance of medicine filled the air, astonishing everyone around.

In front of him was a few dozen of pills, hovering in the air and constantly emitting brilliant lights. The fragrance of the pills were incomparably rich. Furthermore, these pills were colorful, beautiful and were divided into different categories. Every pill had the size of a thumb and its surface was smooth, exquisite and spotless.

“It's done.”

“My god, a few dozen pills are concocted in such a short period of time. If I didn't see this with my own eyes, I wouldn't have believed it.”

“I never thought that there is such a concoction method in the Heavens and Earth. Brother Jiang is too amazing! Did you all see that? Every single pill shines like jade and the quality is the finest of the finest.”

.....

Every villager's eyes went wide, they couldn't believe what they were seeing. Not just them, but also the people of the Prefecture. Every one of them were gaping at the scene. Yan Qingcheng's gaze was glued on the hovering pills.

Yan Qingcheng grabbed one of the pills and examined it thoroughly. She then praised, “This Profound Yang Pill does not have any impurities. This is the finest grade that was produced from all the extracted essence of the herbs, worth 2000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

“That's right. I've never seen such a fine Profound Yang Pill. Two thousand low grade Immortal Meta Stones is just a conservative estimate. With ten Profound Yang Pills here, I believe the value is

more than 20,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

“That’s the Floating Pill. It is highly beneficial to cultivators. The grade of this pill isn’t any lower than the Profound Yang Pill. One of these is also worth 2000. And with the total of ten, it is also worth more than 20,000 immortal stones.”

.....

All the elders and guests were shocked. The pills that Jiang Chen had made were common pills. With their eyesight, they could naturally see the value of these pills. There were a total of six different types of pills concocted. Each of which has a high price. Summing it all, it’s definitely worth more than 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. From here, they could see that Jiang Chen wasn’t lying about the price.

“Elder Liu, go and get 200,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones.” Yan Qingcheng said to an elder beside her.

“Yes, Big Miss.”

Elder Liu did not dare be disrespectful. Immediately, he disappeared at the gate of the Prefecture after he darted a glance at Jiang Chen. This time, his glance was now of respect instead of a glare.

No one in the scene disapproved Yan Qingcheng’s decision despite the value of the pills weren’t worth that much meta stones. The reason she offered the reward of 200,000 low grade stones without hesitation was because of Jiang Chen, he was a great treasure that couldn’t be measured by low grade Immortal Meta Stones. So what they wanted to do right now was to recruit Jiang Chen. If a terrifying alchemist like him was recruited by the other major powers in the city, they would surely suffer a great loss.

Although Yan City seemed peaceful on the surface, there were upheavals that were even greater than Fragrant Sky City behind those walls. Despite the Prefecture being the ruler of the city, there

had been competition between them and the other strong major powers which were as strong as them.

A while later, Elder Liu returned with a grey storage pouch in his hand, and gave it to Yan Qingcheng.

She walked generously towards Jiang Chen and said, “Young Master Jiang, here’s 200,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones as an apology for my underlings’ rash behaviors, and for all the pills you have concocted.”

After hearing this, Jiang Chen had to admit that Yan Qingcheng was good at winning people’s heart and responsible enough to bear the mistakes made by her subordinates. When she saw his extraordinary concoction methods, instead of berating and reprimanding her subordinates, she apologized personally despite her noble status. A female like her, who was also an absolute beauty, would be respected by all her underlings and they would be loyal to the Prefecture.

“My god, 200 000 Immortal stones of fortune...”

Han Cong felt his head spinning. The other villagers, including the knowledgeable and resourceful Chief, had the same expression. They knew very well how extreme two hundred thousand worth of fortune was.

“It’s 200 000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. If Han Village can have all of these fortunes, our village improve by leaps and bounds and will rise above the neighboring villages.”

“What’re you thinking? These stones belong to Brother Jiang. If it wasn’t for him, I’m afraid we won’t even live. Ah Cong, you have done an extremely good job by saving Brother Jiang.”

“Brother Jiang has such a terrifying alchemy prowess and combat strength. His future achievement would be immeasurable. Today, with Big Miss Yang Qingcheng personally trying to recruit him, his status in Yan City will soar to an irreplaceable level. Ah

Cong, you must regard him as your idol from now on.”

.....

Every Han Villager was dumbfounded by the figure of 200,000, but they were smart enough to know that this had nothing to do with them. They knew that the Prefecture was being so generous mainly because they wanted to recruit Jiang Chen.

“In that case, I won’t deny it.”

Jiang Chen gave a faint smile and took the storage pouch. Since his arrival in the Immortal World, what he lacked the most was Immortal Meta Stones. So, he naturally wouldn’t refuse their offer. Additionally, this had improved his impression of Yan Qingcheng. He knew that it wouldn’t be a bad choice to befriend a major power like the Prefecture after his ascent to this world.

Seeing Jiang Chen accepting the offer, a smile was revealed on Yan Qingcheng’s face. She was worried that Jiang Chen would decline it, a top alchemist like Jiang Chen always had their own pride. If he did refuse her offer and apology, it was still understandable after her guards had offended him.

At this moment, Steward Wu and Huang Liu were completely frightened. They were standing there as stiff as a stick, not even daring to breath as they realized that they had just provoked an existence that they couldn’t afford to provoke. Given their status, their brains must have gone haywire to offend such a superior alchemist.

In this brief moment, all their hatred for Jiang Chen dissipated and they started to feel a sense of respect and gratitude from him. Even if Jiang Chen killed them, their deaths was nothing. The Prefecture would never go against a powerful alchemist because of them.

Using divine sense, the storage pouch was opened. The inside of the pouch was filled with low grade Immortal Meta Stones. He

split the total amount into half, sending 100,000 stones into his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Due to the influence of the law of the Immortal World, only those formidable Divine Immortals had the ability to control the spatial force and connect it to their Qi Sea, allowing them to store items in their Qi Sea. Any expert below the Divine Immortal realm would use an external storage such as a spatial ring and storage pouch to carry items, but it was a different case for Jiang Chen. Now that twelve levels of the pagoda had been restored, all of the low grade Immortal Meta Stones had no problem being stored inside.

After a while, he approached Han Changling with his storage pouch and gave it to the Chief. “Chief, here’s 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. This is what Han Village deserves.”

Seeing what happened, Han Changling panicked, staring at the storage pouch in horror. His hands wouldn’t dare stretch near it.

“Brother Jiang, this is too much and they ought to be yours. This has nothing to do with Han Village.” Han Changling dared not to accept it.

Chapter 1066 - The Superior Foreign Elder

Han Changling naturally wouldn't dare accept it despite knowing that the offer could further enhance the overall strength of his village or even allow his village to dominate the other weaker villages, this fortune was too much for him to accept.

“There's no need to be too polite to me Chief. Those pills are concocted out of the herbs you provided. Naturally, these low grade Immortal Meta Stones belongs to you.”

After Jiang Chen finished speaking, he placed the pouch on Han Changling's hands without giving him any chance to decline any further. Jiang Chen was a swift and decisive person, a person who separated kindness and scores. When it came to his friends and benefactors, he would never be calculative. Besides, Han Village needed his help right now. If he didn't provide any help to them now, they might forever remain a remote village like many others. Even the genius Han Cong would find it extremely hard to escape this impoverish trap.

Producing a genius like Han Cong, Han Village was already considered not bad. But, despite how talented a genius was, proper cultivation resources was a crucial element in cultivation. Without sufficient cultivation resources, the talent would never turn into a powerful expert.

“Many thanks, Brother Jiang.”

Han Changling saluted Jiang Chen deeply. He now felt that the storage pouch weighed a million kilograms, so heavy that he had trouble breathing. Although he had just known Jiang Chen for a few days, he had already gained a certain understanding of him. He now knew that Jiang Chen would never take back the things he had given out.

“Oh my! 100,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. Our village never had so many stones. I never thought Brother Jiang would be

so generous.”

“Ah Cong... you really have done a great job this time. If it wasn't for your kindness, our village would have missed this fortune.”

“Brother Jiang sure is a forthright man. He who has changed the fate of our village, he is now regarded as the greatest benefactor of Han village.”

.....

Overwhelmed by excitement, all the villagers were at a loss for words. Han Cong, on the other hand, was giggling delightfully. When he decided to save Jiang Chen, he didn't think about receiving any rewards, it was just out of his good intention. Now, it seemed like his good deed had brought a huge turn to their village.

“Young Master Jiang, Qingcheng wants to invite you to become our honored guest. I hope Young Master can accept it.” Being a person who did not like to prevaricate, Yan Qingcheng asked straightforwardly.

A young and capable alchemist like Jiang Chen was what the Prefecture needed the most. That was why she needed Jiang Chen to stay.

A foreign elder had the same rank as an ordinary elder, but wasn't subjected to the jurisdiction and constraints of the Prefecture. It was like Jiang Chen was being regarded as the guest of the Prefecture. However, one should be a late Earth Immortal to qualify for this position; it was absurd for a late Human Immortal to demand for such a privilege. So, they were afraid that only Jiang Chen had such honor to be a foreign elder.

Nevertheless, no one disapproved Yan Qingcheng's decision at all. After witnessing Jiang Chen's concoction method, they were very clear that Jiang Chen's value was even greater than all their late Earth Immortal guests in the past.

“I will accept your invitation but I've one condition,” answered

Jiang Chen.

“Please say, Young Master Jiang. As long as the Prefecture is able to do it, Qingcheng will promise it,” replied Yan Qingcheng with a smile.

Jiang Chen turned to Han Cong and said, “Ah Cong, come over here.”

“Eh...?”

Han Cong was astonished and lost his senses for a second. This was the first time that he came to a big place like Yan City. And after seeing so many experts and witnessing so many things that happened just a while ago, how would he dare stand near the Big Miss of the Prefecture?

“Stop your ‘eh’ and get over there quickly!”

Han Second kicked Han Cong’s butt. Everyone, including Han Changling, looked excited. They weren’t fools. They knew that something good would happen when Jiang Chen called Han Cong to his side at this particular moment. As Han Cong was the only hope of Han village, if he was given the chance to cultivate in this city, they would really prostrate themselves to the gods.

Han Cong came to Jiang Chen’s side, seeming a little nervous.

“Miss Qingcheng, my condition is to allow this young brother to cultivate in the Prefecture,” said Jiang Chen.

Han Cong’s eyes went wide after hearing what Jiang Chen had just said. His eyes were full of excitement. To cultivate in the Prefecture of Yan City? It was something that he wouldn’t even dare to dream of. One should know that this was the best environment for cultivation across the entire city. If he could really cultivate here, his future would certainly be bright, many times brighter compared to staying in Han village.

“No problem. He must be very talented to be recommended by Young Master Jiang. With him staying in our Prefecture, I’m sure

he will become one of the Prefecture's pillars in the future.”

It was out of her expectation that his condition was only this, thus she agreed without even a moment of consideration. Also, her impression of Jiang Chen improved once more due to his seemingly humble request.

“Ah Cong, why haven't you thanked Big Miss yet?”

Han Changling added hastily, glaring from behind.

“Thank you Big Miss.”

Han Cong hurriedly expressed his thanks. He, too, was feeling incomparably delighted. He had never expected that he would get pass this obstacle so quickly. To him, it was already a success to have a chance to cultivate in Yan City.

“Steward Wu, treat the Han villagers well and apologize for your mistakes. From now on, all people from Han village will be treated as our guests and are allowed to come and leave Yan City at any time.” Yan Qingcheng ordered.

After hearing this, the Han villagers were at a loss for words once again. They felt that these good things were coming to them so unexpectedly, just like a dream. It was totally impossible for them to become the guests of the Prefecture. They knew that they had found a great backer and from today onwards, no other villages would dare to offend them anymore.

“Yes, Big Miss.”

Steward Wu didn't dare to be neglectful. He was fortunate that she didn't hold them responsible for creating such a huge trouble, offending a high grade alchemist would certainly cost them a lot.

With his pale face, Huang Liu walked shakily towards Steward Wu whilst being glared at. He knew pretty well that he was the cause of all these events.

Steward Wu dragged Huang Liu near Jiang Chen and said,

“Young Master Jiang, we apologize for failing to recognize Mount Tai with our eyes. We hope that young master can forgive us.”

Anyone would know that discretion was the better part of valor. So, it wasn't a disgrace to lower one's head to someone greater. They knew very well that the gap between them and Jiang Chen was too wide. In order to continue surviving in the Prefecture, they must make sure that the grudges between them and Jiang Chen was resolved.

Jiang Chen ignored Steward Wu and turned to Huang Liu. “Don't go too far next time ya! The lives of these villagers aren't easy.”

“Y-yes. W-w-will definitely remember young master's teaching next time.”

Huang Liu bowed to Jiang Chen several times. He knew that the reason for him being a steward in the Prefecture was all because of his cousin and not for his talents or skills. So now, he wouldn't even dare show the slightest bit of disrespect to Jiang Chen.

After a while, the group entered the Prefecture. Under the arrangement of Yan Qingcheng, an exquisite courtyard was given to Jiang Chen as his place to live. Across the entire Yan City, Jiang Chen was the first late Human Immortal expert who got to live in such a building.

Steward Wu and Huang Liu brought the Han villagers to another place. This time, they had to treat them well. If it was before, they wouldn't even look at them, but now everything had changed. Given the villagers' relationship with Jiang Chen, they wouldn't dare be negligent to them.

In the courtyard was Yan Qingcheng and Jiang Chen.

“I wonder if Young Master is satisfied with this place,” asked Yan Qingcheng.

“En, you're very thoughtful Big Miss.”

Jiang Chen was a man who could differentiate good and evil.

Though she was doing her best to treat him well, it was mainly because of his extraordinary alchemy skill. Nevertheless, he was very satisfied with her hospitality and manners.

“Every time our Prefecture accepts a new foreign elder who is also an alchemist, my father would always come to welcome the person. But my father is in seclusion for the time being, treating the injuries he suffered from the cold poison after a recent battle with a beast. I hope Young Master won’t mind this,” said Yan Qingcheng.

“I may have ways to deal with the cold poison,” said Jiang Chen.

It was very humble of him to say that he might have ways to treat it, because he was literally immune to poison. Not even the lethal poison of the Poisonous Nether Frog could hurt him, let alone a simple cold poison. He could also refine the Yin energy in the poison using his water essence. In the Heavens and Earth, there was nothing colder than his Pure Water.

“Is that so?”

Yan Qingcheng’s eyes lit up by Jiang Chen words. As a matter of fact, the injuries caused by the cold poison was so serious. Otherwise, the City Lord, a Heaven Immortal expert, wouldn’t have to stay in seclusion for so long. It would be great if Jiang Chen could solve this problem.

Chapter 1067 - The Head Alchemist

Yan City didn't look as calm as it looked. Apart from the Prefecture, there were also two overlords which were strong enough to compete for the resources of the city. The news of the City Lord being injured badly by the cold poison remained a secret. If this news was disclosed to the public, no one could assure that those two major powers wouldn't do anything unfavorable to the Prefecture. As fire couldn't be wrapped by paper, the news about the City Lord would be leaked sooner or later. As such, the top priority right now was to remove the poison off of the City Lord's body.

Within these few days, Yan Qingcheng had been worrying over this matter. When she saw Jiang Chen's extraordinary means of concoction, she felt compelled to spit out the truth.

Bang!

At this moment, a loud bang was heard at the door of the courtyard. Judging by the sound of it, it was probably kicked by someone. Someone who would dare to kick the Prefecture's doors must be either an idiot or with status not lower than Jiang Chen's.

There were five of them, looking full of momentum. They all looked to have reached the age of fifty and they were incomparably strong. Four of them had reached the late Earth Immortal realm while the leader, who was the strongest, was a half-step Heaven Immortal.

The faces of all these intruders were brimming with haughtiness which no ordinary people could possess. That was a kind of nobility that stemmed from the bottom of one's bone.

However, these people obviously didn't notice that Yan Qingcheng was here because they all looked stunned and their arrogant aura was extinguished. In the Prefecture, Yan Qingcheng had absolute status. Even the half-step Heaven Immortal expert

wouldn't dare disrespect her. Normally, most of the things were handled by her instead of the City Lord. In other words, she was the reason why the Prefecture still stood strong in Yan City.

“Uncle Dong, why are you all here?”

Yan Qingcheng sounded a little dissatisfied but kicking the door wasn't the main reason she was dissatisfied. She was mainly discontented with how they interrupted the conversation when she was just about to say the details of the cold poison.

However, the newcomers weren't ordinary experts, so she still needed to pay them some respect.

“I didn't expect Big Miss to be here. I heard that a young alchemist has just arrived in our Prefecture. I heard that he has a great concoction technique and despite him being a mere late Human Immortal realm, Big Miss has accepted him as a foreign elder. So, I have come to visit him,” said one of the newcomer.

His eyes were brimming with disdain after confirming Jiang Chen's cultivation base. In his perspective, no matter how great this young man was, he was merely a late Human Immortal. He had been studying alchemy for almost a lifetime and the reason he got to where he was now was all because of the efforts he had contributed to the Prefecture. So, it wasn't very pleasant for him to hear that some nobody had been given the foreign elder title on the first day of his arrival.

Jiang Chen, on the other hand, had already discerned the elder's emotions, the same emotions were running in the heads of the other four experts

“Let me introduce him to you all, he is Young Master Jiang Chen.”

After finishing her introduction, she looked over at Jiang Chen and smiled. “Young Master Jiang, this is Elder Dong Linfu, the leading alchemist in Yan City, and also the head alchemist of our

Prefecture. His is a half-step Heaven Immortal and only one step away to become a true Heaven Immortal. As for the other experts, they are all highly respected alchemists and also my father's friends. Their contributions have helped our Prefecture sustain the leading role in the city."

"I feel honored to see these seniors."

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Dong Linfu and the others to greet them. In fact, he didn't need Yan Qingcheng's introduction to know their identity. He was able to tell that all of them were alchemist with just a glance.

"I've imagined that the one picked by Big Miss would be someone very extraordinary. Now it seems it isn't the case."

"That's right, Big Miss. Have you taken this man too seriously? How could he earn the title of foreign elder at such a young age? Plus, he's just a late Human Immortal. Should we place our dignity on this kid even though he has only gotten this title just because of his concoction technique."

"Big Miss isn't an alchemist, naturally she doesn't have a good understanding of alchemy. The path of alchemy is also like cultivation path. The concoction ability will be greatly affected by one's cultivation base. With him being a late Human Immortal, the most he can be is the lowest rank of alchemist despite how powerful or gifted he is."

.....

These seniors had made their way here just to question Jiang Chen's ability. The fact that Jiang Chen could get a status and title in the Prefecture dissatisfied them. They even felt that Yan Qingcheng had taken a fancy to this Adonis, but they understood that she would never simply fall for some male cultivator, especially a grunt that was only a late Human Immortal.

"Gentlemen, you all naturally don't know how brilliant Young

Master Jiang's techniques are without witnessing it by yourself. I believe that once you see his ability, you will stop picking on him. I dare say that Young Master Jiang's technique is the first I have ever seen and it was magical." Yan Qingcheng said.

What she said was the truth, although she had exaggerated it a little. Being a shrewd woman who knew how to make good use of an opportunity, she already predicted that Jiang Chen would be scrutinized by the other senior alchemists. Right now, she had to take advantage of this antagonism.

"Oh? First time seeing in your life? Does Big Miss mean that this brat's technique is even greater than mine?"

Dong Lingfu's expression turned ugly after being compared to a late Human Immortal brat. If these words didn't come out of Yan Qingcheng, he would've burst into anger.

"Qingcheng didn't mean it that way, but Young Master Jiang's technique can indeed be described as astounding." Yan Qingcheng continued.

"Alright. Since Big Miss favors him so much, I will have to have a round of battle with him. If this man's technique is really above mine, I will have him replace me as the head alchemist." Dong Linfu said.

In his heart, a newcomer like Jiang Chen was absolutely not incomparable to him. It was an insult for him to compete with such an insignificant figure like this young man, but Yan Qingcheng had provoked his dignity. So, he had no choice but to compete with Jiang Chen.

"Uncle Dong, this isn't really right. We are all here to render service to the Prefecture where we belong. We shouldn't disturb the peace among ourselves," said Yan Qingcheng.

"It's because we have dedicated ourselves to the Prefecture that makes it necessary to determine who's superior. Moreover, there

are quite a lot of alchemists in the Prefecture and the head alchemist plays an important role. Also, I would like to see whether he is eligible to work for the Prefecture.”

Dong Linfu had decided that he must have a competition with Jiang Chen so that he could humiliate this young brat as much as his wanted.

“Since Elder Dong insist, I will play along with you.”

A slight smile was plastered on Jiang Chen’s face. He knew in his heart that he had to accept this challenge if he wanted to establish a reputation in the Prefecture. Besides, he would never back down from a direct confrontation like this.

“Very well. Since you both want to have a competition, I will fulfill your wishes. I think you all know that my father has been inflicted by cold poison and his condition isn’t improving. I have already prepared the herbs for concocting the Ardent Yang Pill. I will use this as a competition for you guys, and with my father as the judge. What do you two think?” Yan Qingcheng said grimly.

Those herbs that were initially prepared for Dong Linfu to concoct the Ardent Yang Pill was a perfect opportunity for them to compete. If any one of them concocted a high grade Ardent Yang Pill, her father’s cold poison would be cured.

“Alright. The competition will take place tomorrow. Jiang Chen, you should know the difficulty of concocting this pill. If you think you can’t do it, you better admit defeat now so that Big Miss’ time won’t be wasted on preparing the herbs. You should also know that every herb used in this pill is incomparably precious.”

Dong Linfu looked at Jiang Chen with a sneer.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen, with his face full of confidence, replied with a faint smile, “The process of concocting the Ardent Yang Pill is indeed cumbersome because it needs 49 different herbs that have the purest Yang to be melted and extract

the strong Yang essence from it at the right time, and use it to get rid of the cold poison in City Lord's body. Fortunately, I happen to have the same concoction experience."

Jiang Chen's words stunned them. The way they looked at him changed a little. Ardent Yang Pill was a high grade pill that ordinary alchemists would not try concocting. Although they didn't know whether Jiang Chen could concoct an Ardent Yang Pill, they were amazed by how fluent he blurted out the details of the process.

"Humph! In that case, we'll meet again tomorrow."

Dong Linfu let out a cold humph and left with his companions. Although Jiang Chen was able to describe the method of concoction of the Ardent Yang Pill, it was only enough to make him recognize his existence. From the start until now, he had never put Jiang Chen in his eyes.

"Does Young Master Jiang have any certainty in concocting this?"

Yan Qingcheng looked over at Jiang Chen and said in a serious tone. She wouldn't dare joke about her father's life.

"Rest assured, Big Miss. I will certainly concoct the Ardent Yang Pill for City Lord and get rid of the cold poison inside his body." Jiang Chen said confidently.

In fact, it was too simple for him to remove the cold poison, but in order to compete with Dong Linfu, he had to use the Ardent Yang Pill to treat the City Lord's injuries. This pill would help him to establish a place in Yan City.

Chapter 1068 - Yan Dongliu

The next day.

Currently, a large number of people gathered at meeting hall of the Prefecture, because today was a very important day. Yesterday, a young alchemist joined the Prefecture; today he would be competing with the former head alchemist Dong Linfu for the title of head alchemist.

In order to be accepted in this place, the expert must have these two requirements. First was cultivation base. The lowest cultivation base among them was late Earth Immortal realm and the highest cultivation base was half-step Heaven Immortal realm. Second was loyalty. Everyone present here had absolute loyalty to the City Lord. None of them here would try and reveal the secret about the cold poison in the City Lord's body.

The two sides of the meeting hall was flanked with two columns of seats. No doubt, the first seat of the column was for alchemist Dong Linfu, he was the most qualified expert either in the aspect of cultivation or alchemy.

The City Lord, Big Miss and Jiang Chen hadn't arrived yet, but the hall was already filled with noises of discussion. It was a worthy topic to discuss about the young man who was a mere late Human Immortal but had accepted the challenge of the great alchemist Dong Linfu.

"What's that Jiang Chen thinking? Is he not aware of his own limits? He's just a puny Human Immortal. I wonder where he got the guts to accept the challenge of Alchemist Dong."

"That's right. Big Miss has always been a wise decision maker, but why is she so unreasonable this time? She should know that the Prefecture is a great major power in Yan City. It isn't a place where everyone can come and be a foreign elder. Also, he is an unprecedented Human Immortal foreign elder."

“Don’t underestimate that Jiang Chen, I’ve witnessed how he concocted those pills outside the Prefecture. I can say that his technique is shocking. For so long that I have lived, I’ve never seen such a terrifying technique of concoction.”

“It’s true that this Jiang Chen is a rare genius. His combat strength alone is astonishing. Despite his late Human Immortal cultivation base, not even early Earth Immortal was a match for him. I have to admit that none of us could jump two levels like him, but anyway, there is an extremely large gap in power between him and Alchemist Dong. So it wasn’t a sensible choice to compete against the great Alchemist Dong.”

“Humph! I would like to meet this young man and see if he’s so good.”

.....

Everyone was filled with curiosity about Jiang Chen, but at the same time, dissatisfied about how preferential Big Miss had treated him. But for those who were with Big Miss outside the Prefecture and witnessed Jiang Chen’s concoction method, they felt that Jiang Chen deserved that title. That shocking scene had left an unforgettable impression in their heads.

At this moment, two silhouettes walked in from the outside. They were male and female. At first glance, it gave the impression of a couple, but as they got nearer, everyone could recognize that the male was Jiang Chen and the female was Yan Qingcheng. The fact that Yan Qingcheng was walking side by side with Jiang Chen showed how important she regarded this newcomer.

For a moment, everyone’s eyes fell upon Jiang Chen like sharp blades. The atmosphere of the hall turned tense. As many of them were seeing Jiang Chen for the first time, they were putting all of their attention to scrutinize this young man, which had created an invisible pressure on Jiang Chen.

However, Jiang Chen still looked calm and relaxed, as if he felt

nothing at all. His gesture and demeanor was confident and composed. It impressed and surprised them that a young man like him have such a disposition. Some had even changed their view on him even if this was the first time that they saw him.

“Elders, this is Jiang Chen. Today, he will compete with Uncle Dong. The two of them will have to concoct the Ardent Yang Pill for my father. I believe this even is worth witnessing,” said Yan Qingcheng with a smile.

“Since Big Sister admires this young man so much, we would like to see if he is really competent enough to compete with Alchemist Dong.” Someone spoke.

“We just have to be patient and watch. My father has already left seclusion. He and Uncle Yuan will be here soon,” said Yan Qingcheng.

Almost as soon as her voice faded, two strong wind blew into the meeting hall and turned into two silhouettes. The two middle-aged men traveled so fast, it was impressive.

Everyone, including Dong Linfu, stood up from their seats and immediately greeted these two newcomers without a moment of delay.

One of them was wearing a pale yellow robe, looking tall and thin, with a resolute and handsome face, and a pair of vigorous eyes. His gesture radiated an aura of nobility and there were traces of air movement around him. That was a clear indication of a Heaven Immortal expert.

In the Immortal World, reaching Heaven Immortal realm was the goal of many cultivators. Once an expert had reached this stage, the expert would be able to control the airflow around him and travel in the air.

This resolute-looking man wasn't a stranger. He was one of the overlords of Yan City, the Lord of the Prefecture, Yan Dongliu—an

early Heaven Immortal expert.

The other man was similarly strong. He was named Yuan Hong. He was the sworn brother of Yan Dongliu and held an important position in the Prefecture.

They were the two Heaven Immortal experts in the Prefecture.

“City Lord, Elder Yuan.”

Everyone greeted them respectfully.

“En, take your seat.”

Yan Dongliu waved his hand for them to sit down. Then, he and Hong Yuan turned to face Jiang Chen.

“Young Master, this is my father and this is Elder Hong Yuan. They are both Heaven Immortal experts, the strongest experts in our Prefecture.” Yan Qingcheng introduced.

“Jiang Chen greets City Lord and Elder Yuan.”

Quickly, Jiang Chen cupped his fists at the two seniors.

Seeing Jiang Chen’s demeanor, they were slightly shocked. One should know that if a late Human Immortal were to see them, the person would be shivering and quiver while speaking. To them, it was rare to find a young man as composed as him.

“Jiang Chen, I heard that you are very skillful in alchemy and is able to concoct the complex Ardent Yang Pill with your late Human Immortal cultivation.” Yan Dongliu said in a doubtful tone.

As a matter of fact, if this young man wasn’t highly recommended by his daughter, he wouldn’t waste a second on him.

“If I’m not mistaken, the poison in City Lord’s body has already penetrated deep into the bone marrow. If it isn’t removed as soon as possible, not even a hundred Ardent Yang Pill will be able to solve City Lord’s problem.”

Instead of answering the question, he turned to a new topic.

When Yan Dongliu heard this, he was shocked and he immediately changed the way he looked at Jiang Chen. Regarding the cold poison in his body, he had already tried his hardest to suppress it and not even an expert as powerful as him could detect it, but Jiang Chen was able to see it in just a glance. With such keen eyesight, there was no way that he wouldn't be shocked.

Chapter 1069 - Overturning Their Perception

Yan Dongliu was impressed by Jiang Chen. At least, he didn't look at Jiang Chen with as much disdain as a few minutes before. Regardless of what cultivation base this young man had, the fact that he discerned his condition at first glance amazed him.

“Not bad young man. I don't think the person recommended by Qingcheng will be any worse than my expectation. But Jiang Chen, Alchemist Dong is a senior who has achieved the true mastery in the field of alchemy. He seldom failed no matter what kind of pills he concocted. You are daunting to challenge this master, but how certain are you in concocting this Ardent Yang Pill?” asked Yan Dongliu with a softer tone.

“I have never failed in my concoction,” replied Jiang Chen plainly.

This single and casual sentence emitted the powerful confidence that he had. Indirectly, people in the hall were influenced by such confidence. They could tell that it was the confidence that came from his bones.

“Hehe. There's no need to brag, young man. You should know that even the greatest alchemist won't dare to say that he never failed before.” Yuan Hong said.

Jiang Chen didn't respond to Yuan Hong's sarcasm. He never liked to compete with words, but with action.

“City Lord, this kid is getting more and more arrogant. In that case, I'll show him what real concoction is.”

Dong Linfu stood up from his seat. In order to defend the dignity and status of being the head alchemist, he felt the need to teach this arrogant young man a good lesson, otherwise, he would become a laughing stock.

“Well then, the two of you will compete and I will be your judge. Coincidentally, the Ardent Yang Pill will be of great use to me, so I hope that you two can put more effort to it. Whoever’s pill that can eliminate the cold poison in my body will be handsomely rewarded,” said Yan Dongliu.

Regarding the cold poison in his body, he surely had no other options. The most he could do was to use his own power to suppress the poison, but this wasn’t a long-term solution. Like what Jiang Chen had said, the poison had already gone deep into his marrow. If he didn’t think of ways to remove the poison quick, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Later, Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong sat at the highest seats located at the center of the hall. The others moved backwards to empty out enough space for Jiang Chen and Dong Linfu. To them, it wasn’t easy to see the head alchemist of the Prefecture concocting a pill. Normally, even the alchemists wouldn’t get to see him often. Therefore, it was an enjoyment when they were given the chance to watch him concoct a pill live.

As for Jiang Chen, most of them didn’t put him in their eyes. First of all, the experts in the hall had higher cultivation base than him. Secondly, he was competing with the formidable Dong Linfu. None of them thought that he could survive this competition. After all, Dong Linfu’s reputation was too great for one to challenge.

Yan Qingcheng flipped her palm, two pale-grey storage pouches appeared and were sent to Jiang Chen and Dong Linfu. She said, “Inside are the ingredients for concocting the Ardent Yang Pill. Due to these herbs being very precious items, all I could get was two portions of the herbs.”

Everyone understood what Yan Qingcheng implied. It was a reminder that the contestants only had one chance. If they failed, they failed. To put it bluntly, this was a competition that allowed no failure, which was an extremely stressful condition for an

alchemist. Additionally, this competition would be a test of an alchemist's skill in concocting.

“Each of them only has one portion of herbs. This is going to put their alchemy skill to the test. I heard that the Ardent Yang Pill is made by using 49 different herbs and it was easy for one to make mistakes.”

“A great alchemist like Alchemist Dong only has a little chance of failure. In my opinion, it is definitely a pleasure to be able to watch his concoction live.”

“How can a puny Human Immortal concoct such a complex pill? I think that Jiang Chen is just digging a pit of humiliation.”

“We'll see. I think this man has some amazing skills either. As long as he isn't an idiot, he won't come to the front of the City Lord and make a fool of himself.”

.....

Sound of discussion stirred. Though the competitors only required to concoct one pill, the atmosphere was tense.

“Jiang Chen, there's still time if you regret your decision now. These herbs are very precious, I hope that you won't waste it.” Dong Linfu said sneeringly.

“I'd be glad if master doesn't waste the pouch of herbs,” said Jiang Chen composedly.

He was incomparably confident in his skills and would never put someone like Dong Linfu in his eyes.

“Boast without shame? Then, let's begin.”

Dong Linfu let out a cold humph, he immediately circulated his soul energy to prepare concocting. His face now seemed to have a trace of heaviness. After all, the Ardent Yang Pill wasn't any kind of ordinary pill and its ingredients were limited. This also put his years of expertise to the test. Also, with so many higher ups of the

Prefecture watching him and the pill was the key to treat City Lord's injuries, his reputation would be ruined if anything went wrong.

Hua La...

As Dong Linfu was preparing for his concoction, Jiang Chen had clattered out all the herbs from the storage pouch. 49 types of herbs were drifting in front of him, emitting medicinal fragrance that refreshed everyone's mind.

Furthermore, most of the herbs consisted of the purest Yang Qi. Any expert would benefit just by breathing it in.

Hu Hu...

Subsequently, a large flame was released from Jiang Chen, encompassing all the herbs.

“What?”

The scene immediately caused a commotion from the crowd. Except Yan Qingcheng and the alchemists who had witnessed Jiang Chen's skill yesterday, everyone was gaping at him, including Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong whose face were filled with disbelief.

Dong Linfu who was on the opposite side was shocked. He was still in the midst of preparing and adjusting his Qi, but Jiang Chen had already started concocting. The other thing that he couldn't accept was Jiang Chen's technique was unknown to him.

“What kind of joke is this? Who would concoct in such a way. We all know that the most important thing in concoction is the refinement. The first step is to extract the essence of every herb and this has to be done one after another, different herbs have different melting points. Isn't it ridiculous to melt all 49 herbs at the same time?”

“Bastard! This is a bastard's way of concocting. He is destroying the herbs. He's going to waste all of those precious herbs, even a

high rank alchemist wouldn't dare to do so. I have seen Alchemist Dong melting three kinds of herbs at the same time before which was astonishing. But 49 herbs altogether? This is nonsense."

"Did he even make preparations before concocting? Concoction is a very taxing process. The harder the concoction process, the greater the effort it will take. Even Alchemist Dong needs a dozen minutes to prepare before concocting. Is this man really an alchemist?"

.....

Everyone was shocked, especially those alchemists who were sitting at the side, they had an urge to cough up blood. A few of them even stood up from their seat due to overwhelming emotions. In their perspective, Jiang Chen's method was truly a joke. They, as alchemists, knew all too well how difficult and complex concocting was.

"Settle down everybody."

Yan Dongliu said in a low tone, he was afraid that such uneasiness would affect Jiang Chen's concoction. Despite the fact that Yan Qingcheng had already told him about Jiang Chen's concoction technique, he was still shocked by it and started to feel that Jiang Chen was an alchemist after all.

Crack *Crack* *Crack*

Crackling sounds were heard continuously from the sea of fire while the herbs were melting down. At this time, everyone's gaze was focused on that sea of fire and Jiang Chen's casual-looking face. He made the concoction look so easy, like it was as simple as eating.

As time passed, the scene was getting more and more silent. Many of them didn't even dare to blink. Even Dong Linfu who was the closest to Jiang Chen was involuntarily fascinated by Jiang Chen's technique, forgetting that he needed to adjust his

conditions for his concoction.

Everyone on the scene was an expert with keen eyesight even if they weren't experts in alchemy. Adding the fact that Jiang Chen's method wasn't concealed, they could see it clearly and this had shocked all of them very much once more.

Forty-nine different herbs were melted gradually in the sea of fire while the essence of the melted herbs were being extracted swiftly. None of the herbs were wasted in the process. It was scary to see that Jiang Chen had already reached such precise control over the flames and refinement.

“My god, how can this be possible?”

“This is truly a shocking event. I've never seen such a terrifying means of concoction. All the herbs are melted simultaneously so perfectly, and all the essence are extracted out at the same time. If I didn't see this with my own eyes, I certainly wouldn't have believed it.”

“It is an unprecedented concoction method. If he can really concoct the Ardent Yang Pill with such method, it's going to be a miracle. However, I still don't believe that he will succeed using such a way, he's just a puny late Human Immortal.”

“Stop talking guys. Let's just watch in silence. For me, I wish to see a miracle. If such a terrifying concoction method works, it can greatly reduce the time of concoction.”

.....

Not one of them wasn't shocked. Such scene had overturned their perception of alchemy.

Chapter 1070 - The Finest Grade of Ardent Yang Pill

To an alchemist like Dong Linfu, if he wanted to concoct an Ardent Yang Pill, he must first prepare himself for more than 10 minutes before starting to melt the herbs. It was cumbersome enough to have three herbs melted at the same time, let alone melting 49 herbs! They were afraid that the concoction of this pill would take at least two hours. Adding the fact that it would consume plenty of soul energy, there had to be breaks in the middle. The mixing process was also another crucial part. Once there's a mistake, the whole pill would become a waste. Therefore, in order to concoct an Ardent Yang Pill, the entire morning of the day would be expended at the very least.

A smile was revealed on Jiang Chen's face. His Great Soul Derivation Technique had almost reached its peak, which allowed him to control the entire process at his will. Such a unique advantage would surely stir up the envy of countless alchemists.

The way Yan Qingcheng looked at Jiang Chen now seemed slightly infatuated. A man was most charming when he was paying all of his attention to his work and a man with superior ability like Jiang Chen was even more charming.

Jiang Chen completely ignored everyone around, solely focusing on his concoction. Both of his hands were dancing in the air, sending out various complex dharma seals into the sea of fire. In just 10 minutes, the essence of all 49 herbs were extracted completely. The whole process went on, as smooth as running water. More importantly, none of the essences were wasted, which was considered a perfect extraction.

“How could there be such a technique?”

Dong Linfu was extremely shocked. For so many years that he had concocted pills, he had never seen such a method. From this

aspect alone, even he was greatly impressed by Jiang Chen's skill as he had no idea how Jiang Chen did it.

In other words, the process that should've taken two hours' time was completed by Jiang Chen in just 10 minutes, plus it was done perfectly. He strongly believed that even if he was given two hours' time, he wouldn't complete such a perfect extraction.

"That's amazing! Big Miss does have a pair of sharp eyes. This young man's concoction skills have opened our eyes wide."

"What the f*ck! What kind of monstrosity is this? With such terrifying skills in alchemy, I think even those major powers in One-Line-Sky will certainly compete in recruiting him. Why did he come to our city?"

"He has already extracted the essence of all 49 herbs perfectly even before Alchemist Dong started. This is no doubt a miracle."

"We'll see whether he can complete the final process. If he can really produce a perfect Ardent Yang Pill, he's going to be a remarkable talent that broke all the myths of countless alchemists."

.....

No one wasn't shocked. Even Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong couldn't keep their calm. Despite them not being alchemists, they had already seen lots of alchemists; Jiang Chen's emergence had totally changed their view in alchemy, and that concoction could be so simple and casual.

Crack *Crack* *Crack*

The sound of crackling was heard non-stop from the sea of fire. Jiang Chen's dharma seals had become faster and more frequent. Then, both of his hands pushed inwards, trying to squeeze all the essence of the 49 herbs together. No doubt, this process mixed all the essences at once, which made Alchemist Dong exclaim.

"It's not possible. Impossible! Every kind of herb has different

mixing point. One has to search for its mixing point first before mixing them gradually, or else it will explode very easily.”

Alchemist Dong’s eyes seemed ablaze. His body trembled due to overwhelming emotions. To him, Jiang Chen was just a madman.

“Why is Alchemist Dong being so excited? Do you think that the things that you can’t do can’t be done by someone else?” Jiang Chen turned to him and said with a smile.

What? He is talking while concocting?

Damn! Is he still human? The most important thing in concoction is to stay focused. The process of mixing 49 essence is taxing enough. No one would want to be distracted by talking to someone.

Many of them felt like fainting, especially the alchemists who were wiping their sweat off their forehead. If Jiang Chen succeeded, it would certainly be the miracle of the miracles.

Alchemist Dong seemed as if he didn’t hear Jiang Chen’s words, all of his attention was focused on Jiang Chen.

Not just him, everyone in the meeting hall felt that their breathing was becoming heavy. Every one of their eyes was fiery. Many of them felt that Jiang Chen would succeed and that he wasn’t just boasting. Today, they were going to witness an unprecedented miracle.

Miracles would always emerge. In this life, no one knew how many miracles Jiang Chen had created, but to him, a thing like this wasn’t a miracle at all. Perhaps it might seem impossible to others, but, for him, it was as effortless as moving his fingertips. Compared to the battle against Saint Origin Palace, this was simply nothing.

If this concoction of Ardent Yang Pill was compared to the concoction of Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, the Ardent Yang Pill was merely an infant pill.

The time taken for the mixing process wasn't long as well, it's just about 10 minutes before it's completed.

“Extinguish!”

Jiang Chen shouted lightly and the flames vanished, it was sucked back into his body. At the same time, a golden pill was hovering in the air as it buzzed.

A strong fragrance was emitted from the pill, like waves of tide, filling the whole atmosphere of the hall. Within the fragrance was the aura of the purest Yang, which caused people's blood and Immortal Qi to circulate faster. The feeling brought comfort to those who smelled it.

Looking at the pill closely, it had a golden body with some kind of liquid moving inside. It emitted a dazzling brilliance and the surface of its body was full of lines of talisman. Certainly, this was the Finest Grade Ardent Yang Pill.

Jiang Chen moved his hand casually, the pill drifted across the hall and made a circle in everyone's head for them to see it clearly before it stopped in front of Yan Dongliu.

“My god, this pill is smooth and glossy and transparent, and the fluid flowing inside of it contained the Purest Yang Qi. How could an Ardent Yang Pill reach such an extent?”

“It's awesome! He has succeeded. Such grade of pill is truly unprecedented. It's totally different from the Ardent Yang Pill that I expected.”

“The scariest part isn't just its grade but the process. He only used about 30 minutes to complete the whole process that involved 49 different herbs. Astounding is no longer the right word to describe such an incredible concoction.”

.....

For a moment, the entire hall was filled with commotion. Those who had looked down, mocked and even hostile to Jiang Chen had

now changed their attitude towards this young man. Even the alchemists were looking at Jiang Chen now with respect.

Yan Dongliu stared at the pill with enthusiastic eyes. He extended his arms to get a hold of the pill. Then, he felt a wave of warmth from his hand, he could feel the traces of the warm Qi entering his body through his hand, which made him feel extremely comfortable.

“Such a strong medicinal force. Such grade of Ardent Yang Pill. Across One-Line-Sky, there’s no one that could concoct the same level of pill. This pill is really one of its kind.”

Yan Dongliu seemed incomparably excited. In fact, he couldn’t help but feel this way, this kind of incredible pill had given him hope of curing his injuries again.

Yan Qingcheng’s eyes were fixed at Jiang Chen. A pink flush spread over her attractive face.

“What’s wrong with me? Have I fallen for him? No, this is impossible.”

Yan Qingcheng felt the changes in her psychology. She was an arrogant genius that had always focused on cultivation. Regardless of what kind of good-looking youth was chasing her, she would never give the person a second glance. So, today was the first time she gave a second glance to a man.

However, this was a normal thing. There wasn’t a young girl who didn’t think about love. Plus, someone like Jiang Chen was really fatal to girls.

Dong Linfu finally regained his senses after a moment of shock. His face had turned extremely pale. He knew that he had completely lost the competition. His opponent had finished the entire process and concocted an unprecedented grade of Ardent Yang Pill before he even began.

“City Lord, can I examine this Ardent Yang Pill for a while?”

Dong Linfu bowed at Yan Dongliu.

“En, take a look at it Alchemist Dong.”

Yan Dongliu seemed to be in a very good mood while handing over the pill to Dong Linfu.

Dong Linfu took the pill. With his eyesight, he was naturally able to tell the grade and the scariness of the pill. He then looked grimly at everyone around and sighed heavily. “This is no doubt the finest grade. Even if I concocted the same pill, the grade of the pill would only be half as good as this one.”

Dong Linfu was fully convinced by now. He returned the pill to Yan Dongliu with a deep salute and cupped his fists at Jiang Chen. “Brother Jiang Chen, your concoction technique is truly astounding and unprecedented. I’m totally impressed by it. If I have done anything that has offended you, I plead for forgiveness.”

Every alchemist was a haughty being and not many people could understand the nature of their arrogance. At the beginning, Dong Linfu didn’t put Jiang Chen in his eyes, but now, his view of Jiang Chen turned 180 degrees. Regardless of what cultivation base Jiang Chen had, his level in alchemy was unreachable, even to the head alchemist of the Prefecture. To Dong Linfu, an alchemist who could concoct such a grade of Ardent Yang Pill was worthy of respect. He was a person who would admit defeat, what was more important was that he had the chance to witness the birth of a miraculous alchemist in the world of alchemy.

Chapter 1071 - A Luxurious One-Million Reward

Dong Linfu lowered his head before Jiang Chen, but he did not feel any disgrace at all. The others also had similar thoughts. What Dong Linfu did proved that he was a man who would admit defeat when defeated. Instead of being looked down upon by other people, he would be admired by them.

Jiang Chen's fearsome concoction technique had obtained the recognition of everyone. He had earned a unique position in the Prefecture by relying on a single Ardent Yang Pill. At this moment, not only those foreign elders, even Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong would regard him as a great alchemist. No one would ever regard him as an ordinary late Human Immortal anymore. From now on, he was afraid that he would be the new head alchemist.

"Don't mention it, Alchemist Dong. There are still plenty of opportunities for us to work together in the Prefecture. If Alchemist Dong has any doubts in alchemy in the future, you are welcome to come and ask me any time," said Jiang Chen with a smile.

The words he used were incomparably arrogant that not even a great alchemist would dare to say. What he said implied that he knew everything or at least a lot better than Alchemist Dong.

Nevertheless, no one in the hall felt that he was just boasting after seeing his astounding performance. If it was before, Dong Linfu would certainly be flaring with anger, but now, he felt delighted because Jiang Chen wasn't angry despite him being disrespected earlier. Instead, Jiang Chen permitted him to ask him any questions regarding alchemy. It was a very good news indeed.

After so many years of research in the field of alchemy, he had naturally encountered various problems. If Jiang Chen could help him solve all of those problems, it would benefit him greatly, his

concoction technique would improve and his cultivation base might even break through to the Heaven Immortal realm.

“Haha! Brother Jiang’s right. We will have loads of opportunities to work together in the Prefecture.”

Dong Linfu laughed loudly, alleviating the awkward atmosphere in the hall. On the other hand, his attitude had changed Jiang Chen’s impression of him. It was worth respecting someone who could readily admit defeat when utterly defeated.

“Father, isn’t your daughter’s recommendation good?”

Yan Qingcheng came to Yan Dongliu’s side and said proudly.

“My daughter indeed has a pair of discerning eyes.”

Yan Dongliu wasn’t stingy in praising his daughter. There was no harm at all and it had brought tremendous benefits to the Prefecture by recruiting a super genius like Jiang Chen. Putting aside the possibility of whether Jiang Chen’s Ardent Yang Pill could cure the cold poison in his body, if someone as talented as Jiang Chen was recruited by any of the two major powers in Yan City, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Father. Quickly consume the Ardent Yang Pill to see whether it can cure the cold poison in your body.” Yan Qingcheng prompted.

“If the pill was only concocted out of the 49 herbs, it would not completely remove the cold poison in City Lord’s body. I have added the Nine Solar Saint Water into this pill, which enhances the property of suppressing the poison. Adding the natural medicinal effect of the Ardent Yang Pill, the poison will be gotten rid of at once. Additionally, I reckon that City Lord will also gain some benefits out of it,” said Jiang Chen.

“Is that true?”

Yan Dongliu looked stunned, and changed the way he looked at Jiang Chen. No wonder he felt something was different in the pill. It turned out that this pill didn’t just contain 49 herbs. It seemed

like they had found the right person today. If Jiang Chen wasn't here today, he wouldn't know how he could deal with this poison. Even with sufficient herbs and Dong Linfu successfully concocting an perfect Ardent Yang Pill, it still wouldn't be enough to remove the cold poison in his body.

He didn't want to waste any more time, he could feel that the poison was eroding his insides at random times. He had to get rid of this threat as soon as possible.

He swallowed the pill in front of everyone. The Purest Yang medicinal energy of the pill instantly turned into a stream that surged to all parts of his limbs, giving him an indescribable sense of comfort.

Meanwhile, he stopped suppressing the poison, thus stirring up the poison all of a sudden. A collision took place between the poison and the medicinal force. After a few minutes, the poison in his body dissipated completely. It was completely removed.

Not just that, because of the medicinal effect of the pill, the Immortal Qi in his Qi Sea became more vibrant. He unexpectedly advanced, reaching the peak of early Heaven Immortal realm, which left him a step away from mid Heaven Immortal realm.

This was truly an unexpected surprise. Yan Dongliu had not thought that the cold poison would be removed today, much less the possibility of making an improvement in his cultivation base. The present scene was just like a dream to him.

He quickly stood up from his seat and looked at Jiang Chen with his blazing eyes. "Amazing, truly amazing! Brother Jiang's means are simply extraordinary. I have been disturbed by the cold poison all these days and still couldn't find a way to cure it. I have never thought that this Ardent Yang Pill concocted by Brother Jiang could get rid of the poison in a matter of minutes, and also pushed my cultivation base to the peak of early Heaven Immortal realm."

After listening to the City Lord, everyone hastily stood up and

congratulated him.

“Congratulations, City Lord!”

“Congratulations to City Lord for getting a talent like Alchemist Jiang. I believe that the Prefecture will prosper in the future and sooner or later, we will suppress the other two major powers.”

“Alchemist Jiang is truly an extraordinary man. It’s the Prefecture’s great fortune to have recruited such a man.”

.....

Although these words were blended with elements of flattery, those were their sincere remarks for the City Lord. As a member of the Prefecture, they naturally hoped that the Prefecture would become stronger. If the Prefecture could take full control of Yan City, the Prefecture would gain access to all types of cultivation resources—a scene that all of them longed to see.

“Jiang Chen, say it, what do you want? I’m going to reward you greatly.”

Yan Dongliu said in a forthright manner.

“I’m in need of some Immortal Meta Stones.” Jiang Chen replied straightforwardly.

The thing that he needed the most was Immortal Meta Stones. Soon, he would advance to the half-step Earth Immortal realm, but he couldn’t do that without adequate amount of Immortal Meta Stones. In addition, it was foolish to do a trade for the Stones. So naturally, he wouldn’t refuse it if Yan Dongliu would willingly give it to him.

“No problem. You have done a great job, I will reward you with a million low grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

Yan Dongliu said without even thinking about it. In his point of view, spending a million fortune on Jiang Chen was an absolutely worthwhile investment.

Chapter 1072 - The Major Powers in Yan City

A million low grade Immortal Meta Stones was astronomical that it made everyone's skin tingle. It would be a lie if someone claimed that he or she wasn't envious of such fortune. In the world of cultivation, Immortal Meta Stone was a necessity to every cultivator.

However, every one of them knew very well that apart from showing gratitude to Jiang Chen for curing the poison, this one-million Immortal Meta Stones was also for building a rapport with Jiang Chen. And they understood that if Jiang Chen was loyal to the Prefecture, the fortune that he would bring to Prefecture in the future wouldn't be just a million.

Yan City was a place full of overlords and the Prefecture was the overlord among the overlords, totally incomparable to a small place like Han Village. In addition, a million fortune was a heavenly figure to them, but to the mighty Prefecture, this figure wasn't anything at all.

“Many thanks to City Lord.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Yan Dongliu. From now on, he would become a rich person. At least, he wouldn't have to worry about running out of Immortal Meta Stones for a while.

“Qingcheng, I have obtained great benefits this time and will need some time to digest it. Treat Jiang Chen well. Everyone, this meeting is adjourned.” Yan Dongliu said to Yan Qingcheng.

“Don't worry Father.”

Yan Qingcheng smiled. In fact, almost every matter in the Prefecture was handled by her. She was the only daughter that the City Lord had and she was more competent than any other boy.

“Hahaha...”

Yan Dongliu was laughing pleasantly when he left the meeting hall along with Yuan Hong. The days of unrest had finally been resolved. Plus, he had gotten great benefits, additionally a genius like Jiang Chen had joined his Prefecture. It would be impossible for him not to feel happy right now.

Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong were both Heaven Immortal experts and had the highest status in the Prefecture. They rarely show themselves even during normal days. If it wasn't for today's special circumstance, they would've never appeared.

After their departure, the hall began to bustle up. The foreign elders started their hot topics. Many had surrounded Jiang Chen in the middle. Given their pride and arrogance, they wouldn't have thought even in their wildest dreams that they would attach so much importance to a young man.

"I had never thought that Alchemist Jiang would have such a consummate concoction technique. I plead for Alchemist Jiang to forgive all of my previous rude remarks."

"That's right, Master Jiang, if I encounter any problems, I will personally seek for your guidance."

"Master Jiang has already become a great alchemist at such a young age, truly a rare genius. If we are to work together for the Prefecture in the future, I hope that Master Jiang can pardon any of my mistakes, I still have much to learn from you."

.....

All of them were gabbling so confusingly, which was typical and common. Neither of them would be willing to offend a powerful alchemist. If they needed a pill in the future, they would need to ask for his help. Therefore, it was very important for them to build a good relationship with Jiang Chen.

An occasion like this discomforted Jiang Chen the most, causing him to have a headache. After a few words of comments, he left the

hall and went back to his courtyard. Today, he had established his prestige in the Prefecture and had gotten a million low grade Immortal Meta Stones. The next thing that he would focus right now was his cultivation.

As to whether or not he could advance his level in a short period of time, it didn't really concern him. There was no need for him to rush as he had only one enemy in this world, however, the soul imprint in his body made him feel threatened at random times. He knew very well that this soul imprint was casted by some very powerful expert. If it wasn't for the Immortal Mark concealing it, the caster of the imprint would have sensed his presence long ago.

He disliked being tracked by someone, especially when he feels threatened all the time. Thus, he must refine this soul imprint as soon as possible. Otherwise, he would have trouble sleeping every night.

Not long after Jiang Chen arrived in his courtyard, Yan Qingcheng came holding a storage pouch in her hand. Her face was plastered with a smile that could comfort anyone, like a spring breeze. Jiang Chen definitely wouldn't know that it was already a miracle to see her smiling at him. Every noble woman possessed a cold and arrogant heart, especially those beauties who could overthrow all men in a city with their looks alone, and they rarely smiled to a male.

To her, seeing Jiang Chen gave her a sense of delight that came from the bottom of her heart.

“Big Miss.” Jiang Chen greeted her.

“There's no need for formalities, Young Master. You can call me Qingcheng from now on. I can see that Young Master is only a few years older than Qingcheng, if you won't mind, I will call you Big Brother Jiang from now on.”

Yan Qingcheng smiled. Her face blushed automatically when she called out the three words, Big Brother Jiang.

“It’s fine by me.”

Jiang Chen smiled back. He was an easygoing person that would never worry about the form of address.

“Big Brother Jiang, here’s a million low grade Immortal Meta Stones that my father promised. You have done a very good job in concocting the Ardent Yang Pill, and helped my father get rid of the cold poison. Qingcheng feels very grateful for all that,” said Yan Qingcheng.

“Don’t worry about it, Big Miss. Beside, these one million low grade Immortal Meta Stones is really great for me.”

Jiang Chen was wagging the storage pouch.

“With Big Brother Jiang in our Prefecture, I believe that it won’t take long before we can suppress the other two major powers. My father’s biggest wish is to unite Yan City. Big Brother Jiang’s emergence has given my father hope once more,” said Yan Qingcheng.

“Oh? There are still major powers in this city that is on par with the Prefecture’s might?”

Jiang Chen looked stunned as he hadn’t expected to hear this. Anyone should know that the Prefecture was the sole ruler of a city like this in general. Very few major powers would have the power to defy the Prefecture’s will. According to Yan Qingcheng, there were two major powers that had the same strength as the Prefecture.

It only made sense to him when he recalled that back in Fragrant Sky City, the Prefecture had also been against the Murong Family, fighting for power.

“That’s right. Apart from the Prefecture, there are two major powers named Huang Family and Yi Yuan Association. Both of them have strong influence and forces. Yi Yuan Association seems more pleasant as their main activities are concentrated on

business. Normally, we seldom have conflict. My father and the chairman's relationship seemed relatively well. They have always been running their businesses peacefully and remained neutral. Huang Family on the other hand has always been competing with us for various resources. They also have two early Heaven Immortals in their territory and experts that are almost as powerful as us. If they saw an opportunity to annihilate us, they surely wouldn't miss it. That was why the news of my father's cold poison hasn't gotten out yet. But everything's fine now. My father's injury has already been treated by Big Brother Jiang and we don't have to worry that much anymore."

Yan Qingcheng told the three major powers in Yan City to Jiang Chen. From here, he knew that only the Huang family was causing trouble to the Prefecture and Yi Yuan Association was just a neutral party which focused only on business activities.

Chapter 1073 - Yuan Chengjun

“I see.”

Jiang Chen nodded. The present situation in Yan City was relatively similar to that of Fragrant Sky City. By taking the Yi Yuan Association out of the equation, the Prefecture and Huang family were just like the Jiang and Murong family back then.

Of course, Fragrant Sky City wasn't a suitable benchmark for Yan City because the Jiang and Murong family could never be compared with the current major powers. Moreover, this was the Immortal World, totally not the same as anything in the mortal world.

Jiang Chen now understood why Yan Qingcheng made so much efforts just to make him stay. For an alchemist like him, if he were recruited by Huang Family, it would be a tremendous blow to the Prefecture.

“Oh, by the way, I still don't know where Big Brother Jiang comes from. With your talent and skill in alchemy, you will certainly be highly regarded even in a great major power in One-Line-Sky. So why did you come to the Prefecture and were together with the Han villagers?”

Yan Qingcheng asked, feeling very interested in Jiang Chen's origin. There was no way that she wouldn't be curious about it because it was abnormal for a genius like Jiang Chen to suddenly emerge in Yan City.

“Miss Qingcheng, this is a secret of mine. I hope that Miss won't make things difficult for me. All I can say is that my emergence won't do any harm or damage to the Prefecture.” Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Though it wasn't a big deal to tell someone that he was an ascendant, this identity became somewhat sensitive because of the

soul imprint in his body. He guessed that the real Nan Bei Chao must be looking for him everywhere and the only clue that Nan Bei Chao had right now was his identity of an ascendant.

Therefore, his identity had become his greatest secret since his arrival in the Immortal World. He could never reveal it or else, his life would be in grave danger.

“Alright. Since Big Brother Jiang doesn’t want to say it, Qingcheng naturally won’t force Big Brother Jiang,” assured Qingcheng.

“Miss Qingcheng, I have consumed plenty of soul energy during the concoction of the Ardent Yang Pill just now, I need some time to recover my strength,” said Jiang Chen tactfully.

“En, then I will take my leave now so that Big Brother Jiang can rest early. If Big Brother Jiang has anything that needs my help, don’t hesitate to call for me.” Yan Qingcheng said hastily, and then turned and left.

For some reason, she felt reluctant when she was about to step out of the door of the courtyard, she knew that she was already attracted to this good-looking and highly gifted young man. Too bad, the male counterpart didn’t seem to have taken a liking to her.

Ai!

Yan Qingcheng sighed heavily, knowing that she couldn’t force somebody to love or like her. So, she should just let things run its course.

Seeing Yan Qingcheng’s shadow slowly fading away, Jiang Chen shook his head helplessly. How could he not know that Yan Qingcheng took a fancy to him? But he had to stay away from this peach blossom luck. There were some relationships which he couldn’t afford to venture into. He already had Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu. Therefore, it was unwise for him to start another

romantic relationship with some other girl.

Furthermore, he had just arrived in this new world which was still alien to him. What he wanted the most right now was to advance his cultivation base and establish a strong foundation in this world. His goal to conquer definitely wouldn't be limited to Yan City or One-Line-Sky, but to the whole Immortal Domain.

After Yan Qingcheng's departure, he went into seclusion. He currently had 200,000 dragon marks and the twelve levels of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had already been fully rebuilt. His Heavenly Saint Sword was now equivalent to a peak Human Immortal Weapon, which was even more powerful than any ordinary Earth Immortal Weapon. All of these were his hidden cards.

What was most important to him right now was to get rid of the soul imprint in his body, it gave him an annoying feeling, like a thorn in his flesh.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The dragon transformation skill was circulated to the extreme. The evolved dragon transformation skill was certainly much scarier compared to before. This was the one who gave Jiang Chen the confidence in refining the soul imprint. But due to the owner of the soul imprint being too powerful and given Jiang Chen's current cultivation base, he was afraid that he would need some time to fully refine it.

Over the next two days, he had completely immersed himself in refining the soul imprint and one-third was already refined, which brought him some great results.

Creak!

The door of his courtyard was pushed open. Although he was in the room, he was still able to sense it immediately with his keen senses, and quickly, he kept his Qi. Then, the door of his room was

shoved open and a figure came inside.

This was a situation that annoyed him the most. He hated it the most when someone disturbed him during cultivation. But before he went mad, he had to find out who it was first.

Standing at the doorway was a youth in a clean blue robe, with a head of thick black hair and a relatively handsome face. He looked very young but was already as strong as Yan Qingcheng—late Earth Immortal realm. He also had an extraordinary bearing. A figure like him should be considered the genius of the geniuses in Yan City.

Having not seen him before, Jiang Chen didn't know him.

"You are Jiang Chen?"

The incomer didn't sound friendly. His eyes were constantly studying Jiang Chen from top to bottom, radiating an aura of hostility.

"Did I owe you money?"

Similarly, Jiang Chen asked in an unpleasant tone. He hated those people who were born with an excessive sense of superiority to the very core of their bones.

"I'm Yuan Chengjun. Yuan Hong is my dad."

Yuan Chengjun announced his name and his dad, obviously trying to show how noble he was in the Prefecture.

It was rare for the son of Yuan Hong to be a late Earth Immortal young genius. Plus, the young man's dad was a Heaven Immortal old man, which explained why he was so arrogant.

"I'm not interested in who you are, but it is impolite to break into my room. Didn't your dad teach you some manners?"

Jiang Chen's tone wasn't good; and, he would react the same even if he was Yan Dongliu's son.

Jiang Chen's words had stunned Yuan Chengjun. He couldn't

believe that Jiang Chen would talk to him in such a tone and manner, even after learning his identity. There weren't many people around his age in Yan City that dared to speak to him so impolitely.

In addition, seeing Jiang Chen not putting him in his eyes at all had undoubtedly affected his pride.

“Jiang Chen, how dare a puny little Human Immortal like you act so arrogantly in front of a young master? I can put you to death with just a slap!”

Yuan Chengjun raged. For some reason, he couldn't help but feel angry seeing Jiang Chen.

“I suggest you to not use the word ‘death’ in front of me, you have no idea how scary this word is,” said Jiang Chen flatly.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, what else do you know besides alchemy? I'll turn a blind eye to this for the sake of City Lord. But remember, you'd better stay away from Sister Qingcheng. Otherwise, I will surely not be lenient to you,” warned Yuan Chengjun.

He was out for a tough-training until yesterday when he heard about Jiang Chen. The thing that he couldn't bear the most was knowing how friendly Yan Qingcheng had treated this newcomer. Everyone in the Prefecture knew that he had been chasing Yan Qingcheng for quite a while now.

In everyone's eyes, he and Yan Qingcheng were the perfect match created by the Heavens, but in truth, Yan Qingcheng had always been cold to him.

Even so, he didn't give up chasing her. In his point of view, an outstanding woman would naturally be cold and proud, but what she did to Jiang Chen had never been done to him before.

Today, he had come to see Jiang Chen mainly for two reasons. One was to threaten him and the other was to see how excellent he was that Yan Qingcheng had taken a fancy on him. It disappointed

him to see what he saw. This Jiang Chen only knew how to concoct. He didn't have the same good looks as him, powerful cultivation base, strength and charm. This new guy was totally nothing in front of him.

If Jiang Chen were an outstanding genius, he would at least swallow his pride, but being compared to a Human Immortal was an insult to him. He couldn't imagine that Yan Qingcheng actually had such a pair of eyes.

In any case, he had already decided that Yan Qingcheng belonged to him. If Jiang Chen was to snatch her away from him, he wouldn't show any politeness to Jiang Chen.

"My affairs aren't yours to judge. It's up to Yan Qingcheng to decide who she likes and I can't do anything about it. If there's nothing else, please leave at once to avoid delaying my cultivation." Jiang Chen waved his hand and said impatiently.

He understood Yuan Chengjun's intention, but this had nothing to do with him and he had no time to humor him. If it wasn't because he couldn't afford to offend Yuan Hong, he was afraid that he would've already attacked him, Yuan Chengjun was just a late Earth Immortal after all.

"What a good Jiang Chen! A puny Human Immortal dares to be arrogant in front of me? I suppose that you've understood what I just said and hope that you won't offend me anymore in the future. You should know better if you offend me in my place."

Yuan Chengjun slammed the door shut and left angrily. His eyes were brimming with a trace of killing intent. But he knew what this courtyard was and knew that Jiang Chen's skills had already been approved by Yan Dongliu. So he couldn't afford to kill Jiang Chen unless he wanted loads of trouble.

Chapter 1074 - Not Giving Face

The killing intent coming from Yuan Chengjun couldn't escape Jiang Chen's senses. Looking at his fading shadow, Jiang Chen couldn't help but frown.

"I hope you don't mess with me again," said Jiang Chen plainly.

He didn't wish to start a conflict with the people in the Prefecture, but if Yuan Chengjun continued to provoke him like a fool, he wouldn't show him any courtesy. All along, the people who offended Jiang Chen didn't have a good end.

A slight breeze blew out of his body, closing the doors automatically; he then continued his cultivation and effort to refine the soul imprint in his body. Unknowingly, the night began and the moonlight shone through the window of the room and landed on his face.

He slowly opened his eyes, feeling slightly agitated all of a sudden, not knowing if it was because of Yuan Chengjun's interruption in the day. Through the course of his life, it was rare that such an unsettling emotion would affect his mind.

Since he couldn't stay calm, he might as well end his seclusion. He made a lazy stretch of his back, stood up from the round cushion, and gently pushed open the door. A wave of cool breeze rushed in, giving him a sense of refreshing feeling.

He looked at the sky and found that it was a good night with the full moon and stars, but he somewhat felt lonely under the darkness.

The loneliness stirred his heart. In his past life, he was obsessed with cultivation and advancement. Although he had been living a solitary life, he never knew what loneliness was. In this life, he had families, lovers, brothers and friends, and being apart from them made him lonely.

“I wonder where Big Yellow has gone to. Could he be in OneLine-Sky?”

Jiang Chen shook his head. When Big Yellow was around, he would never feel alone. It was a pity that he and Big Yellow had been separated while reaching the end of the passageway. Not having any news of Big Yellow, the probability of meeting him again in this boundless world was very slim.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen was still too weak. Even if wings sprouted behind his back, he wouldn't be able to fly at his will across the Immortal World. Before mastering the spatial force, he couldn't even leave OneLine-Sky.

Taking advantage of the quiet and dark night, he walked out of the Prefecture without alerting anyone. It had been several days since he arrived in Yan City, but he hadn't gone out for a stroll on the streets. Perhaps he might be able to comprehend something while admiring the structures of the city and the scenery outside.

There was an alley outside the main gate. Because this alley was narrower than the usual ones, it was totally dark even with the moonlight shining all over it. At this time, a black silhouette flashed into the alley stealthily.

Jiang Chen was a late Human Immortal expert and naturally had unusual eyesight. He glanced over at the alley and saw a black-clothed human figure leaning against the wall of the alley with his shoulder. Jiang Chen could immediately tell from his body shape that he was a middle-aged man.

Although Jiang Chen couldn't see the man's face clearly, he was certain that the man was staring at him unblinkingly.

“Master Jiang, can we have a talk?”

A sound came from the black-clothed man in the alley.

Jiang Chen was taken aback realizing that this man had deliberately hid outside the Prefecture waiting for someone. But he

was sure that he didn't know this man. Even after studying the man's Qi, the man was a total stranger to him.

This man was a late Earth Immortal expert, but that didn't scare Jiang Chen at all. Even if this man was a half-step Heaven Immortal, he had nothing to be afraid of. Although he wasn't an opponent for a half-step Heaven Immortal yet, an expert in this level wouldn't be able to fly in the sky yet, so it wouldn't be a problem for him to escape from such an opponent. None of them could catch up to him with the speed of his Flaming Wings.

Fearlessly, he strode into the alley and faced the black-clothed man. With the help of the moonlight, he was able to see the face of the man clearly. This man's figure was neither robust nor thin. He had a bearded face and looked around to be 40 years old. He was actually at the peak Earth Immortal realm, only one step away to the half-step Heaven Immortal realm.

"Who are you? I don't know you," asked Jiang Chen.

"I'm Huang Xiong from the Huang family. They all call me Sixth Master."

Huang Xiong gave out his name and his status in Huang Family. Among the six brothers, he was the one with the lowest cultivation base. Although he was only a late Earth Immortal expert, his position in the family was incomparable to ordinary people. He believed that no one in Yan City didn't know about him.

Too bad, Jiang Chen didn't know him.

"A member of Huang Family? What do you want from me?" asked Jiang Chen again.

He had had conversation with Yan Qingcheng about the three major powers in Yan City. Huang Family was no doubt the major power that had been going against the Prefecture.

"I heard that an alchemist has joined the Prefecture. I never expect you to be this young. As I'm a person who doesn't like

beating around the bush, I will just go straight to the point. I have come to see Master Jiang, hoping that you can join the cause of Huang Family and we will double the benefits you receive in the Prefecture.” Huang Xiong said straightforwardly.

After hearing what he said, Jiang Chen’s expression remained unchanged, as if he had already anticipated what this stalker would say. But it was a pity that Huang Family had miscalculated and was destined to be disappointed. He wasn’t like any of those treacherous, double-faced pricks.

More importantly, the major powers in Yan City wasn’t worthy for him to seek refuge at all.

“I’m not interested in Huang Family.”

Jiang Chen blurted out a blunt answer without giving Huang Xiong the chance to save face.

Clearly, Huang Xiong had been dumbfounded. He wouldn’t have thought that his target would decline his offer so directly. Anyone would know that Huang Family had a major influence in Yan City. As the Sixth Master, no one would ever decline him every time he personally come and invite a person.

Even if that person declined his offer, that person would certainly not decline directly, or else, it would be impolite to him and Huang Family.

“Master Jiang, our family is sincere to have you work for us. I hope that Master Jiang can take time to consider it for a moment. I suppose that you should already know that the forces of our family isn’t any weaker than the Prefecture’s. If you have any special conditions, say it out. Our family will do our best to satisfy your needs and demands.” Huang Xiong said.

“Okay, but if you just came for this matter, I would suggest you to stop talking anymore. Like I said, I’m not interested in joining your family.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, sounding a little impatient.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, don’t refuse a toast only to be forced to drink forfeit later!”

Huang Xiong became angry.

“Why? You want to kill me?”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes. Despite the darkness, it couldn’t stop the light from shooting out of his eyes.

“Jiang Chen, you should know that it’s impossible for our Huang Family and the Prefecture to exist together. It’s only a matter of time before a war is started. There’s a saying that says two tigers can’t stay in the same mountain. The fact that you are helping the Prefecture is equivalent to making my family your enemy. Plus, you are a superior alchemist which is enough to affect the overall situation. If you are not willing to pledge yourself to our family, I will have no choice but to end your life. Talents that can’t be used must be eliminated.”

Huang Xiong’s killing intent was exposed. He was very clear that if he couldn’t recruit this super talent, he had to erase this existence from the map.

“I know, but I also know that you can’t kill me.”

Jiang Chen finished his word, turned and left.

“Courting death!”

Huang Xiong was completely angered. He couldn’t believe that a late Human Immortal wasn’t giving him the slightest bit of face at all. He had to admit that Jiang Chen was a bold man, but since they couldn’t reach an agreement, there was nothing more that they should talk about. He had to kill this man so that the Prefecture couldn’t use him.

Hu...

Icy cold wind blew from behind all of a sudden. Even without

looking behind, Jiang Chen already knew that Huang Xiong made his move. The Qi unleashed by a late Earth Immortal expert was indeed very shocking.

But Jiang Chen was already prepared for it. He moved right at the moment Huang Xiong moved. Using the Spatial Shift and the Nine Phantom Wolves, a series of illusions appeared in the alley.

Pu! *Pu!*

Huang Xiong smashed two illusions of Jiang Chen but the real Jiang Chen had already disappeared from the scene. Then, he saw a silhouette rushing into the Prefecture.

“Very fast! It’s impossible. How can a late Human Immortal be so fast? Although attacking those illusions was a mistake, a late Human Immortal brat could never escape from my grip.”

Huang Xiong looked astonished by Jiang Chen’s speed. It was his first time seeing this. One should know that he was a late Earth Immortal expert and there was a huge gap between him and Jiang Chen, but still, this puny Human Immortal brat was able to slip off his grasp. If he didn’t experience this personally, he would never believe it.

“This man is definitely a huge threat. Where did such a great genius come from? Not only does he have a great concoction technique but he also has tremendous talent. I have to admit that this is my first time seeing a late Human Immortal slipping away from my grip. I suppose we have to get rid of him as soon as possible, or else his presence will definitely raise the overall strength of the Prefecture. By that time, our family will be doomed.”

Huang Xiong’s facial expression turned extremely grim. Before seeing Jiang Chen, he didn’t put Jiang Chen in his eyes at all, but now, he truly felt threatened from this newcomer. Since the patriarch has entrusted this task to him, he must make sure to complete it.

Huang Xiong's emergence had spoiled Jiang Chen's mood for a stroll. He then went back to his courtyard.

It seems like there are spies in the Prefecture. Otherwise, Huang Xiong wouldn't have found me.

Jiang Chen muttered in his mind. Given his intelligence and wit, he was able to guess that Huang Xiong's emergence must be after hearing the news of him concocting the Ardent Yang Pill, because the matter of Yan Dongliu's injuries should have been kept a secret unless someone else broke the law.

Chapter 1075 - The Fury

When there were people, there would be strife and competition. The nature of the cultivation world had always been the law of the jungle. This fact remained unchanged even in the Immortal World. In fact, this everlasting law would exist in every populated world.

No doubt, tide was surging in Yan City internally. If opportunity presented itself, the Prefecture and Huang Family would surely engage in a deadly battle. Now that Jiang Chen was in one of the two major powers, he would certainly be involved in such a strife.

Given all the things that Jiang Chen had encountered and faced in his past and this life, such a tiny internal conflict was no big deal to him at all. Those great battles in Pure Land and in Saint Origin Palace were many times more intense than this conflict.

In a courtyard in the Prefecture.

Yan Qingcheng was unable to settle herself down in these past two days. This was something that had never happened to her before. She knew that her psychological state had changed. During her cultivation, an image of a person would always appear in her mind, and it affected her condition.

Ai!

Yan Qingcheng shook her head helplessly. She knew that she had fallen for him, but Jiang Chen didn't seem to have the same feelings towards her, which irritated her very much and at the same time, made her eager to do something about it.

She was standing on top of a big turquoise in the courtyard. Any male who saw her would admit that her beauty wasn't just ordinarily beautiful. She lifted up her head, staring at the round moon in the sky in contemplation.

Dong! *Dong!* *Dong!*

There was a knock on the door, followed by a voice, "Sister

Qingcheng.”

“Come in.”

Yan Qingcheng said plainly as she could already identify the owner of the voice.

Creak!

The gate of the courtyard was pushed open and a blue-clad handsome young man walked in. His demeanor was stately and his cultivation base was strong. He was a rare young talent.

“I reckon that Big Brother Yuan has harvested quite a lot of benefits from the tough-training.”

Yan Qingcheng smiled at Yuan Chengjun. They were regarded as childhood sweethearts that had grown up together. She knew very well Yuan Chengjun’s feelings for her, but she had no feelings for him at all.

“Qingcheng, you look very beautiful when you smile.”

Yuan Chengjun felt intoxicated upon seeing Yan Qingcheng’s smile. Every time he saw her, his eyes would light up automatically. He had made countless of vows in his heart that this woman already belonged to him and nobody could take her away from him.

“Is there anything that Big Brother Yuan want for finding me this late at night?”

Yan Qingcheng kept her smile, and returned to her icy cold appearance. The way that Yuan Chengjun looked at her didn’t make her feel comfortable, especially when her heart had already been occupied by Jiang Chen. Indirectly, she felt a sense of disgust towards his presence.

Her sudden change stunned Yuan Chengjun. He knew that although Yan Qingcheng was cold to him, both of them grew up together and he had never felt such coldness from her before.

Yuan Chengjun wasn't a fool. Yan Qingcheng was treating him like this was probably because of that damned Jiang Chen.

"Sister Qingcheng, I heard that a concoction whiz named Jiang Chen has joined our Prefecture and he's highly regarded by you and City Lord," said Yuan Chengjun.

"That's right. Big Brother Jiang's concoction technique is really amazing. If it wasn't for him, the cold poison in my father's body wouldn't have been removed." Yan Qingcheng replied.

She couldn't help smiling faintly when she talked about Jiang Chen, which sent silent blows to Yuan Chengjun's heart, causing him to spill out an aura of killing intent.

"Sister Qingcheng shouldn't be confused by this man's appearance. I think this person has a good relationship with the Huang Family. If he's a spy sent over by that family, I'm afraid that his presence won't do us any good," said Yuan Chengjun with a sneering smile.

"It's impossible. Don't accuse Big Brother Jiang. How could he have anything to do with the Huang Family? He came with the Han villagers and had never appeared in the Prefecture before."

There was anger in Yan Qingcheng's voice.

"There are some things which are irrefutable. What you saw might not be the truth. Just now, I saw Jiang Chen leave the Prefecture and met the Sixth Master of the Huang Family in the alley outside. If he was as new as you said, why would he sneak out in the middle of the night and meet the Sixth Master Huang?" Yuan Chengjun continued.

"What? This isn't possible. How could Big Brother Jiang went out and see Sixth Master Huang this late?"

Yan Qingcheng's facial expression changed slightly. She absolutely wouldn't believe what Yuan Chengjun said was true.

"I'm not lying to you as I have seen it myself. If you don't believe

me, you can go and ask Jiang Chen. He has already returned to the Prefecture,” said Yuan Chengjun.

Yan Qingcheng’s expression turned uglier. She could sense it from his tone that he wasn’t lying, which meant that he had really seen Jiang Chen met with Sixth Master Huang outside.

“Even so, it isn’t enough to tell that Big Brother Jiang has any relationship with the Huang Family. Try to think about it, if Big Brother Jiang is really someone from Huang Family, why would he save my father? My father has been afflicted by the cold poison which is an extremely favorable event for the Huang Family. Besides, if Huang Family did have a talent like Big Brother Jiang, I’m afraid that their overall strength would’ve surpass ours long ago.”

Yan Qingcheng once again denied that Jiang Chen was a spy of the Huang Family. Plus, what she said was justified. If Jiang Chen really was an alchemist of Huang Family, he definitely wouldn’t save her father because that would only create trouble for the Huang Family. Anyone of them should know that Yan Dongliu was the backbone of the Prefecture and making him weak would give them the chance to rule the entire city.

“Why is Sister Qingcheng trusting an outsider so much? You and I have been childhood sweethearts. Does it mean that my existence weighed lesser in your heart compared to that outsider? What’s so good about him? He’s only a late Human Immortal. He knows nothing else besides alchemy. How can he be compared to me?”

Yuan Chengjun tone was filled with a hint of anger and reluctance. He was the son of a dignified Heaven Immortal expert. He grew up together with Yan Qingchen, but that didn’t make him any more special than a brat who just came to the Prefecture a few days ago. How could he possibly accept such a fact?

Yan Qingcheng’s reaction made him feel very unpleasant, which fortified his determination to eliminate Jiang Chen.

“Big Brother Yuan, if there’s nothing else, I think you can go now because I need to rest.”

Yan Qingcheng turned and asked him to leave. She was already in a bad mood. Adding the information that Yuan Chengjun told her, it upset her even more. Her head was now filled with Jiang Chen’s images. Although she didn’t believe that Jiang Chen would have anything to do with the Huang Family, sneaking out in the middle of the night and meeting a higher up of that family didn’t help clear her suspicion away.

Yuan Chengjun’s face became unpleasant. His eyes were blazing with anger. Without saying a word, he turned and left.

Outside the courtyard, Yuan Chengjun’s face turned grim. “Qingcheng, in that case, don’t blame me for not being polite. You’d rather choose a late Human Immortal brat than me? I’ll make you regret your choice.”

Inside the courtyard, Yan Qingcheng’s eyes were involuntarily fixed at the direction where Jiang Chen’s courtyard was. Her expression seemed a little sad. “Big Brother Jiang, I hope that you won’t disappoint Qingcheng.”

Yan Qingcheng wanted to find Jiang Chen right now to clear her doubts, but she still trusted him very much deep down in her heart. Although she and Jiang Chen had only known each other for a few days and knew nothing about each other’s pasts, she still felt that Jiang Chen was a trustworthy man.

The next day, early in the morning, Han Cong rushed to the place where Jiang Chen lived.

“Ah Cong, what happened? Why do you look so nervous?” Jiang Chen frowned.

“Big Brother Jiang, it’s no good. Something has happened in Han Village.”

Han Cong’s face was full of tension.

“What’s going on? Speak slowly,” asked Jiang Chen. As a person who had encountered big waves and tides, it’s easy for him to maintain his composure at all times even if the sky fell before him.

“No one knows when Han Village has offended the Huang Family in Yan City. Their people are travelling to the Han Village now to imprison all the villagers,” said Han Cong.

“What?” Jiang Chen’s facial expression changed slight.

“The information from Han Village said that the leader was Huang Xiong, the Sixth Master of Huang Family. He stressed that you have to head over to Han Village right away. If you fail to show up, he will kill everyone in the village.”

Han Cong shared what he knew while wiping the trickles of sweat off his face. He had grown up in Han Village and the feelings he had for the village was beyond ordinary. With such a big crisis happening in his village right now, he looked so nervous that he would pass out at any moment.

“Does anyone else know about this?” asked Jiang Chen.

“The messenger only came to seek me. So, I’m the only one who knows the current status in Han Village,” replied Han Cong.

“It seems like they are targeting me. Huang Xiong, I know that you want to kill me, but you chose the method that I hated the most. In that case, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

Jiang Chen’s expression darkened. A hint of killing intent was spilled out of his body like tidal wave, causing the temperature of the courtyard to drop and Han Cong to shiver from the cold. He could sense that Jiang Chen’s fury was burning inside of him along with the Heaven and Earth.

“Big Brother Jiang, what do we do now?” asked Han Cong impatiently.

“Ah Cong, you don’t have to worry. I will go to Han Village now. I guarantee that everyone will be safe.” Jiang Chen patted Han

Cong's shoulder reassuringly.

“Big Brother Jiang, Huang Family is a powerful force. I think we should inform Big Miss about this. It's going to be very dangerous if you go alone.” Han Cong said.

Although he had lots of confidence in Jiang Chen's strength, their opponents was too powerful. No matter how powerful Jiang Chen was, he was merely a late Human Immortal expert, which was definitely no match for a powerful late Earth Immortal expert.

“No need. I have my own ways,” said Jiang Chen, striding out of the courtyard.

“Big Brother Jiang, I will go with you.”

Han Cong followed.

“Let's go.”

Jiang Chen grabbed Han Cong's shoulder as wind produced below his feet. Then, they left the gates of the Prefecture in a matter of moments.

He is really quick!

Han Cong was shocked by Jiang Chen's speed. It was several times faster than the leopards'. At this rate, it would only take them two hours at most to reach Han Village.

As soon as Jiang Chen and Han Cong left, a beautiful figure materialized. It was Yan Qingcheng.

Chapter 1076 - Who Would Go First?

“Big Brother Jiang is acting a little weird. Why did he leave with Han Cong all of a sudden?”

Yan Qingchen frowned, feeling uneasy when she recalled what Yuan Chengjun said about Jiang Chen. Although she didn't believe that Jiang Chen had anything to do with Huang Family, she still felt uneasy deep inside. She felt more suspicious learning that Jiang Chen had left the Prefecture with Han Cong so early in the morning. If Jiang Chen really wasn't a spy, why did he left with Han Cong?

She then chased after them at her maximum speed. Regardless of her doubts that Jiang Chen was related to Huang Family or her curiosity about why Jiang Chen left the Prefecture with Han Cong so early in the morning, she had to follow them to get her answers. Jiang Chen was the first man that she had ever liked. She didn't hope to see that her eyesight made a mistake this time. If Jiang Chen was really doing something that would harm the Prefecture, she absolutely wouldn't be lenient to him.

Jiang Chen's one hand was grabbing Han Cong's shoulder while travelling. There was a cold light every step he made which created innumerable afterimages on the ground he travelled. Due to the swift speed, Han Cong could hear the whistling of the wind and his face slightly hurt. His body was completely in mid-air. He was dragged all the way back without expending a bit energy.

How can Big Brother Jiang be so fast? Not even a late Earth Immortal expert can be this fast. Big Brother Jiang is truly extraordinary.

Yan Qingcheng wasn't able to keep her calm and suffered a psychological blow.

In this world, all geniuses had one common failing, and that was pride. Yan Qingcheng was no doubt one of them. All of her

confidence had been crushed in front of Jiang Chen. Thinking back when she was just a late Human Immortal expert, Jiang Chen's ability made her downright inferior.

She wasn't a person who would easily admit defeat. She continued to maintain her maximum speed. She no longer desired to catch up with Jiang Chen's speed, she just hoped that she wouldn't lose sight of him.

On the front, Jiang Chen's lips curved into a slight smile. Given his sharp senses, he surely knew that someone was following him. He also knew that the person was Yan Qingcheng. It wasn't hard to guess why she was following him. With the spies in the Prefecture, he had already anticipated that they would be stirring up unnecessary trouble in the Prefecture, therefore she must be here to find things about him and Sixth Master Huang.

To him, speed wasn't an important element right now. If he used the Flaming Wings, he could have reached Han Village in just a few minutes. However, there were some cards that he had to hide so that he could use it to kill at the critical moment.

Two hours later, Jiang Chen arrived in Han Village under Han Cong's lead. The place was remote and was surrounded by mountains. Looking across the village, there were four to five villages at this mountain range. Undoubtedly, low level experts resided in this area. Those who lived in these villages only hoped to have a peaceful and comfortable life instead of dreaming and achieving big things.

To Han villagers, offending Huang Family was their end.

Although Han Village wasn't big, there were dozens of families that totalled roughly 100 people.

Outside Han Village was a spacious land. It was currently occupied by all the Han villagers with a dozen of black-clothed vicious looking guards surrounding them. Standing at the very front was Chief Han Changling and the seniors of Han Village.

Those black-clothed men were the people of Huang Family. The weakest among them was an early Earth Immortal expert who was stronger than the half-step Earth Immortal Han Changling. With so many experts watching over them, none of the villagers dared to make a single move. All their faces were grim.

Han Changling's face was also filled with sadness. Han Village had existed for so long, but nothing like this had ever occurred in their village. A disaster like this was going to wipe them out for sure.

Beside them was a large rattan chair, a person called Sixth Master Huang was sitting on it. Next to Huang Xiong were two tall and robust late Earth Immortal experts.

"Sixth Master, our village has never offended your family. Your family is one of the rulers in Yan City, why do you want to create trouble for a tiny village like ours," said Han Changling.

"There's no need for you to worry, Chief Han. As long as Jiang Chen agrees to join our family, I assure you that all of the villagers will be safe and rewarded handsomely," said Huang Xiong.

"I don't think Brother Jiang is a kind of person that will change his mind easily. I'm afraid that he will disappoint Sixth Master."

Han Changling's words were filled with anger. After being held hostage for so long, he started to feel angry about it. He now knew that it must be Huang Xiong who had gone to invite Jiang Chen personally to join their family but was refused, which prompted him to make a move on Han Village.

However, the later events would surely disappoint Huang Xiong. Although Han Changling didn't know Jiang Chen for a long time, he knew what kind of a man Jiang Chen was. He was sure that Jiang Chen wouldn't pledge himself to Huang Family after deciding to join the Prefecture.

"Humph! Then everyone in Han Village will have to die along

with him.”

Huang Xiong let out a cold humph. His expression switched faster than flipping a page.

This scene was clearly seen by the newly arrived Jiang Chen, Han Cong and Yan Qingcheng clearly. With Yan Qingcheng’s wisdom, she could already tell what happened.

“So that was it.”

Yan Qingcheng felt relieved, the weight in her heart had finally been lifted. It seemed like Jiang Chen did bump into Huang Xiong yesterday night, but had declined Huang Xiong’s offer, which provoked Huan Xiong to use Han Village to blackmail him.

Such action of Huang Family was indeed mean and crooked, but instead of asking her for help, Jiang Chen came alone to face them. This manly and decisive action made her admire him even more.

Only three late Earth Immortal experts. They’re no match for me. But I won’t interfere first. I have to see what Big Brother Jiang will do.

After knowing that Jiang Chen wasn’t betraying the Prefecture, she felt a lot comfortable. She wanted to see how Jiang Chen would deal with the current situation. She had already witnessed his concoction skills. Now, she wanted to witness his true strength.

Therefore, she found a good hiding spot to observe the development of the situation. If Jiang Chen failed to cope up with the circumstances, she would definitely help.

“Big Brother Jiang, what do we do now?” asked Han Cong.

He cracked his fists upon seeing that all of his fellow villagers were being held hostage by those bad guys. Although he was feeling extremely angry right now, he knew that if he charged at these experts, he would be crushed by their finger given his strength.

“Don’t worry, I’m here.”

Jiang Chen patted Han Cong’s shoulder with a smile and strode forward.

Everyone’s eyes fell upon Jiang Chen when they saw him.

“Brother Jiang.”

Han Changling and the others called out.

“Jiang Chen, I had never thought that you have the guts to come here alone.”

Huang Xiong was crossing his leg and said leisurely.

“Release them,” said Jiang Chen without wasting another breath to talk nonsense.

“Humph! How can a puny Human Immortal speak so arrogantly? Let me teach him a lesson!”

An Earth Immortal expert let out a humph, preparing to lunge at Jiang Chen.

“Stop, don’t be rude to Master Jiang.”

Huang Xiong stood up from his chair and said to Jiang Chen, “Jiang Chen, I have no choice but to do what I have done today. My patriarch ordered me to get you back to our family. If I failed to do that, I will need to eliminate you. Last night, you didn’t give me face at all, so I could only make this decision to lure you out. You don’t have much of a choice now. If you give up the Prefecture and come work for us, I promise that Huang Family will treat you nicely and all of these villagers will be safe and sound.”

He believed that as long as Jiang Chen wasn’t a fool, he wouldn’t refuse this offer again. The current situation was already very obvious. The gap between the two of them was too great. Even if Jiang Chen could accept his death, he wouldn’t do that at the expense of these villager’s lives.

“Huang Xiong, you really shouldn’t mess with me.”

Jiang Chen's tone turned incomparably cold. Real flames rushed out of his eyes as he slowly drew out the dragon-shaped Heavenly Saint Sword which produced a buzzing sound, as if it was thirsting for blood.

“Old man. I will grant you all a pleasure today.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Anyone who was familiar with him knew that such a smile meant that someone would surely suffer. Ever since he arrived in the Immortal World, he had never killed anyone, his Heavenly Saint Sword had never been stained with blood after becoming an Immortal Weapon.

Though he hadn't killed any Immortals didn't mean that he wouldn't kill. As a matter of fact, he had already lost count of how many people he had killed.

“Jiang Chen, I hope that you know what you are doing. You are just a puny Human Immortal, how can you fight us?” Said Huang Xiong viciously.

At the back, Yan Qingcheng was tensed. Although Jiang Chen's action had warmed her heart, she couldn't imagine what would happen if he confronted Huang Xiong.

“Who will be first? If any of you can defeat me, I will pledge myself to Huang Family. However, I have to warn you that my sword is deadly.”

Killing intent was radiated off of Jiang Chen's body. A destructive sword light was rippling out of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Chapter 1077 - Heartless Slaughtering

Overbearing! Domineering!

He was just a man with a sword, but his average-sized body was like an iron tower standing in front of them, impressing and charming them with his unique charisma.

“Big Brother Jiang...”

Han Cong felt extremely worried. Faced with very powerful opponents, he had never thought that Jiang Chen would decide to fight them. No matter how great Jiang Chen was, he was merely a late Human Immortal. How could he possibly take down so many experts of Huang Family alone? He was afraid that Jiang Chen wouldn't stand a chance at all.

However, Jiang Chen's composure and confidence, and thinking of the miracles Jiang Chen had created days ago slightly eased his concerns.

Han Changling, on the other hand, believed that Jiang Chen wasn't a rash person and must have his own purpose of doing so. Otherwise, Jiang Chen wouldn't appear here alone. At this point, all he could do was to hope that Jiang Chen could create miracles once more even though he didn't know what kind of means Jiang Chen would use to deal with these opponents.

Taken over by her curiosity, Yan Qingcheng refrained herself from charging out to see what means would Jiang Chen use. Nevertheless, she had still readied herself in case something happens. As long as Jiang Chen failed to handle them, she would rush out at once to prevent Jiang Chen from getting any harm.

“What? None of you dares to fight me?” Jiang Chen smirked and said.

“Haha! This is a serious joke. A puny Human Immortal expert wants to challenge us? I wonder where he got his confidence from.

Sixth Master, allow me to teach him a lesson so that he knows what his limitations are.” A brawny man said aloud.

Without waiting for Huang Xiong’s consent, he strode towards Jiang Chen. This man was tall, had a robust body and a fierce-looking face but too bad, none of these could scare Jiang Chen at all. With him being an early Earth Immortal, he was just as harmless as an ant to Jiang Chen.

“Brat, I’ll let you know what’s power today and that a young man like you should know some manners.”

Immortal Qi began to roll from the brawny man’s body. He cracked his knuckles, seemingly determined to take Jiang Chen down. His face was full of contempt, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes. It was a logical reaction. How could an early Earth Immortal expert put a puny Human Immortal junior in his eyes?

Pu Chi!

As soon as his voice trailed off, Jiang Chen thrust his sword, but no one saw him moved. The sword in his hand stabbed through the brawny man’s chest.

“You have too much of nonsense.”

Jiang Chen smiled at his opponent. The brawny man was sure that he was now seeing the most terrifying smile in this world. He could feel the vital force in his body draining constantly and an unprecedented fear rushed to his head.

“No, this is not possible. This is not possible!”

That brawny man shook his head continuously, refusing to accept what he saw. How could he end up like this even with his cultivation base two levels higher than his opponent? But the fact remained as it was.

Han Changling and the others’ mouth were opened wide in astonishment. As they had already witnessed Jiang Chen’s strength before during the time when he fought against Steward

Wu who was also an early Earth Immortal expert in front of the Prefecture, they weren't very surprised seeing Jiang Chen defeating this early Earth Immortal expert with a single strike. What amazed them was that Jiang Chen was so ruthless in his killing, although they knew that their hatred for Huang Family could no longer be resolved even if Jiang Chen agreed to join them.

Yan Qingcheng felt incomparably shocked at the back as well. She knew that Jiang Chen had defeated Steward Wu, but Jiang Chen's strength didn't astonish her as much as seeing it by herself. Jiang Chen moved so fast that the early Earth Immortal expert didn't even have the chance to respond. The word scary was no longer the right word to describe his strength.

It was also her first time seeing Jiang Chen's ruthless side. She didn't think that Jiang Chen was so decisive in killing someone who offended him.

"Can't even withstand a single strike. Next." Jiang Chen looked up slowly at his opponents.

Hiss...

Many experts of Huang Family couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air. Having never seen a late Human Immortal expert killing an early Earth Immortal expert with just a single strike, how they viewed Jiang Chen now changed.

"Let me fight him. I would like to know how powerful a late Human Immortal actually is."

Another man stood out. He was a mid Earth Immortal expert, much stronger than the brawny man. The Qi that was exuded from him was frightening.

Jiang Chen shifted his gaze to this man, but his expression didn't change at all. With his unparalleled combat experience and powerful means, any ordinary early Earth Immortal was no match for him. In addition, his dragon transformation skill was strong

enough to jump two levels of cultivation base. In other words, his current combat strength was equivalent to a mid Earth Immortal expert.

“You’re no match for me,” said Jiang Chen casually.

“Exceedingly conceited. Watch the sword.”

The man harrumphed as he held a dazzling sword in his hand. Without saying another word, he lunged at Jiang Chen with extreme speed. It was like he and his sword had turned into a gust of cold wind. The Qi he unleashed was fully locked on Jiang Chen, not giving Jiang Chen a single chance to escape.

Although his opponent’s sword was very fast, Jiang Chen wasn’t any slower. It was always easy for him to strike after his enemy attacked.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced an ear-splitting howl as it slashed at its target.

Clang!

Two swords clashed, creating a piercing buzz and sparks. The man in black couldn’t hold Jiang Chen’s force and was sent three steps back.

“What?!”

This time, the onlookers were truly shocked, including Yan Qingcheng who was watching the scene secretly. One should know that the ability to defeat an early Earth Immortal opponent was very different from defeating a mid Earth Immortal opponent. It was so astounding that a mere late Human Immortal expert could actually do this. Neither of them would believe it if they didn’t see it with their own eyes.

“This brat is strong.”

The man’s expression turned grim. He no longer dared to look

down on Jiang Chen like before.

“Brat, you are really a rare genius. Too bad, you shouldn’t have gone against the Huang Family as I’m not going to be lenient on you,” said the man coldly.

It was his carelessness that he had underestimated this young man. Now, he was going all out. He believed that with his power, killing a late Human Immortal wasn’t a difficult task at all.

Chapter 1078 - Battling late Earth Immortal expert

“Nine Phantom Wolves.”

Jiang Chen decided to compete with speed, not giving his opponent any chance. For a moment, his shadows were everywhere. All of them looked exactly like him, firmly besieging the enemy.

“What?”

The man in black had already readied himself to launch a full-fledged attack at Jiang Chen, but he had never imagined that Jiang Chen would suddenly use such a scary movement technique to confuse him that it made him impossible to tell which one of them was the real Jiang Chen.

Naturally, Jiang Chen wouldn't give his opponent the chance to find himself. All the shadows attacked at the same time. The sparkle of the sword light momentarily dazzled everyone's eyes as it slashed at its target.

The man in black roared and thrust randomly in one of the Jiang Chens, hoping that his luck would hit the real Jiang Chen. As for the other doppelgangers, he didn't have to worry about them at all because none of them could deal a serious damage to him.

Unfortunately, he black didn't have such a good luck. He knew that he was finished when he realized that he merely stabbed one of Jiang Chen's shadows.

Pu Chi!

At the same time, Jiang Chen charged. His long sword went through the back of his opponent's body, causing the man to spurt out an arrow of blood. The man looked down at the tip of the sharp sword that had appeared on his chest and felt the Qi of death enshrouding him entirely.

“My god. Even the mid Earth Immortal expert died under his hands? When did Brother Jiang become this powerful?”

“Did you see that movement skill just now? With so many shadows appearing at one time, anyone would be baffled by it. A very terrifying move.”

“Amazing. He’s truly amazing and a rare genius. Killing a mid Earth Immortal expert even though he’s just a late Human Immortal? Did we save a monster at that time?”

.....

All the Han villagers widened their eyes in amazement. The scene was truly unbelievable and shocking to them, they couldn’t stop gulping their saliva.

At the back, Yan Qingcheng felt that her emotions was running a little out of control. Though she had expected Jiang Chen to be very strong, but the present scene proved that her expectation was a little bit low. Putting everything aside, his incredible movement technique was something she had never seen before.

“Where did Big Brother Jiang come? How could he have such a powerful technique? Yan City is just a small place, someone like him shouldn’t appear here.”

Yan Qingcheng looked more and more enchanted as she continued to stare at Jiang Chen. It was always easy to submit oneself to an omnipotent man.

Two bodies were already lying on the ground. Every expert of Huang Family looked incomparably ugly. Apart from anger, they also felt shocked. They all looked at Jiang Chen as if they have seen a ghost, trying to scrutinize Jiang Chen using their eyes, trying to find out whether Jiang Chen was really a late Human Immortal.

“Who else? I think all of you should come together.”

“What a good Jiang Chen. You have gone beyond my expectation!”

Huang Xiong wasn't able to settle his emotions. It was such a pity that Jiang Chen had been recruited by the Prefecture. If Huang Family had such a talent, their overall strength should've had risen above the Prefecture's.

But still, he didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes. After observing the two battles, he had to admit that Jiang Chen was strong, but this young man only had the strength of a mid Earth Immortal at best. Even if Jiang Chen could kill a mid Earth Immortal expert, he wouldn't stand a chance against a late Earth Immortal. One should know that the gap between a mid Earth Immortal and a late Earth Immortal expert was indescribable.

"Liu Chang, you will deal with him. Since he has killed our people he could no longer be our asset. So, eliminate him." Huang Xiong said to an elder next to him.

"Yes, Sixth Master."

Liu Chang nodded and then strode towards Jiang Chen. He was a powerful late Earth Immortal expert. From top to bottom, his body was filled with killing intent, so powerful that no one would dare to stare at him directly.

"Jiang Chen, you are really a rare talent, but you have offended the people you shouldn't have offended. You should know that Huang Family isn't someone you can afford to offend. I will give you one more chance. If you kowtow before Sixth Master and apologize, I will grant you a quick death." Liu Cheng said.

He sounded incomparably confident because he didn't think that Jiang Chen had any other powerful means to deal with him. Killing a mid Earth Immortal was already considered the miracle of miracles. So, killing a late Earth Immortal wouldn't be possible anymore.

Yet, being a man who always created miracles, impossible things tended to happen on Jiang Chen.

“You people always like to talk nonsense,” said Jiang Chen impatiently.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, since you don’t know what death is, don’t blame me for being impolite!”

Liu Chang harrumphed coldly, unleashing all of his powerful late Earth Immortal Qi that had already locked on Jiang Chen, not giving his opponent a chance to flee.

“Chief, do you think Brother Jiang can defeat this Liu Chang?”

“I think the gap between them is too big. If he could really kill Liu Chang, then that’s the greatest miracle under the heavens.”

“Let’s see. I think that Brother Jiang still has some trump cards, or else why would he be so calm.

.....

Every villager was worried for Jiang Chen because his victory or defeat determined their fate. To put it bluntly, the fate of Han Village was now in his hands. If Jiang Chen died, all of them would be over. None of them would face a pleasant end.

At the back, Yan Qingcheng had already begun circulating her Immortal Qi. She was ready to fight any time. If Jiang Chen’s life was in danger, she would rush out without hesitation.

“Brat, give me your life!” Liu Cheng roared.

He struck first, with a palm as large as a five meter boulder carrying stormy gusts at Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1079 - Killing the late Earth Immortal expert

The combat power of a late Earth Immortal expert could never be underestimated. With Jiang Chen's present condition, he definitely was no match for a late Earth Immortal expert. But due to his belligerent attitude, he didn't shrink even a bit. He kept his Heavenly Saint Sword and struck out the True Dragon Palm. A giant dragon claw materialized and crashed against the opponent's attack.

Hong Long...

The collision shook the ground and created layers of waves in the void. Any onlooker could imagine how much energy had been generated from this impact.

Deng Deng Deng...

Jiang Chen retreated a dozen steps, feeling a little suffocated in his chest while all his Qi and blood had gone somewhat disordered, but with the help of the dragon transformation skill and wood essence, he recovered almost instantly from the injuries.

"Big Brother Jiang, are you alright?"

Han Cong was shocked and went over to Jiang Chen's side hastily. He felt that his heart was at his mouth when he saw Jiang Chen being sent back by the opponent. If Jiang Chen lost, what would await the Han villagers could already be pictured.

"What a strong brat to stay intact even after receiving my attack."

The elder was surprised. In his point of view, even if his previous blow couldn't kill Jiang Chen, it should at least injure him. He hadn't imagined that Jiang Chen would still look so normal after retreating a dozen steps away.

But this had given a relief to the experts of Huang Family. At least, the battle proved that Jiang Chen was no match for late a Earth Immortal expert. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to accept it after Jiang Chen killed their early and mid Earth Immortal experts.

Behind where Yan Qingcheng was hiding, even though she was worried sick for Jiang Chen, she heaved a sigh of relief. If Jiang Chen was too heaven defying, she, a genius of the Prefecture, wouldn't be able to accept it as well.

“It seems like Big Brother Jiang is really no match for a late Earth Immortal expert. With three late Earth Immortals there, it would be my time to interfere but I have to be patient first. I have to wait until Big Brother Jiang loses his ability to defend before I strike so that he will be moved by my rescue.”

Yan Qingcheng curled her lips into a smile. She was already prepared to strike at any moment. In Yan City, it was very difficult to find her an opponent of the same level that could match her strength. Even that Huang Xiong was no match for her. This was what separates a genius to ordinary people.

“Hehe, Jiang Chen, what do you want to do now? You said that as long as any of us here defeats you, you will serve the Huang family, and now, you have lost. I, Sixth Master, has always been a forgiving person. If you yield to us now, I can let bygones be bygones. But if you continue with your obsession, you will surely lose your life.”

Huang Xiong chuckled as he said to Jiang Chen. To an outsider, these conditions were already considered not bad given that Jiang Chen had killed their people.

“Too bad I'm still standing here intact. Your family hasn't defeated me yet.”

Jiang Chen shrugged, showing a face filled with confidence.

“Sixth Master, don’t waste any more breath with this brat. Since he doesn’t even know how to appreciate favors, I will personally kill him today.”

The elder had a ferocious look and full of killing intent, determined to end Jiang Chen’s life.

“Big Brother Jiang, what should we do now?”

Han Cong’s face was full of worries.

“Ah Cong, move several steps back and watch a good show.”

Jiang Chen shook his body casually. The bones in his body started cracking. The battle just now clearly showed the difference between their strength. Given his present cultivation base, he must use his dragon form to fight a late Earth Immortal.

In that case, he shouldn’t hold back anymore.

“Brat, what other means do you still have?” asked the elder coldly.

“I don’t have to take drastic means to deal with you.” Jiang Chen said.

An incomparably powerful force came pouring out of his body like tidal waves. At the same time, tremendous changes were happening in his body. He had turned into a half man half dragon form. Although he could straightaway turn into a full dragon, he didn’t want to make himself widely known, so he maintained his half-dragon form since it still increased his combat strength by tenfold.

Furthermore, he also kept his dragon wings. It was better for him to hide as many cards as possible. Anyhow, his present state was enough to deal with all these experts.

“What?”

The sudden change in Jiang Chen caused a commotion from the crowd. Whether it was the experts of Huang Family, or Han

villagers and Yan Qingcheng, all of them were shocked. This was an unprecedented shock, greater than the shock they received when Jiang Chen killed the mid Earth Immortal expert.

What kind of technique is this? How could he enhance his combat strength to such extent in an instant? It seems like his combat strength has been enhanced by at least tenfold. How many trump cards does Big Brother Jiang actually has and who is he...? How could such a monstrous genius emerge in Yan City? Such a genius certainly wouldn't appear so suddenly in the major powers of One-Line-Sky.

Yan Qingcheng's eyes glittered. Jiang Chen's endless trump cards had truly astounded her.

"A powerful transformation skill that boosts one's combat strength in an instant."

The elder wasn't able to remain calm.

"Why is there such a terrifying transformation skill in the Heavens and Earth? I have once seen some powerful Forbidden Art which some experts used to enhance their combat strength by twofold or even threefold instantly, but this guy has just boosted his combat strength by at least tenfold, which is way too much."

"I have never imagined that a late Human Immortal expert had such a powerful trump card. With his current condition, doesn't it mean that he could defeat a late Earth Immortal opponent?"

"Don't worry about it. Such a terrifying Forbidden Art will surely have a tremendous backlash on the caster. I'm sure that he won't be able to stay in that form for very long. Once it expires, he is doomed."

.....

All the experts of Huang Family were grinding their teeth, not daring to look down on Jiang Chen anymore. But they all concluded that this was just a Forbidden Art that wouldn't last

long and the caster must pay a high price for using this spell.

If they knew that Jiang Chen's transformation has no backlash, they would certainly be shocked.

"Bring it on."

Jiang Chen gazed at the elder; the Heavenly Saint Sword reappeared in his hand.

"Humph! I would like to see how powerful your beast-like form really is."

The elder harrumphed. Being a dignified late Earth Immortal expert, he definitely couldn't shrink back from the fight. Even if Jiang Chen used a Forbidden Art, he didn't believe that he would lose to a late Human Immortal.

Whoosh!

The elder didn't dare look down on this fight anymore. Immediately, he summoned his combat weapon—a giant golden hammer that radiated boundless majestic Qi. Although it was an Earth Immortal Weapon, it wasn't any stronger than the Heavenly Saint Sword.

"Meteor Hammer." The elder roared.

The giant hammer struck like meteor shower. For an instant, the entire sky was full of images of giant hammers. Looking at it from afar, it was hard to differentiate the real hammer from the fake.

Despite most of them not being the real hammer, the damage they dealt was shockingly great and irresistible. It was an attack that blotted out the sky and covered the earth, there was virtually no gap between every hammer and they moved extremely fast. All the hammers had locked onto Jiang Chen's position, not giving him the slightest chance to escape.

"Such an insignificant attack."

A cold smirk was revealed at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth,

totally not putting his opponent's attack in his eyes. In his point of view, this Meteor Hammer is too simple to break. Even if the Qi of this attack seemed extraordinary, as long as one could find the real giant hammer, one could break this skill.

Bo!

The Heavenly Saint Sword rippled, carrying along an indestructible Qi and incomparable sharpness, and stabbed at one of the giant hammers.

Bang!

A large spark was created. Due to Jiang Chen's power being too powerful after his transformation, the golden hammer could not withstand the strike and was deflected away. Then, the Heavenly Saint Sword blasted out layers of sword waves, destroying all the images of the hammer.

Deng! Deng!

The elder received a strong backlash, and was forced two steps back. His face paled slightly.

Without giving the elder the time to recover, Jiang Chen lunged. His speed in his half-dragon form was already super-fast, adding the Spatial Shift into the equation, it made him move like a bolt of lightning. He appeared before the elder in a blink, slashing down with the force that could pull a mountain off the ground.

The elder was helpless and could only raise the giant golden hammer in hope that it could withstand Jiang Chen's attack.

Clang!

He hadn't even recovered from the shock of the backlash, so how could he possibly resist this strike that was fiercer and more powerful? Under the slash, he was sent a few steps back while the golden hammer slipped out of his hands.

Barf!

The elder suffered consecutive backlashes from the strikes and couldn't stand it anymore, and spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“Hahaha...”

Jiang Chen laughed aloud. His dark hair fluttered in the breeze. His killing intent had already been ignited. This was the first killing spree he started since his arrival in the Immortal World, so he had to make sure that he had a good time in killing his opponents.

Without waiting for the elder to react, Jiang Chen's sword was launched once more at lightning speed, swift and sharp. At this time, the elder could no longer resist. He died on the spot as the sword stabbed through his glabella.

Pu Chi!

Jiang Chen drew out his sword from the skull mercilessly. The elder fell to the ground with his eyes wide open, as if he had died reluctantly. As a late Earth Immortal expert and a senior of Huang Family, it was a shame that he died under the hands of a late Human Immortal brat.

Hiss!

Many people sucked in a breath of cold air. For a moment, the scene turned extremely silent when they found out that even the late Earth Immortal expert was killed. This time, Jiang Chen had overturned their thoughts and even their outlooks on the world. His existence would certainly leave an indelible impression in their minds.

“No, this isn't possible. This isn't possible at all!”

Huang Xiong widened his eyes; he couldn't believe what was happening.

Chapter 1080 - One Move to Subdue the Enemy

Who would have thought that Jiang Chen could really kill a late Earth Immortal expert? Plus, it was a kill with repressiveness. No one would actually believe that a late Human Immortal would be able to do this, yet the corpse that laid on the ground told them otherwise.

Jiang Chen shook his Heavenly Saint Sword and looked over at Huang Xiong with an indifferent expression. “Like I’ve said, all of you should fight me together.”

That flat tone revealed a merciless killing intent. No one knew that something so powerful was hidden inside Jiang Chen’s body. Currently, his confidence had reached an overwhelming extent.

After the advancement of the dragon transformation skill, its power became even more terrifying than before, which made Jiang Chen a terrifying cultivator. To Jiang Chen, any late Earth Immortal expert like Huang Xiong wasn’t worth anything in his eyes anymore, unless he was facing a late Earth Immortal genius like Yan Qingcheng.

“Jiang Chen, you truly are the scariest genius that I’ve ever seen. But don’t get overly confidence about it. There are still two late Earth Immortal experts here and your Forbidden Art won’t last long. With our combined strength, you will die for sure.” Huang Xiong said coldly.

He concluded that Jiang Chen was using a Forbidden Art that wouldn’t last for long. Once the skill wore off, Jiang Chen would be finished. After witnessing Jiang Chen’s combat strength, even Huang Xiong was not confident in taking him down. However, having two late Earth Immortals, it wouldn’t be a problem stalling Jiang Chen until his Forbidden Art wore off. By that time, Jiang Chen would become very fragile and easy to kill.

“You have loads of crap. Come and fight me.”

Jiang Chen shook his head upon realizing what Huang Xiong was planning to do. But, Huang Xiong would only be disappointed with the result. Even if there were plenty of late Earth Immortal experts here, they would all fall due to fatigue if they decided to fight in a war of attrition against Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s direct challenge had provoked Huang Xiong that he unleashed his powerful Qi. Before coming here, Huang Xiong had never thought that Jiang Chen would be such a difficult enemy. That was why he didn’t bring any half-step Heaven Immortal with him. At this point, he had no choice but to confront this brat personally or else, he would lose his face as the Sixth Master.

He and the other late Earth Immortal experts exchanged glances and nodded. Then, they walked towards Jiang Chen, blocking his left and right side. If this incident was spread, it would certainly cause the public to laugh out loud.

But no onlookers seemed to be laughing because they weren’t idiots. They knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t just an ordinary late Human Immortal expert.

To Huang Xiong, he couldn’t care much about his reputation anymore. It wouldn’t matter as long as he could eliminate Jiang Chen. Today, he was able to see the real threat Jiang Chen posed. The threat that didn’t just come from his scary alchemy technique but also his monstrous combat strength. Moreover, this young talent was currently used by the Prefecture. Therefore, it would only be a matter of time before this young man would bring disaster to Huang Family if they didn’t root him out as soon as possible. Not only Huang Xiong knew about these consequences, but also the onlookers.

The people of Han Village felt tensed once more, one late Earth Immortal expert wasn’t the same as two. Besides, the previous late Earth Immortal elder had just reached this realm recently. So

comparing him to Huang Xiong, a peak late Earth Immortal, the difference was significant.

“Keep it up, Big Brother Jiang.”

Han Cong clenched his fists at the back of Jiang Chen and cheered. He didn't have too much confidence in Jiang Chen before, but now, he had chosen to believe in Jiang Chen unconditionally.

Yan Qingcheng was ready to fight. As long as Jiang Chen failed to resist the two opponents, she would rush out immediately, but she had an intuition that her help wasn't needed at all. Jiang Chen alone could handle them all.

“Do you dare to fight my Immortal Weapon?”

Huang Xiong stood opposite of Jiang Chen and said in a cold tone. There was a single unique skill of Huang Family named Overturning Heavenly Palm. Its attack was incomparably powerful. Once it was struck out, its power could overturn seas and mountains, giving the target no chance of defending it at all.

Upon hearing what he said, Jiang Chen couldn't help but smile. To answer Huang Xiong's question, Jiang Chen chose to act instead of talking. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand vanished. He had never feared a fight using combat skills because there were no other skills in the Heavens and Earth that was more powerful than the True Dragon Combat Skills.

“Attack!”

Huang Xiong didn't dare to be slow. All the Immortal Qi in his body spread out like tidal waves. Both of his palms were sent out constantly, creating so many palm prints that it blurred everyone's sight!

“Overturning Heavenly Palm!” Huang Xiong roared.

Countless of palm prints that blotted out the sky and enshrouded the entire battlefield were launched at Jiang Chen. The Qi it emitted was extremely terrifying.

“Trembling Lands and Mountains.”

Simultaneously, the other late Earth Immortal elder sent out another powerful attack. Though his voice wasn't as loud as Huang Xiong, his attack was also frightening. The strong Qi waves emanated from it caused cracks on the ground, and a rumble was heard from below, as if a terrible earthquake was about to occur.

This was a terrifying and lethal attack of a late Earth Immortal expert. If Jiang Chen were replaced by an ordinary late Human Immortal expert, that person would have been crushed to pieces.

“Golden Dragon Seal.”

Jiang Chen didn't show them any quarters, striking out his most powerful attack—Golden Dragon Seal. Despite his opponents being not as powerful as him, he couldn't neglect their attacks. Three lifelike golden dragons roared out from him, one rushed to the elder while the other two charged at Huang Xiong.

Hong Long...

Terrifying waves collided with one another. Smoke was rolling in the sky. The residual waves that spread out from the violent collision shivered everyone's heart. The strongest cultivator in Han Village was a half-step Earth Immortal, but he had never seen such a fierce battle before. Each and every one of the villagers looked incomparably pale. Some of the weaker cultivators could already feel the shock of the impact despite their distance. Some even spurted out blood due to the force.

The combatants staggered backwards at the same time. It seemed like it would be hard to differentiate the winner of this battle.

Such a result shook Huang Xiong's heart very much. He could only tie with Jiang Chen even after he combined his strength with another late Earth Immortal expert. This had given him the impulse to spurt out blood.

“Sixth Master, this brat is very strong.”

The elder's expression changed drastically.

“Don't panic. He's just solely relying on the Forbidden Art. We'll just need continue to wear him out. I would like to see how long his Forbidden Art would last,” said Huang Xiong cruelly.

His eyes were staring at Jiang Chen like a venomous snake, sending out bloodthirsty light and dense killing intent.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly. Suddenly he thought of the Earth Prison skill, a skill that he hadn't used for a long time because this skill must be carried out on the ground. It used the energy of the earth to bind the opponents.

Back when he was still in Saint Origin World, almost every opponent he fought would create a battlefield in the void, which made this skill useless. Thus, he had put it at the back of his mind until today.

This skill would be perfect to deal with Huang Xiong. After all, Huang Xiong was very difficult to kill because he's innately strong, unless some powerful skill was used on him.

Although the Earth Prison was restricted by certain conditions, it didn't mean it wasn't a powerful skill. If this technique was used to sneak-attack an opponent, it would be a terrifying move. As long as the difference between the opponent and the caster wasn't too wide, the opponent wouldn't be able to escape from it.

Plus, Earth Immortal experts couldn't fly, so they were bound by the force of the earth.

“Earth Prison!” Jiang Chen bellowed.

As his voice faded, Huang Xiong, who looked very composed just now changed his expression instantly, he felt a powerful force rushing from beneath the earth towards his body.

Hong!

The powerful force turned into an invisible prison. Being unprepared before this sudden attack, Huang Xiong couldn't help but stagger. He would have fallen flat on the ground if he hadn't reacted fast enough.

Nevertheless, this was enough for Jiang Chen.

The moment Huang Xiong was caught inside the Earth Prison, Jiang Chen lunged swiftly and appeared before Huang Xiong like a ghost. His sharp dragon claw clenched Huang Xiong's neck, blood was starting to flow out from his grip.

Hiss!

Huang Xiong sucked in a breath of cold air. A very dangerous Qi was stirred from his heart. That was the Qi of death. His face turned white as paper. His body was shivering in fear. He had lost all of his previous demeanor.

"Sixth Master!"

The late Earth Immortal elder at one side yelled. He still had no idea what had happened just now. He had no idea why Huang Xiong, a peak late Earth Immortal, had fallen into Jiang Chen's hands so suddenly?

"Didn't you want to fight me with combat skills?" Jiang Chen said with a smile. But such a brilliant smile sent chills down Huang Xiong's spine.

"Don't, don't kill me, Jiang Chen. It won't do you any good if you kill me." Huang Xiong pleaded.

Having lost the ability to defend, he knew clearly that if Jiang Chen wanted to kill him now, he would die instantly without any resistance. But he didn't want to die. In fact, no one wanted to die, especially those people who had very a bright life ahead of them and regarded life as the most important thing.

"Order them to release all the people of Han Village now." Jiang Chen said in an unassailable tone.

“Jiang Chen, I can release them, but you have to promise not to kill me,” said Huang Xiong.

Now that the villagers were still in their hands, he thought that he had the right to negotiate with Jiang Chen.

“You don’t have the right to talk to me about terms. I’ll kill you right away if you don’t release them. And I can also assure you that no villagers will be harmed by your people,” said Jiang Chen with squinted eyes.

Chapter 1081 - A Heavy Price

Huang Xiong was in terror and drenched with sweat. The shadow of death had enshrouded him, leaving him no more courage to bargain with Jiang Chen. When he looked at Jiang Chen's ruthless and indifferent eyes, he felt that he had been absolutely dominated.

“Release them.”

Huang Xiong said to those black-clothed men who had been guarding all the villagers. He failed to realize that this action was giving away the last bargaining chip that he had. But he could not be blamed either because he was just too afraid of death. He cherished his life too much. Plus, Jiang Chen's dominance had made his head spin.

But of course, the largest mistake was that he didn't understand Jiang Chen well. He naively thought that given his identity, Jiang Chen wouldn't kill him as long as he released the villagers. He was the sixth master of Huang Family after all; no one in Yan City would have the guts to kill him.

In Jiang Chen's life, there had been countless events of slaughtering. To him, killing was just as common as eating rice. He wouldn't even blink when he killed, especially when he killed his despised enemies. What Huang Xiong did disgusted him so much. Jiang Chen would never forgive those who threatened to hurt the people he knew if he didn't comply. The moment Han Cong ran to his courtyard and told him what happened to Han Village, he had already sentenced Huang Xiong to death in his heart. Even if Huang Xiong agreed to release all the villagers, he and all of his men still needed to die today.

In fact, Huang Xiong still had the power to bargain before he ordered the release of the villagers, because his people were still in control of all the villagers life. Despite the large number of

villagers, most of them were very weak. If those experts guarding them decided to attack those villagers, Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to ensure that no one would be injured.

Hua La...

The moment they were freed, all the villagers came to Jiang Chen's side under the lead of Han Changling. Han Cong joined the group.

"Chief, are you all alright?"

Han Cong finally had a look of joy.

"We're fine."

Han Changling shook his head and looked at Jiang Chen with eyes filled with worries. He wasn't worried about Jiang Chen's cultivation base as he had witnessed Jiang Chen's terrifying power. Now that even Huang Xiong was no match for him, no one else would be Jiang Chen's opponent.

The thing he was worried about was whether Jiang Chen would kill Huang Xiong. If he really killed him, it would be a declaration of war against the entire Huang Family. Throughout Yan City, there was virtually no one who would dare to kill the Sixth Master of Huang Family. He was sure that their lives wouldn't have any peace once Jiang Chen killed this man.

Even though Jiang Chen was very strong, there was still a large gap between him and Huang Family. One should know that there were Heaven Immortal experts in Huang Family.

"Jiang Chen, I've already released all the villagers. You can let me go now. As long as you release me, I assure you that Huang Family won't trouble you." Huang Xiong said. His tone was nearly pleading.

"Huang Xiong, you should now that there are some mistakes that you shouldn't commit. Once you made it, you'll have to pay a heavy price for it. You can do whatever you want to me, but you

chose another way that really disgusted me. From the moment I step into Han Village, your fate has already been decided. You and all of your people's fate have already been decided.”

Jiang Chen's face was expressionless. His eyes and his killing intent turned colder and colder, so cold that the others could feel it.

“You... you break your promise! I've already released them...”

Huang Xiong was terrified.

“I have never said that I'll let you go.”

Jiang Chen's word made Huang Xiong's heart sink towards the bottom of a valley. It was true that Jiang Chen had never mentioned about letting him go. In other words, Jiang Chen had never intended to let him go since the very beginning.

“Go to hell!”

With Jiang Chen's dragon claw, Huang Xiong's neck was ripped off of his body. Blood gushed out of the opening, but Huang Xiong's eyes were still wide open, like he couldn't accept that everything was real. He had always been the dignified Sixth Master of Huang Family. He had never thought that he would die one day or be killed by someone.

Unfortunately, he had offended the wrong person—Jiang Chen, which costed him his life. His corpse plopped to the ground. From now on, there would no longer be a Sixth Master of the Huang Family in Yan City.

Hiss...

The scene caused many of them to suck in a breath of cold air. Having not seen such ruthlessness, everyone looked at Jiang Chen frightfully, as if they were seeing a ghost or a bloodthirsty demon that came from hell.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you kill our Sixth Master! Do you have

any idea what's his position in Huang Family?"

The last late Earth Immortal elder berated loudly. He was trying to use his voice to hide his fear, but it was pointless.

"You'll end up in the same way," said Jiang Chen. Then, he thrust at the elder frenziedly, and casted the Earth Prison at the same time.

The elder was defenseless. He let out a miserable wail when one of his arms was cut off by Jiang Chen. He wasn't as powerless as now, but after seeing Huang Xiong being killed by Jiang Chen, he couldn't muster the courage to face this beast. He knew that he didn't stand a chance against him.

Bang!

Jiang Chen's palm landed on the elder's chest where his heart was, crushing all of his viscera, and causing him to die instantaneously.

The remaining experts of Huang Family were completely freaked out. They had never seen this kind of event before. Now, they were filled with despair and dread, fear that came from their innermost soul.

"Big Brother Jiang, are you going to kill them all?"

Han Cong mustered his bravery and came closer to Jiang Chen. He now felt like Jiang Chen was a stranger to him. He had never imagined that a youth like Jiang Chen would have such a scary side, like the incarnation of devil.

However, this couldn't be blamed on Han Cong as he was just too young. Murder was just too strange to him, let alone killing several people.

"Don't talk, Ah Cong."

Han Changling hastily pulled Han Cong over, afraid that this boy would offend Jiang Chen's dignity. In their eyes, Jiang Chen was

no longer the Jiang Chen that they saved at that time. After killing the late Earth Immortal expert, Jiang Chen had already become a high and mighty expert. Apart from the gratitude that they had for Jiang Chen, they also had plenty of respect and fear for him.

Jiang Chen didn't answer Han Cong's question. He swiftly drew out his Heavenly Saint sword and lunged at the Huang Family's camp.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Agonizing wails were heard, so much so that it raised people's goose bumps. In his dragon form, the Earth Immortal experts were killed as easily as slaughtering sheep. None of them had the power to resist. In just a few blinks, all of them died miserably under his sword. Han Village was now flowing with blood. The air was mingled with the stench of blood. All of the experts from Huang Family were dead.

Every one of the villagers' faces turned pale. Their bodies were shivering because Jiang Chen's violence shook their soul. However, they were very clear that it was Jiang Chen who saved them. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, they would've all died here. Therefore, they felt even more grateful rather than dreadful.

From behind, Yan Qingcheng's expression had changed drastically. This was her first time seeing Jiang Chen killing people. It shocked her completely. She had never seen such a bloody scene. Jiang Chen on the other hand looked just as normal, like nothing had happened; it seemed he had already grown accustomed to such a scene.

Jiang Chen returned to his human form, approached Han Cong and said solemnly, “Han Cong, you must remember that this is a world where the law of the jungle decides everything. You can never have the slightest bit of mercy for your enemy because that's being ruthless to your friends and families. If I didn't kill all of them today, not only me, but all of the villagers will also end up

dead. That would be a horrifying scene that you'll never hope to see. You can hardly see such an incident in Yan City and One-Line-Sky because they are too small. One day, when you leave this region, you will find the real cruelty outside, the world where human devours human."

What Jiang Chen said made Han Cong palpitate because it was too strange to him, but he knew that whatever Jiang Chen had said was for his own good.

"Yes, Big Brother Jiang."

Han Cong nodded, trying his best not to look at the corpses.

"Brother Jiang, I act on behalf of Han Village to thank you for this."

Han Changling cupped fists at Jiang Chen.

"You don't have to thank me, Chief. This matter started all because of me," replied Jiang Chen.

"But Brother Jiang, after killing so many experts of Huang Family and the Sixth Master, who is the brother of the patriarch of that family, they will certainly not let him die in vain." Han Changling said worriedly.

The revenge of Huang Family would absolutely be terrifying. By that time, not only Jiang Chen would be in danger, every one of the villagers would also fall into the same circumstance.

"Don't worry about it."

Jiang Chen waved his hand, and then turned to where Yan Qingcheng was hiding. "Big Miss has been hiding there for so long. It's time for you to come out now."

After hearing this, everyone turned towards that direction. Sure enough, they saw a beautiful woman stepping out of the darkness. It seemed like Jiang Chen had already noticed Yan Qingcheng hiding there since the very beginning.

“You know that I am hiding there all along?”

Yan Qingcheng approached Jiang Chen and said with a smile. She thought that she was a pro in concealing herself, but was already discovered by Jiang Chen actually. The only explanation for that was Jiang Chen's senses were just too keen. She also had to admit that this man was too scary and she had no idea how many more trump cards he had.

Chapter 1082 - Huang Ying

“Jiang Chen was able to sense it. Jiang Chen knew that Big Miss has been following us all the way from the Prefecture,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

He understood why Yan Qingcheng had followed them all the way her. For her, she needed to consider the safety of the Prefecture. However, he felt slightly unpleasant by this sense of distrust.

After hearing that, Yan Qingcheng couldn't help but tremble inside her heart. She could feel a sense of guilt in her heart because Jiang Chen had changed from calling her Miss to Big Miss, which sounded a bit more distance.

“Big Brother Jiang, Yuan Chengjun came to me and told me about you going outside of the Prefecture and meeting Huang Xiong late at night. He claimed that you are a spy sent by Huang Family. Coincidentally, you left the Prefecture hastily early in the morning, which made Qingcheng even more suspicious. That was why Qingcheng followed Big Brother Jiang. Qingcheng never thought that things would turn out to be like this. Qingcheng felt ashamed and is sorry.”

Yan Qingcheng bowed to Jiang Chen solemnly and told him what she knew. Anyone could sense her sincerity.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen nodded secretly. If this was just an act of Yan Qingcheng and she just tried to make up lies to prevaricate, Jiang Chen would lost interest in her and would leave the Prefecture for good.

But Yan Qingcheng wasn't telling a lie. She told the truth, which swept away all the anger that he had. Plus, he had known that Yuan Chengjun had been talking bad things about him behind his back.

As a matter of fact, Huang Xiong did wait for him outside the Prefecture. Yuan Chengjun must have seen them meeting each other and told Yan Qingcheng about it, causing her to suspect him. However, logically speaking, there shouldn't be such a coincidental thing in the world, which made Jiang Chen suspect that all of these was secretly planned by Yuan Chengjun.

As for Yan Qingcheng, he was no longer angry at her. The fact that she didn't storm into his courtyard after learning about the meeting between him and Huang Xiong indicated that she trusted him. If he was to put in her position, he would probably have the same doubts. Therefore, he couldn't put the blame on her. Now that every doubt of hers had been cleared, all these incidents would no longer affect his relationship with her and the Prefecture.

"Yuan Chengjun is a narrow-minded person. Miss Qingcheng should be more careful while dealing with him."

Jiang Chen reminded but didn't tell her about Yuan Chengjun storming into his room to warn him.

"Big Brother Yuan indeed isn't an open-minded person. But I grew up with him. I know that he's not a bad person. Plus, my father and Uncle Yuan are both sworn brothers. Big Brother Yuan will never do anything that will harm the Prefecture," said Yan Qingcheng.

"I see." Jiang Chen replied with a smile and didn't continue explaining further because there were some things that weren't necessary to explain in detail.

"Big Brother Jiang's means has truly shocked Qingcheng. I have always thought that Big Brother Jiang is just a master in alchemy. I didn't imagine that Big Brother Jiang also has such a scary combat power and could even kill a late Earth Immortal despite being only a late Human Immortal. Big Brother Jiang is truly a rare genius. I'm afraid that even those super geniuses in Ethereal Immortal Domain wouldn't be able to do this. If I didn't see this with my

own eyes, I would never believe it. Sister is really impressed by Big Brother Jiang.” Yan Qingcheng said sincerely.

Geniuses had always been proud of themselves, including Yan Qingcheng. It wasn't easy for her to admit that she was impressed by someone, particularly a genius as young as Jiang Chen.

“Brother Jiang is truly a real genius. However, I don't think Huang Family will let Huang Xiong's death go in vain. I have no idea what we should do next,” said Han Changling worriedly.

“In my opinion, we should burn their bodies so that no one from that family will know about this,” said Han Second.

“No, it's not necessary at all. Because Huang Xiong has brought many experts to Han Village, we can't hide this incident from them. They should already know about this incident. It's only a matter of time before they find out what had happened. None of you can stay here any longer,” said Jiang Chen.

He then turned to Yan Qingcheng, saying, “Miss Qingcheng, do you think it's a difficult task to arrange accommodations for all the villagers of Han Village?”

“Rest assured Big Brother Jiang, sister will ensure the safety of all the villagers. All of them will follow me back to Yan City and settle down in the Prefecture,” said Yan Qingcheng.

At this time, only the Prefecture could protect the villagers.

After hearing that, all villagers let out a sigh of relief. With the protection of the Prefecture, they wouldn't have to worry about their safety. Also, it would bring great benefits to the village if they could establish a good rapport with the Prefecture.

All of these happened because of Jiang Chen. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, Han Village wouldn't have such luck. The high and mighty Prefecture would never give such a special treatment to a small village like theirs.

“En, I'm relieved to hear Sister Qingcheng say this.”

Jiang Chen smiled. The one who killed the Huang family's experts was him and their main target was also him, while the Han villagers were merely an extra piece on the chessboard. So, as long as the villagers were protected by the Prefecture, their safety was ensured. He believed that Huang Family wouldn't go and offend the Prefecture just because of a tiny village.

Without delaying much, every villager had already packed up their belongings. Then, they followed the lead of Jiang Cheng and Yan Qingcheng back to Yan City. Although there were over a hundred of them, they were still able to travel very fast under the blessing of the energy of the two experts and reached Yan City in just half a day's time.

It was hard to stay stealthy with over a hundred people entering the city at the same time. Soon, the news about Han Village was spread across the city, including Jiang Chen killing Huang Xiong. The news had shocked even the City Lord.

In the room, Yan Dongliu and Yan Qingcheng seated next to each other, while Yuan Chengjun was standing at one side.

“Qingcheng, you said Jiang Chen killed Huang Xiong?”

Yan Dongliu couldn't hide his astonishment. Even after knowing what had happened in Han Village, he still couldn't believe it. Like any other people, he regarded Jiang Chen as a very powerful alchemist who commonly focused in concoction and thus causing their combat power to stay stagnant. Jiang Chen, on the other hand, was an abnormal kind. Not only was he great in alchemy, he also had astonishing and unbelievable combat strength.

“Not possible. I can't believe that he killed Huang Xiong. That Huang Xiong is a peak late Earth Immortal! Even for me, it is a very difficult thing to kill him in battle.” Yuan Chengjun said loudly.

His emotions seemed somewhat agitated. He had been looking down on Jiang Chen since the very beginning. Being a late Earth

Immortal, he had a unique advantage over a Human Immortal expert. But now, he felt that his advantage was gone all of a sudden. How could he ever accept that?

“That’s right father. Daughter was hiding in the dark and saw everything clearly. Everyone from Huang Family that came to that village died in Jiang Chen’s hands,” said Yan Qingcheng with certainty.

“It is unthinkable to have such a strange man in the Heavens and Earth. I’m afraid that such a shocking talent is rare even in the Ethereal Immortal Domain. This man’s future is limitless. He is an opportunity we can’t afford to miss.” Yan Dongliu said with a nod, attaching great importance to Jiang Chen. If he ignored such a rare genius, he would certainly be called a fool.

“Humph! What can he be in the future? He’s just a puny Human Immortal.” Yuan Chengjun harrumphed coldly.

“Why does Big Brother Yuan have to go against Jiang Chen? You kept saying that Jiang Chen was a spy of Huang Family. Today, Jiang Chen killed Huang Xiong. It only showed his sincerity towards the Prefecture. I hope that Big Brother Yuan will stop picking on Jiang Chen. Both of you are members of the Prefecture. Both of you should work together as a team.”

Yan Qingcheng frowned at Yuan Chengjun. She wasn’t happy that Yuan Cheng kept on picking on Jiang Chen all the time.

“En, Qingcheng’s right. Chengjun, you should get along well with Jiang Chen. I think this person isn’t like any ordinary man. You should be able to learn a lot from him,” said Yan Dongliu.

Both the father and daughter had undoubtedly hurt Yuan Chengjun’s pride, causing him to hate Jiang Chen even more. Because of Jiang Chen’s existence, Yan Qingcheng had changed her views on him completely. He could clearly feel the changes on her after Jiang Chen’s arrival.

That damned Jiang Chen, I will get rid of you sooner or later!

Yuan Chengjun gnashed his teeth in his heart.

“Chengjun, practice well.” Yuan Hong said plainly to his son.

“Yes, Uncle Yan and dad,” answered Yuan Chengjun.

The next day, in Huang Family.

In the spacious meeting hall of Huang Family, a dozen dead bodies laid. At the center was Huang Xiong’s corpse, the famous Sixth Master in Yan City. He was now lying there quietly after his neck was cruelly snapped by someone. His death was in agony because he had never closed his eyes even until now. He couldn’t die in peace.

Many people had gathered in the meeting hall, but every one of them was so silent like cicadas in cold weather. Some didn’t even dare to exhale. Standing in front of Huang Xiong’s body were five experts – two Heaven Immortal experts and three half-step Heaven Immortal experts. All of them were the true experts of Huang Family.

The patriarch of Huang Family, Huang Ying, had a face of fury. His chest was moving up and down, like a volcano that was about to explode at any moment. The other four were the blood brothers of Huang Xiong.

“Who did this?” Huang Ying said coldly, so cold that it could freeze an elephant to death.

“Sixth Master’s body was found in Han Village, but all the villagers have already left before we arrived. I heard that they entered the Prefecture. The news from the Prefecture said that the man who killed Sixth Master and the others was an alchemist named Jiang Chen.” A guard of Huang Family said while shivering slightly due to the silence.

Chapter 1083 - Competing for the Ore Mine

“No way. That alchemist was nothing more than a Human Immortal expert. There’s no way that he could possibly kill Sixth Brother.”

Third Master reacted very emotionally. If Huang Xiong was killed by some powerful expert of the Prefecture, he might still be able to accept it, but he would never believe it if Huang Xiong died in the hands of a late Human Immortal expert. All of them knew very well of Huang Xiong’s power. They knew that even if a hundred late Human Immortal experts combined their strength together, they were still no match for Huang Xiong.

“This is as the news said. That Jiang Chen has become the main topic in the Prefecture. All of them said that he is a rare genius. He not only has a terrifying alchemy skill, he also has a horrifying combat strength for killing a late Earth Immortal expert while being only a late Human Immortal. Some said that Jiang Chen used some kind of Forbidden Art in the fight that increased his combat strength by tenfold and killed Sixth Master,” said the guard.

“What? A Forbidden Art that can increase one’s combat power by tenfold? How could there be such a terrifying art in the Heavens and Earth?” Someone exclaimed.

They all knew how difficult it was to raise one’s combat strength. A Forbidden Art that could increase one’s strength by two or threefold was already horrifying and rare. Therefore, it was the first time that they ever heard that a Forbidden Art that could enhance one’s strength by tenfold.

“Father, what happened?”

At this time, a voice echoed across the meeting hall. Later, three figures strode into the hall. The three of them seemed twenty plus years old. Each of them looked handsome, tall and stately. Their

cultivation base were shockingly high. They had all reached the late Earth Immortal realm and weren't any weaker than Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun.

"You are back, Fei Er."

Seeing these three youths, Huang Ying's face revealed a rare smile.

They were Huang Haofer, Huang Haoran and Huang Haoming. They were the three geniuses of Huang Family. The leader was Huang Haofer, the biological son of Huang Ying. The three of them had left Yan City for a tough-training. They had never expect to see such a big incident when they returned.

Looking at Huang Xiong's body, anger was stirred inside of them.

"Who in Yan City had such audacity to kill Sixth Uncle? This is outrageous!"

Huang Haofer cracked his knuckles, releasing his powerful Qi. No one in Huang Family dared to disrespect this Big Young Master.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen's name flowed into their ears when the guard told them everything again from the start. The three of them showed an expression of shock. They were considered rare geniuses in Yan City, but killing a late Earth Immortal expert with only a late Human Immortal realm strength? None of them would dare to believe it.

"I don't believe that such a man exists in the Heavens and Earth. However, if such a man really exists, we have to get rid of him as soon as possible. Otherwise, he'll bring disasters to our family," said Huang Haofer.

"This man is currently hiding in the Prefecture. We have no chance of getting rid of him," said Fourth Master.

"I'll go there and find him now. I will directly challenge him. As long as he dares to fight, I'll make sure that he's eliminated and avenge Sixth Uncle."

Huang Haoran's Qi shook; then he walked towards the exit of the meeting hall.

Sure enough, Huang Haoran did what he said. He ran to the front of the Prefecture in a threatening manner and clamored to challenge Jiang Chen. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen turned a deaf ear to this. After an hour of clamoring outside, he still saw no signs of Jiang Chen.

“Haha! So, this so-called rare genius is just a coward!”

Huang Haoran laughed loudly before he left, but he didn't intend to leave the matter as it was. He would come back tomorrow until Jiang Chen accepted his challenge.

Too bad, Jiang Chen didn't regard his blaring as important at all. Apart from concocting some pills for the Prefecture, he was focusing on refining the soul imprint in his body. It wouldn't be long before he fully refined it. During the refinement, his cultivation base improved. By the time he fully refined it, his cultivation base would break through to the half-step Earth Immortal, making him an even more terrifying cultivator.

On the second day, Huang Haoran continued his routine, clamoring with curses this time, but instead of drawing Jiang Chen out, it drew Yan Qingcheng out.

“Huang Haoran, don't you think it's enough for you to stop cursing outside the Prefecture for so long?” said Yan Qingcheng angrily.

“Yan Qingcheng, this matter is not related to you. Quickly ask that Jiang Chen out to fight me. Tell him not to be a coward. I would like to see how strong he really is. I firmly believe that he doesn't have the strength to kill my Sixth Uncle,” said Huang Haoran relentlessly.

“Sister Qingcheng, Jiang Chen has been hiding inside the Prefecture for so long. Wouldn't this make our Prefecture a

laughing stock to others? This is going to make our Prefecture seem more inferior compared to Huang Family.”

Yuan Chengjun said with a smile, trying to mock that Jiang Chen was a coward for not daring to accept the challenge and humiliating the Prefecture.

“Big Brother Jiang has his own plans.”

Yan Qingcheng glared at Yuan Chengjun and then turned to Huang Haoran. “Huang Haoran, don’t be too arrogant. Others may be afraid of you, but I’m not. Big Brother Jiang is too busy to humor you. If you want a fight, I can be your opponent.”

Yan Qingcheng’s fluctuated her Qi. She strode a few steps forward and unleashed all of her Qi, seemingly ready to fight at any second.

“Good. I would also like to see what means Big Miss has.”

Similarly, Huang Haoran released his Qi, not even having the slightest bit of fear for her.

Hong Long...

It was common for both geniuses to be hostile to each other in an encounter. Both of them launched their attacks at the same time without saying anything more. They started to fight on the spacious square outside the Prefecture. Many passersby were attracted to watch the show, especially those who had been observing the clamoring and cursing of Huang Haoran earlier.

Naturally, more and more people were attracted to watch the intense fight. To the people of Yan City, it wasn’t easy for them to watch the clash between two great geniuses of Huang Family and the Prefecture. It was going to be an exciting show.

However, Jiang Chen’s absence had disappointed them, they were all very eager to see the late Human Immortal who could kill the late Earth Immortal Sixth Master. Putting aside whether Jiang Chen had such strength, his audacity to kill Huang Xiong had

already impressed them all.

“Where on earth did that Jiang Chen come from? I have never heard of such a person before.”

“Haven’t you heard about it yet? He is a genius who was saved by the Han villagers half-way through their journey to Yan City. This man doesn’t only have great skills in alchemy but also incredible combat strength. Even Huang Xiong died in his hands. There is no doubt about this news.”

“I heard that Jiang Chen was only a late Human Immortal expert, but he was able to kill a late Earth Immortal expert despite his low cultivation base. It was truly unbelievable. Too bad, that Jiang Chen has now become a tortoise, shrinking his head and hiding in the Prefecture all the time. Otherwise, we will be able to witness his strength.”

“I don’t think he would dare show up. Huang Haoran is one of the three great geniuses of Huang Family. Not only is his cultivation base high and gifted with talent, his combat strength is also incomparable to any ordinary late Earth Immortal expert. Therefore, Jiang Chen’s fear is justified.”

.....

Many people were discussing about Jiang Chen. His name had already spread across every street and alley in Yan City within a very short period of time. Adding the two days of shouting and clamoring of Huang Haoran outside the Prefecture, it would be hard for any of them not to know who Jiang Chen was. But because Jiang Chen didn’t show himself in this fight, he remained a mystery to them.

Nevertheless, it was still very fruitful to be able to watch the two great geniuses of Yan City fight against each other.

Yan Qingcheng and Huang Haoran fought intensely for half an hour, but it was hard for them to determine the winner. However,

many of them knew that the both of them hadn't used their trump cards yet because they both didn't want to reveal them.

"Yan Qingcheng, go back and tell Jiang Chen that his life will become Huang Family's sooner or later. I, Huang Haoran, will come again tomorrow. If he still chose not to appear, then just let him be a tortoise, shrinking his head all the time."

Huang Haoran said his final words and left.

In the afternoon, the storm between Jiang Chen and Huang Family hadn't subsided yet. A thousand miles of mountain ranges outside Yan City shook all of a sudden. Such shaking naturally aroused the attention of all the major powers in Yan City. The Prefecture and Huang Family were the first to send their experts over to check out what had happened.

Outside the mountain range were Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong, Huang Ying, Huang Second. Four Heaven Immortals had arrived almost at the same time. The situation in front excited them. This area was supposed to be an abandoned wasteland. There were rarely people appearing here, but now, an ore mine emerged after the tremor.

That was right, it was an ore mine which had been hidden beneath the ground.

In the Immortal World, what did the mine represent? It represented infinite wealth. With Yan Dongliu and Huang Ying's eyesight, they could naturally see the great fortune in this mine. Although the grade of the mine wasn't very high, most of the stones were low grade Immortal Meta Stones while the deeper part of the mine contained middle grade Immortal Meta Stones.

Middle grade Immortal Meta Stones were incomparably precious items. One middle grade Immortal Meta Stone had a value of 10,000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. No one could keep their calm while facing such a huge mountain of treasure.

“Never thought that there is still an ore mine like this near Yan City. This ore mine is enough to supply large amounts of low grade Immortal Meta Stones and some middle grade Immortal Meta Stones. If Huang Family could monopolize this ore mine, the strength of our forces will surely improve drastically.”

Huang Second’s eyes shot out two beams of light, as if all of these wealth had already become theirs.

“Huang Family isn’t the only one who discovered the ore mine. Are you thinking of monopolizing the entire mine directly in front of us?” said Yan Dongliu coldly.

Chapter 1084 - Competition

“Yan Dongliu, we arrived here first. To put it bluntly, it’s my Huang Family who discovered this mine. Do you see why I’m eligible to own it now?” Huang Ying said with an arrogant face.

He was crystal clear how valuable this ore mine was. If he could gain full control over the mine, he would make sure that he wouldn’t give the Prefecture a dime of the wealth. If Huang Family could enjoy so much fortune, the overall strength of their forces would surely grow rapidly and it would only be a matter of time before they exceed the position of the Prefecture. Then, they would get rid of this obstacle and become the only ruler in Yan City.

“This is ridiculous. I would say that it was our Prefecture who arrived here first. If you insist on taking full possession of this ore mine, you should try and see whether you can do it.”

Yan Dongliu darted a cold glance at Huang Ying. He had never once dreaded his sworn enemy, Huang Ying. Plus, the cold poison in his body had already been completely removed and he had obtained great benefits from the Ardent Yang Pill, pushing his cultivation base to the peak of early Heaven Immortal realm, leaving him only a step away from mid Heaven Immortal realm. If a fight broke out between them, Huang Ying might not be a match for him.

“Yan Dongliu, don’t say that I didn’t give you any considerations. I’ll give 20 percent of the ore mine to you. This will be the biggest that I can give,” said Huang Ying.

“Haha! 20 percent? This must be a joke. I think it would be nice if you are the one getting the 20 percent.”

Yan Dongliu couldn’t help laughing after hearing Huang Ying’s amusing words. He had to admit that Huang Ying did have a big appetite. Everyone knew that this ore mine had emerged by itself

and the four of them reached here at the same time. It was a joke if Huang Ying claimed that he should get 80 percent of the ore mine.

“Anyone would like to lay their hands on such a great ore mine. This is an unimaginable fortune to Yan City.”

At this time, a voice was heard from behind. Yan Dongliu, Huang Ying and the other two turned to the source of the sound. A man who looked forty-plus-year-old was flying towards them. He had a well-bred disposition and wore a scholar robe, which made him look like a real scholar. The smile on his face could arouse the affection of anyone before him.

“Nie Yiyuan, could it be that Yi Yuan Association has come here to interfere as well?”

Huang Yin’s expression turned grim because the incomer wasn’t a stranger, he was the other overlord of Yan City and the chairman of Yi Yuan Association, Nie Yiyuan.

“Nie Yiyuan, you have your business to take care off and always stayed out of the competition between the two of us. Could it be that you also want a share of this ore mine?”

Yan Dongliu didn’t sound friendly at all. Two major powers were already about to engage in a fight because of this huge fortune, and neither one was yielding to another. It was imaginable what would happen if another major power was added into the picture.

“Hehe! My association has always made a good fortune from business and had never interfered with the fights between you two, but there is so much wealth here. Naturally, Yi Yuan Association must get a portion of it. I do have a proposition. Are you two interested to hear it?” Nie Yiyuan chuckled and said.

Although he was dressed like a scholar, there was a hint of cunningness in his smile.

“What do you propose?” asked Huang Ying.

“I can see that both of you want to monopolize the mine and is

unwilling to give a portion of it to the other. Why not the two of you have some kind of a competition and I will be the judge for that competition. Whoever wins will get 80 percent share of the mine whereas the one who loses will get nothing. The remaining 20 percent will be given to my Yi Yuan Association.” Nie Yiyuan said.

From this proposition, it wasn’t difficult to see that Nie Yiyuan was a cunning and crafty person.

One should know that Yi Yuan Association had never interfered in the fights between the Prefecture and Huang Family. If it wasn’t because of the preciousness of this ore mine, he certainly wouldn’t make his way to this place.

This proposition didn’t have any disadvantages to Yi Yuan Association at all, instead, it allowed them earn 20 percent share of the ore mine for no reason. Furthermore, this idea gave the two major powers the solution. Nie Yiyuan knew that both Yan Dongliu and Huang Ying would never let go of the ore mine and would certainly end up entangled in endless conflicts. Therefore, he figured out that they should have a formal competition to decide who would get the 80 percent and who would get nothing.

The conflicts between the Prefecture and Huang Family had already been going on for a long time and there had been numerous fights and battles between them. So, despite knowing that Nie Yiyuan had a hidden agenda in such proposition, neither of them could say no to it to avoid the ridicule of the other party. This was the pride that they couldn’t afford to lose.

More importantly, if they won the 80 percent share of the mine, they would rather let Yi Yuan Association get the 20 percent than letting their sworn enemy get it.

“Nie Yiyuan, what kind of competition are you talking about?” asked Yan Dongliu.

“It’s very simple. You’ll get two geniuses as representatives in the

competition. You have to find the genius that has the potential to become the idol of all young geniuses. If the two of you fought each other, I suppose I don't have to talk much about your strengths, you two can go on for three days and nights and would still be in a draw. That will be pointless. But if we let the geniuses fight, it will be more meaningful." Nie Yiyuan said with a smile.

The most important thing to a businessmen was opportunities and a shrewd mind. He anticipated that Yan Dongliu and Huang Ying would never decline his offer. As long as both major powers decided to compete, he would surely have the 20 percent in his hand.

"So be it. I heard that Prefecture's Big Miss is talented and beautiful, but I wonder whether she would dare to have a match with my son."

Huang Ying looked over at Yan Dongliu with a sneer. He was extremely confident in his son, Huang Haoifei, who had already reached the peak of Earth Immortal realm at a very young age. Furthermore, his son had improved tremendously after the tough-training, and was only a step away from half-step Heaven Immortal realm.

"Humph! My daughter will be afraid of your son?" Yan Dongliu harrumphed.

"Two overlords. There isn't any point in fighting a single match. In my opinion, let's have a best-of-three-match. Send your greatest genius to fight. Isn't this a better solution?" suggested Nie Yiyuan.

As one of the major powers in Yan City, he was keen enough to know how powerful the geniuses of the Prefecture and Huang Family were.

"Alright then, let's have a best-of-three-match."

Huang Ying agreed almost immediately without having a moment of hesitation. He suddenly felt that Nie Yiyuan was

pleasing to his eyes. Such a battle would certainly benefit their family very much.

In Yan City, everyone knew the three Huang males: Huang Haoifei, Huang Haoran and Huang Haoming, the three geniuses of Huang Family. On the contrary, the Prefecture only had Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun and the newcomer, Jiang Chen who recently rose to fame.

Thinking about Jiang Chen, it made Huang Ying couldn't help but remember the tragic death of Huang Xiong and the others. These past two days, Huang Haoran had been clamoring outside the Prefecture, but Jiang Chen had been shrinking his head like a tortoise and didn't dare accept the challenge. This might indicate that Jiang Chen was no match for Huang Haoran. In other words, if Jiang Chen could be drawn out to the battlefield, they would certainly make sure to take their revenge on that young man.

"So how? Does Brother Yan have the courage to compete? However, I remember that you don't have three geniuses in your Prefecture. It's such a pity," said Huang Ying in a strange way.

"Humph! Best of three match? So be it! Our Prefecture will never fear your family no matter what happen."

Yan Dongliu let out a cold humph. Being a man who cherished his reputation, he couldn't afford to lose to his opponent in terms of spirit.

"Good. Then we have a deal. The time will be set tomorrow at this mine. If you lose, 80 percent share of the ore mine will belong to my Huang Family and Yi Yuan Association will have the remaining share."

Huang Ying gave out two laughs, then left with Huang Second, followed by Nie Yiyuan who seemed pleased that he had secured his 20 percent regardless of who the winner or loser was.

"Brother Yan, why did you agree to such battle? Our Prefecture

only has two young geniuses, but Huang Family has three. All three of them are powerful geniuses. This battle isn't going to be in our favor."

Yuan Hong said, knitting his eyebrows, feeling that Yan Dongliu shouldn't have accepted the offer.

"If I didn't agree to it, didn't that mean that I was lowering my head before Huang Ying? There's no big deal about the best-of-three-match. Didn't Jiang Chen kill a late Earth Immortal expert? Even Huang Xiong was killed by him. He must have means to deal with those geniuses," said Yan Dongliu.

The only one he could think of right now was Jiang Chen.

"However, Huang Haoifei and the other two cannot be compared to Huang Xiong. That Huang Haoran had been clamoring outside the Prefecture for two days straight, but Jiang Chen didn't even dare to step out of the Prefecture and confront him. This is a typical move when a person was afraid. I don't think we can place our hopes on Jiang Chen," said Yuan Hong.

In fact, it was not only him who was disappointed by Jiang Chen's response within these past two days, the others also felt the same way.

"Then pray that Qingcheng and Chengjun will win the two battles." Yan Dongliu said flatly, and flew away.

In the Prefecture, in the courtyard where Jiang Chen resided, he was still in seclusion, refining the soul imprint in his body. He would need at most one more day to fully refine it. By that time, he would have no problem advancing to the half-step Earth Immortal realm.

Yan Dongliu came to Jiang Chen's courtyard in person to find him, causing him to quickly recover from his meditative state.

"City Lord, is there anything that Jiang Chen can help you with?"

“That day I haven’t thanked Alchemist Jiang for curing my injuries. Alchemist Jiang not only has great concoction technique, but also incredible combat strength. It is truly unbelievable to hear that Alchemist Jiang was able to kill the late Earth Immortal Huang Xiong with a mere cultivation base of late Human Immortal realm.”

Yan Dongliu complimented Jiang Chen the moment he saw him, and these words came right from the bottom of his heart.

Chapter 1085 - Going to a Battle

“City Lord will never come if it wasn’t something important. Tell Jiang Chen whatever you want to tell Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He knew very well that Yan Dongliu would never come and find him unless there was something very important that needed his favor.

“Alchemist Jiang is truly a forthright man. In that case, I will go straight to the point. The thing is this...”

Yan Dongliu wasn’t a man who liked to beat around the bush. Immediately, he told Jiang Chen everything regarding the ore mine outside Yan City. The most important part was naturally the battle between the Prefecture and Huang Family.

“City Lord was thinking of letting me become one of the representatives of the Prefecture, right?”

Jiang Chen was smart enough to guess the City Lord’s intention. He was exhilarated by the emergence of the ore mine. As he had just arrived in this world, he had enormous needs for Immortal Meta Stones.

There was a saying that says ‘we know ourselves better than anyone’. A long time ago, he had witnessed the scariness of his dragon transformation skill and he knew that the further it advanced, the greater the amount of energy it needed to consume. Therefore, there wouldn’t be a limit as to how much Immortal Meta Stones he needed.

“That’s right. There will be a best-of-three-match. There are three geniuses of Huang Family who are known as the three Huang’s males. They are very powerful, especially the one named Huang Haoifei. All three of them had reached the late Earth Immortal realm. In our Prefecture, we only have Yuan Chengjun besides Qingcheng. There isn’t a third genius in our Prefecture.

Although Alchemist Jiang is merely a young late Human Immortal expert, Alchemist Jiang has an amazing talent that even the late Earth Immortal Huang Xiong died under Alchemist Jiang's hand. There is no one else that we can send except for Alchemist Jiang," said Yan Dongliu.

"Oh?"

Jiang Chen frowned and looked slightly awkward, but felt incomparably delighted in his heart because this was an opportunity that knocked on his door. He definitely wouldn't miss it.

"Alchemist Jiang doesn't have to be too worried. Chengjun and Qingchen will be sent to the first and second match. As long as two of them win these two matches, Alchemist Jiang will never have to fight the third match. I promise that I will provide Alchemist Jiang some rewards if Alchemist Jiang agrees to take part in this battle."

Yan Dongliu thought that Jiang Chen's awkward expression was because of fear. He found that common because no matter how powerful Jiang Chen was, he was merely a late Human Immortal, he wasn't even a half-step Earth Immortal yet.

Although he could kill Huang Xiong, he must have known that Huang Xiong wasn't comparable to a genius like Huang Haoifei. If it wasn't because of his fear, he wouldn't have hidden himself in the Prefecture, allowing Huang Haoran to curse outside the Prefecture for two days straight.

"Since City Lord has said so, I will surely not refuse it. But there are some things that I have to say first. If Yuan Chengjun and Miss Qingcheng are able to win the first two matches, I naturally don't have to fight the third match and won't demand any rewards, but if any of them lose one match and I win the third match, I would want 20 percent of the ore mine," said Jiang Chen.

"What?"

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, Yan Dongliu almost exclaimed. Jiang Chen must have an enormous appetite for wanting such a large share of the mine.

“City Lord can take time to consider it. If it’s possible, I will accept the offer,” said Jiang Chen with a smile. At this point, he wouldn’t need to be courteous anymore.

Yan Dongliu pondered over it for a moment and said, “Alright. As long as Alchemist Jiang is could help the Prefecture to claim the ore mine, I will give you 20 percent of it.”

Yan Dongliu was an astute person. When he recovered his senses, he found that Jiang Chen’s condition wasn’t excessive because this would only happen when Jiang Chen fought the last match. If either Qingcheng or Yuan Chengjun lost one match, they must win the third match. Otherwise, the entire mine would belong to Huang Family and the Prefecture would get nothing.

If Jiang Chen could ensure the victory of the third match, they would still get 60 percent after giving Jiang Chen the 20 percent, which was a whole lot better than getting nothing. More importantly, he didn’t hold much hope for Jiang Chen as Jiang Chen’s cultivation base was just too weak. And if Jiang Chen could really defeat Huang Haoran, he would be the rarest genius of the geniuses, which would make it worthwhile for the Prefecture to share a portion of its fortune and build a good rapport with this man. Because of the infinite achievements that Jiang Chen would have in the future, there were only benefits in befriending him.

“When will the fight be held?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Tomorrow, just above the mine,” replied Yan Dongliu.

“En, no problem.” Jiang Chen said and smiled.

In any kind of situation, Jiang Chen’s smile always had confidence that it made Yan Dongliu wonder where he got those confidence from. This kind of confidence would indirectly affect

the others around him every time, making the others feel hopeful.

When Yan Dongliu left, Jiang Chen continued refining the soul imprint. He knew his own strength very well. Even though the three Huang's males was stronger than Huang Xiong, he wasn't scared. Putting aside whether he could advance to the half-step Earth Immortal tomorrow, his trump card was enough to defeat any one of them even without him advancing.

Early in the next morning.

The higher ups of the Prefecture had gathered outside the large gate of the compound. There were a dozen of them and they were incomparably strong. Besides Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun who were late Earth Immortal experts, the others were half-step Heaven Immortal experts. Today's competition against Huang Family was no doubt a big event. This event wasn't only about the Immortal Meta Stones, but also about the geniuses. Any side who lost this competition was bound to receive a serious blow in their morale.

Jiang Chen, who was dressed in a white robe, leisurely walked out of the Prefecture.

"Humph! How could we let a late Human Immortal take part in such a big event? This will make our Prefecture a laughing stock. It's embarrassing to be in a team with him." Displeased by Jiang Chen's presence, Yuan Chengjun said sarcastically.

"Why does Big Brother Yuan keep on picking on Big Brother Jiang? Although Big Brother Jiang is only a late Human Immortal, he personally took down Huang Xiong. Are you implying that this kind of strength isn't enough to fight for the Prefecture?" Yan Qingcheng retorted, dissatisfied.

"Chengjun, Qingchen's right. Besides, we don't have any other geniuses in the Prefecture. The main player of this competition will be the two of you. As long as you can win the first two fights, Alchemist Jiang won't have to fight the third match." Yuan Hong

said.

Yan Dongliu shook his head but remained silent. He had known that Yuan Chengjun was attracted to his daughter long ago, however, his daughter was more interested in Jiang Chen. Therefore, it was common that Yuan Chengjun would have preconceived views on Jiang Chen. Nevertheless, he would never interfere in the relationship of the youngsters.

Under the lead of Yan Dongliu, a group of experts flew towards the ore mine swiftly. Regarding the matter of allowing Jiang Chen to take part in the fight, no one present had an opinion about it because they knew the situation of the Prefecture. It would be impossible for them to find a third candidate besides Jiang Chen. Furthermore, having witnessed his marvelous technique, they knew Jiang Chen was a very powerful alchemist. Despite being half-step Heaven Immortal experts, they wouldn't offend a powerful alchemist for no reason. On the other hand, it would benefit them more if they befriended Jiang Chen.

Huang Family and Yi Yuan Association were already on the scene when they arrived. This would be regarded as a grand meeting of the three major powers. All of the major powers had basically brought all of their higher ups along, which was unprecedented in the history.

The three Huang males had a confident face. They were the three candidates of Huang Family.

Upon the Prefecture's arrival, the two major powers turned towards them. Their gazes naturally fell upon the young geniuses of the Prefecture. They all knew that Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun would represent the Prefecture, so the real center of attention was Jiang Chen.

None of them needed an introduction about Jiang Chen. Almost all of them knew this newly-arrived alchemist very well after his name rose to fame a few days ago.

“This man is Jiang Chen?”

Huang Haoran’s gaze fell onto Jiang Chen like a blade without concealing his killing intent. Having failed to see Jiang Chen in person despite clamoring outside the Prefecture for two days straight, it was impossible for him not to feel annoyed right now.

“Dad, sure enough, Yan Dongliu has let Jiang Chen participate in the fight. We will take this chance to avenge Sixth Uncle’s death. We will kill him no matter what, to root out the seed of disaster.” Huang Haoifei said in an incomparably cold tone.

“Let me deal with him. Brother Fei, Brother Ming, you two will fight first. I promise that I will take this Jiang Chen’s life if we fought,” said Huang Haoran confidently.

“Alright. Among three of us, Brother Fei is the strongest, but is hardest to get along with. The Prefecture would not have thought that Haoran will take the last match. This time, not only will we eliminate Jiang Chen, we will also get 80 percent of the ore mine. It’s time for our Huang Family to establish prestige.”

“Brother Yan, the representatives for Huang Family this time will be Huang Haoifei, Huang Haoming and Huang Haoran. I wonder if your Prefecture has chosen the candidates to fight.” Nie Yiyuan said with a smile.

“Of course. Yuan Chengjun, Yan Qingcheng, Jiang Chen. The three of them will represent the Prefecture in this fight,” said Yan Dongliu.

“Haha! Sure enough, the Prefecture is short of geniuses. It must be a very tough choice to let a late Human Immortal fight.”

Huang Ying laughed delightfully, not missing the chance to mock Yan Dongliu.

“The patriarch of Huang Family is truly a hero. I’m impressed that you can still smile so happily even after your blood brother’s death,” said Jiang Chen indifferently. Nevertheless, it sent an

enormous blow to Huang Ying's sensitive spot. His smile hardened into a murderous look, glaring at Jiang Chen.

“Brat, you should've continued to be the cowardly tortoise. Today's certainly going to be the day you die. You will only face one outcome after killing the people of Huang Family. I'll let you taste it in a while.” Huang Ying said while grinding his teeth.

Chapter 1086 - An Intentional Act

Regarding the threat of Huang Ying, Jiang Chen completely ignored it with a smile. Since he had decided to kill the experts of Huang Family, he wasn't afraid of their retaliation. As a matter of fact, he didn't even put the Huang Family in his eyes at all. A mere major power in Yan City like them wasn't qualified to oppose him.

“Good. Since everyone's here and the candidates are all chosen, let's begin.”

Said Nie Yiyuan. “Brother Yan, brother Huang, who will be fight the first match?”

“Ah Fei, you will take the first match.” Said Huang Ying.

“Yes, dad.”

Huang Haofei's Qi shook. He flew directly to the spacious area ahead and stared at the three representatives of the Prefecture arrogantly.

“Brother Huang has sent Huang Haofei in the first match. It seems like this match is going to be a sure-win for Huang Family.” Nie Yiyuan smiled.

“Cut the crap. Which one of you is coming out to fight me?” Huang Haofei clamored proudly at the three of them.

“Brother Yan, Huang Haofei is the strongest genius among the three. Who do you think should go first? Should it be Chengjun or Qingcheng?”

Yuan Hong asked. This battle was very disadvantageous to the Prefecture. In their eyes, they only had two chances of winning. Jiang Chen would never be in their consideration because he was just here to fill in the numbers in this competition. Now that Huang Family had sent their strongest genius, Huang Haofei, it indicated that this ore mine was going to be Huang Family's soon.

“Chengjun, I see that you have obtained great benefits from the tough-training outside, pushing your cultivation base to the peak of late Earth Immortal realm, which isn’t any weaker than Huang Haoifei. Therefore, would you fight this battle for us?” Yan Dongliu looked over at Yuan Chengjun.

“Don’t worry Uncle Yan, I will not let you down.”

Yuan Chengjun strode towards the battlefield with an unusual bearing, standing opposite of Huang Haoifei. No one in the Prefecture’s group had any opinion of letting Yuan Chengjun be the first contestant. In their point of view, although Yan Qingcheng had an extraordinary talent, she hadn’t had any external experiences. She had been managing the matters of the Prefecture all these while which was disadvantageous to her, all of the three Huang geniuses had gone out for training and had gained tremendous benefits out there. Judging from the surface, Yuan Chengjun wouldn’t be any weaker than Huang Haoifei. Although that didn’t mean that he could defeat Huang Haoifei, there was still a glimmer of hope that he could.

Unnoticeably, the moment Yuan Chengjun went into the battlefield, he darted a cold glance at Jiang Chen. The others might not be able to notice this, but Jiang Chen was crystal clear about it. This made him couldn’t help but frown. In fact, he had been suspecting that something wasn’t right with this first contestant.

All of a sudden, both of them unleashed their Qi, turning everyone’s expression grim. Everyone knew that this battle would decide the future trend of Yan City. Any major power that could get such a huge ore mine would certainly outgrow the other major power in a very short period of time, and thus changing the history of Yan City.

There weren’t any extra words. They had been old adversary since young, having fights with one another during normal days. The Qi that they unleashed spilled out like tidal waves. Both of their fists was coated with a golden light before launching forth at

extreme speed.

Bang!

Both knuckles connected, producing a clanging sound, like metals had collided against each other and made a huge spark. This was a direct collision with the most destructive force. Both of them took one step back due to the shockwave.

“They are indeed strong. They are worthy to be called geniuses amongst the young generation. Despite having only a late Earth Immortal cultivation base, their combat power is already equivalent to ours, half-step Heaven Immortal realm.”

“En, their future it definitely going to be immeasurable.”

.....

Many people praised and nodded. They had to admit that these two were the true geniuses who always had unparalleled advantage over ordinary cultivators.

Bang Bang Bang.....

Subsequently, both men struck with all their skills. In just a few minutes, they already had exchanged hundred rounds in battle. The surrounding mountains crumbled and Qi waves rolled through the area, but it was still hard determine the victor.

“Ah Fei, don’t waste anymore time.” Huang Ying said grimly.

“Yes, dad.”

Huang Haoifei fluctuated his Qi and darted a cold and scornful look at Yuan Chengjun, but his eyes contained a hint of a strange aura. Others might not be able to notice this, but Jiang Chen could.

“Yuan Chengjun, take my Aquatic Dragon of Abyss!”

Huang Haoran suddenly burst into roar. The images of strands of aquatic dragon was forming on the surface of his body. After that, a silvery white aquatic dragon was condensed out by him. It was a lifelike aquatic dragon with a ten meter size. It instantly locked

onto Yuan Chengjun the moment it appeared.

“Not good.”

Yan Dongliu knew that it was going to be bad for Yuan Chengjun. He had never thought that Huang Haoifei had such a trump card. Whether it was the damage or destructive power, it had exceeded his expectations. He was afraid that Yuan Chengjun wouldn't be able to withstand it.

“The Plough's Attack!”

Yuan Chengjun refused to show his weakness, and immediately struck out his own trump card. All his strikes were condensed into a huge golden fist, causing tremor in the void as it came crashing against the aquatic dragon.

Hong Long.....

It was an ultimate duel of both great geniuses. Both of them used their trump cards. Everyone was gaping at the scene. They knew that victory and defeat would be decided after this collision. Therefore, none of them wasn't anxious about it.

Bang!

Under the attack of the dragon, Yuan Changjun's attack was instantly shattered. Then, the dragon rushed forward, crashing onto Yuan Chengjun's body, sending him away from the scene.

Barf!

Yuan Chengjun spurted out a mouthful of blood, looking pale and badly injured.

“How is it, Chengjun?”

Yuan Hong hurried over to grab his son, asked in a worried tone.

“Very powerful attack. I'm sorry Uncle Yan.”

Yuan Chengjun shook his head and apologized to Yan Dongliu.

“Haha! This is just how strong Yuan Chengjun is!”

Huang Haoifei burst into a laughter and walked arrogantly back to Huang Family's squad.

Every one of their faces darkened after Yuan Chengjun's defeat. They had lost the first battle and Yuan Chengjun was their strongest genius. How were they going to continue the battle? Even if Yan Qingcheng won the next fight, what about Jiang Chen? They certainly didn't have much confidence in Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen glanced coldly at Yuan Chengjun. The defeat seemed perfect and reasonable. Everyone, including Yan Dongliu saw that Yuan Chengjun used all his might in the fight. However, the cunning trick of the duo couldn't escape Jiang Chen's eyes.

He was able to see it clearly that Yuan Chengjun didn't exert all of his power in that last attack. Although his Qi might indicate that, if he exerted all of his power in that last attack, even if he couldn't defeat Huang Haoifei, he wouldn't be defeated so quickly. All these conspiracy was targeted towards Jiang Chen. In order to get rid of Jiang Chen, Yuan Chengjun had gambled the future of the Prefecture, perhaps he had already lost his loyalty to the Prefecture.

"Haha! Brother Yan, I feel sorry for you. It seems like Huang Family is going to get the ore mine today."

Huang Ying laughed loudly. His current mood could be described as incomparably delighted. There was no way that he wouldn't be happy imagining about getting the ore mine soon.

Chapter 1087 - half-step Earth Immortal

“Dammit! What has this Huang Haoifei gotten during his tough-training? His attack was terrifying. We have lost a match. It seems like we are in a critical situation.”

“That’s right. Huang Haoran and Huang Haoming won’t be easy to deal with. Even if Big Miss won the second match, Jiang Chen will still need to fight the third match. Ai!”

“If we lose the competition today, Huang Family will get the majority of the share of the ore mine and their overall strength will soon supersede the position of the Prefecture, which will be very bad for us.”

.....

For a moment, the hearts of the top echelons of the Prefecture sank. The first defeat had severely dampened their morale, causing all of them to lose hope for the upcoming battles. They probably had some confidence in Yan Qingcheng, but as for Jiang Chen, they had none.

“I’m sorry, brother Yan.” Said Yuan Hong shaking his head.

“Victory and defeat are very common in battles. Brother Yuan shouldn’t put the blame on yourself. Besides, we haven’t lost yet.”

Yan Dongliu said with a smile, but it seemed like it was forced.

“Don’t worry City Lord. Miss Qingcheng will surely win the second match. Perhaps the opponent will surrender right away.” Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Why did Big Brother Jiang said so?”

Yan Qingcheng looked over at Jiang Chen with a slight surprise. The others also felt the same way. One should know that these were important battles. These battles would decide who would monopolize the ore mine. As long as Huang Family weren’t idiots,

neither of them would yield for no reason.

“Very simple. It’s because I have killed Huang Xiong and the others. Today is the best time for them to seek revenge on me. If they win the second match, I won’t be required to fight the third match and they will lose the chance of killing me.” Said Jiang Chen.

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, all the seniors nodded in agreement, but they still didn’t believe that Huang Family would surrender the second match. What baffled them was that Jiang Chen had been so composed since the very beginning. There wasn’t a single sign of nervousness on his face. They wondered where this young man got his confidence from.

“Well, let me announce. In the first battle, Huang Family won. Without delaying any further, we’ll begin the second match.” Nie Yiyuan announced loudly.

Huang Family would send Huang Haoming for the second match and reserved Huang Haoran for the last match. Huang Ying and Huang Haoming exchanged a glance and nodded with a slight smile. Then, he raced towards the battlefield.

Yan Qingcheng took a deep breath and went into the battlefield. This battle was a critical, she wouldn’t dare neglect it.

Unexpectedly, before Yan Qingcheng could prepare for the battle, Huang Haoran blurted. “I surrender.”

After finishing his words, he went back to his original position in Huang Family’s camp without looking back.

Yan Qingchen was dumbfounded, then turned to look at Jiang Chen in awe. Everyone in the camp of the Prefecture also zeroed in on him. However, this incident wasn’t too surprising for the others, Jiang Chen had killed Huang Xiong. They had no doubt that Huang Family would do anything to eliminate him. Since Huang Family had already won the first match, they just need

another victory to win the ore mine.

In many people's point of view, Jiang Chen was far from competent enough and was definitely no match for Huang Haoran. Therefore, it was reasonable for the Huang Family to make such decision, with this, they could take revenge on Jiang Chen as well as monopolize the ore mountain.

"I didn't think that Huang Family will surrender this match. It had truly caught many people off guard. Now that both the Prefecture and Huang Family had one victory each, this third match will be the most important match. The third match, Jiang Chen of the Prefecture will fight against Huang Haoran of Huang Family."

Nie Yiyuan announced loudly.

Huang Haoran strode into the battlefield, exposing his murderous intent.

Everyone in the Prefecture's side was tensed, including Yan Dongliu. None of them had placed their hopes on Jiang Chen from the very beginning, but now, all of their hopes had fallen onto Jiang Chen's shoulders whether they liked it or not. If Jiang Chen failed, the Prefecture would lose everything.

"Big Brother Jiang, are you sure?"

Yan Qingcheng stared at Jiang Chen with her beautiful eyes.

Jiang Chen smiled but didn't say anything, then turned to Yan Dongliu.

"City Lord, don't forget about our agreement earlier." Said Jiang Chen.

"Don't worry Alchemist Jiang. As long as you win this match, I will give you 20 percent of the mine ore."

Yan Dongliu said. He had never agreed with something so quickly. As far as their present situation was concerned, he

wouldn't hesitate even if Jiang Chen demanded half of the mine ore. Although 20 percent of the mine was an enormous fortune, no one felt that Jiang Chen was opening the maw of a lion because many of them had already lost hope on obtaining the ore mine.

Later, Jiang Chen walked composedly towards the battlefield, standing across Huang Haoran.

"Jiang Chen, we meet at last." Said Huang Haoran coldly.

"Too bad, this is your misfortune." Said Jiang Chen plainly.

"Haha! Jiang Chen, I have never thought that you are so arrogant. You killed my Sixth Uncle. Today, I won't give you the chance to surrender. I'll make sure that you'll die unburied here."

Huang Haoran laughed loudly. He was incomparably confident in his own strength, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes. In his point of view, Jiang Chen was already a dead man the moment he decided to stand in front of him.

"Cut the nonsense. Didn't you want to fight me? Go ahead and do it."

Jiang Chen put his arms behind his back and said disdainfully. Such disdainful eyes had undoubtedly stung Huang Haoran's pride. He was one of the first-class geniuses in Yan City. How could he bear such a scornful treatment from a late Human Immortal?

"Haoran, don't waste anymore time talking with him. Kill him now."

Huang Haoifei prompted from behind.

"Humph!"

Huang Haoran harrumphed coldly. A strong wave of Qi burst out from his body, turning into a hurricane that rolled like countless of blades, rushing towards Jiang Chen.

The people of the Prefecture got nervous. Huang Haoran's combat strength didn't seem to be any weaker than Huang Haoifei.

Jiang Chen was merely a late Human Immortal, how could he fight such a fierce attack?

However, Jiang Chen's expression remained indifferent while facing Huang Haoran's powerful attack. Just when his opponent's attack was about to hit him, he unleashed all of his Qi. At the same time, his body began to transform, turning into a half-dragon, half-human. Facing a genius like Huang Haoran, he needed to transform in order to fight him.

Similarly, a gust of Qi waves erupted out of his body and crashed against Huang Haoran's Qi.

Hong Long.....

Two angry gusts of Qi waves set off like a hurricane. Under the strong impact, Huang Haoran's attack was instantly shattered. The powerful force of the backlash pushed Huang Haoran a few steps back. His facial expression turned incomparably unpleasant.

“What?”

Everyone on the scene exclaimed, none of them would dare to believe that this was happening, however, it exhilarated everyone in the Prefecture's side. No one had thought that Jiang Chen would be this powerful.

“Haha! This is great. I have never thought that Alchemist Jiang has already advanced to the half-step Earth Immortal. No wonder he's so powerful. He was able to kill Huang Xiong when he was just a late Human Immortal. Now that he has advanced to such a level, Huang Haoran would certainly be no match for him.”

“The scariest thing is his transformation technique. It seems like this was the Forbidden Art that Big Miss was talking about. But I hadn't imagined that this technique wouldn't have a side effect on him even after he used it to fight Huang Xiong.”

“He was able to shove a genius like Huang Haoran back despite him only having a half-step Earth Immortal cultivation base. Jiang

Chen’s truly a monstrous genius.”

.....

Chapter 1088 - What's the Big Deal about Flying?

No one would ever think that Jiang Chen would bring such a big surprise to the Prefecture. More importantly, none of them had seen such a heaven defying person. They were clueless why a genius such as him would emerge in a small place like Yan City. A genius like him should only exist in those major powers in One-Line-Sky where he would receive greater resources and be nurtured.

“This showed why Alchemist Jiang was confident even before the fight. It was unprecedented to have a genius like him. There will be no limit to his future. Befriending him would only bring boundless benefits to the Prefecture.”

Said Yan Dongliu, admiring Jiang Chen's talent. Even though Jiang Chen had the ability to kill Huang Xiong, he had never seen it with his own eyes, but after witnessing Jiang Chen's strength today, he could only describe it as shocking.

Then, he couldn't help but dart a few glances at Yan Qingcheng. It seemed like her daughter did have a sharp eyesight.

“Dammit! Why is this guy so powerful? Even if he has advanced to half-step Earth Immortal...but this is just too much.”

Yuan Chengjun gritted his teeth. He wanted to get rid of Jiang Chen from the very start, but he had never thought that his target would be so strong.

Oppose to the excitement in the Prefecture's side, every Huang Family's expert's face darkened. They initially thought that Huang Haoran could take down Jiang Chen with just one strike. Now, it seemed like they had completely underestimated Jiang Chen. They had no idea where this monstrous genius who could jump a few levels came from.

“His Forbidden Art is indeed very powerful. It can increase his combat strength by so much.”

Huang Haofer's face was full of disbelief.

It seems like Haoran is the right person for this battle. This man's combat strength is too powerful. I'm afraid that neither of the trio can fight this man. Fortunately, Haoran has the scariest trump card of all. Once this card is used, Jiang Chen won't be able to resist it.

Huang Ying spoke in his mind. This was a scene that he had never imagined, however, he knew Huang Haoran's true trump card. Jiang Chen's power wasn't a concern anymore, the final winner would be Huang Haoran and the ore mine would be theirs.

All the experts of Yi Yuan Association began to pay attention to Jiang Chen. It was hard for a great alchemist with terrifying combat strength not to draw attention to himself.

In the field, Jiang Chen was standing as composed as before, looking at Huang Haoran with interest. He had already completely refined the soul imprint in his body last night, pushing his level to the half-step Earth Immortal realm. With his current strength, he could easily kill any intermediate Earth Immortal and also late Earth Immortal with a full-fledged attack. With his dragon transformation, he could even fight a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. No matter how powerful Huang Haoran was, his combat strength would only be equivalent to a half-step Heaven Immortal. So naturally, Jiang Chen wouldn't put him in his eyes.

Huang Haoran readjusted his Qi and perished all his underestimations of Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you have truly surprised me by knocking me off with just a half-step Earth Immortal cultivation base. However, that strike was just a probing attack. What happens next will be your end.” Said Huang Haoran with a face full of killing intent.

Roar!

Jiang Chen didn't bother to reason with him. He struck out a golden dragon with roars that shook the entire valley. It moved like a golden dragon sword, appearing in front of his opponent in a blink.

Huang Haoran's facial expression instantly changed. He could feel a great force of destruction from the golden dragon. Immediately, he launched the signature technique of Huang Family – Overturning Heavenly Palm.

Countless of golden palm seals emerged, blotting out the sky and lunging at the golden dragon.

Bang.....

Too bad, such an attack was simply too vulnerable in front of the Golden Dragon Seal. All the palm seals were swiftly destroyed. The entire process was like tearing away a withered stump. Huang Haoran was shoved back once more. This time, he looked much worse.

“Can't even withstand a blow.”

Jiang Chen shook his head and thrust once more at maximum speed. He appeared before Huang Haoran in a blink, lunging his scary dragon claw at Huang haoran. He launched a killing strike to avoid wasting any more time. He knew that the scores between him and the Huang Family would never end. They were destined to become the enemy to each other. Therefore, he didn't even contemplate before he struck.

Huang Haoran wasn't any slower to react. Just when Jiang Chen's attack was about to reach him, he flew skywards, hovering in the sky, leaving Jiang Chen grabbing air.

“Oh? This is interesting.”

Jiang Chen kept his attack and couldn't help but reveal a hint of a mocking smile. It seemed like this was the true trump card of

Huang Haoran. No one would think that an expert below Heaven Immortal realm could fly. Thus, such a trump card was definitely not an ordinary one.

A pair of blue sparkling and fluttering wings on his back made him look very divine.

“What? How did he fly?”

“Any expert below Heaven Immortal realm could never borrow the spatial current to fly. Huang Haoran has acquired some kind of flying ability. He has tremendous luck to have that pair of sparkling wings. Such an ability is extremely rare and precious.”

“It seems like this is his real trump card. This isn’t good. Even though Jiang Chen has incredible combat power and can suppress Huang Haoran, he can’t fly which makes it impossible for him to attack Huang Haoran, whereas Huang Haoran would have no problem attacking him from above. He’s going to be invincible. At this rate, Jiang Chen’s going to be defeated for sure.”

.....

Everyone called out in alarm. A flying Earth Immortal expert had the advantage beyond all Earth Immortals. By hovering in the sky, he would be considered invincible. So how could this battle continue? Even if Jiang Chen had a greater ability, he wouldn’t be able to defeat Huang Haoran.

“So what if you have a terrifying combat strength? The end result would still be the same.”

Huang Ying had a sneering face and did not lower his voice this time. In many people’s point of view, there was an unfair advantage for the one who could fly versus the one who didn’t. Jiang Chen wouldn’t stand a chance against Huang Haoran.

All the ignited hope in the Prefecture’s side was extinguished once more. Although they had already anticipated Huang Haoran to have plenty of trump cards, they didn’t expect that flying would

be one. In this case, Jiang Chen could never win.

“Jiang Chen, aren’t you a very strong genius? Now, you can’t even attack me. What qualifications do you have to fight me?”

Huang Haoran was looking down on his opponent, like he was disdaining all living beings on earth. To an Earth Immortal expert, the ability to fly was too wonderful. He certainly enjoyed the feeling of being in the air.

“What’s so great about flying?”

Jiang Chen sneered. A pair of Flaming Wings sprouted out on his back, launching him up to the sky like a rocket, and appeared near Huang Haoran in a blink. Initially, he wanted to use his dragon wings instead of the Flaming Wings.

However, that would expose his dragon form and he didn’t want that to happen. Besides, the Flaming Wings could work better.

“How is this possible?”

The proud Huang Haoran changed his facial expression drastically. The sparkling wings behind his back swayed, almost causing him to fall to the ground. This was supposed to be his advantage, but it was now taken away by a half-step Earth Immortal. How could he possibly accept this?

Chapter 1089 - Betrayal

Whish!

At this point, everyone was shocked. All their eyes were fixed at the sky above. Many of Huang Family's experts who were smiling a moment ago had their faces paralyzed. In the Immortal World, only those who had reached the Heaven Immortal realm could borrow the spatial current to travel in the air. No cultivator below this level would have the ability to fly. Huang Haoran must have acquired some kind of rare ability to be able to hover in the air temporarily. But what blew their minds more was that Jiang Chen could fly as well, and his speed seemed a lot faster than Huang Haoran and his wings were much more attractive compared to Huang Haoran's.

"Like I've said, flying isn't a big deal."

Jiang Chen grinned at his opponent, then attacked with the Heavenly Saint Sword. This slash moved as fast as lightning and it was sharp and dazzling like a light that had just flashed by, leaving a trail of fading brilliance behind.

"Argh..."

Huang Haoran uttered a mournful cry as his head was severed off of his body. His corpse fell from the sky and landed with a thud. According to the facts, Huang Haoran shouldn't be this incompetent, he was a late Earth Immortal expert after all. However, he had consumed much of his strength hovering in the sky, causing his combat strength to plummet. His sparkling wings weren't Jiang Chen's Flaming Wings which had already been fused into his body, like one of his body parts.

More importantly, his mind was disorientated when he saw Jiang Chen soar to the sky, making him totally powerless to resist Jiang Chen's single slash.

“Haoran.”

Huang Second exclaimed immediately with a shrill voice. Huang Haoran was his biological son and the greatest pride of his life. Today, his son was killed ruthlessly by Jiang Chen while fighting for the glory of Huang Family. How could he actually accept such a tragic result?

“Jiang Chen, I will shred you to a million pieces.”

Huang Second raged. Both of his eyes turned fiery red like a frenzied lion. He immediately flew skywards and lunged at Jiang Chen.

Upon seeing what was happening, Yan Dongliu naturally wouldn't dare delay his response, he instantly flew in front of Jiang Chen.

“Huang Second, what are you trying to do?”

Yan Dongliu roared, however, he was feeling extremely happy in his heart as he had made the right bet. Jiang Chen had given him too much of a surprise. Now that they had won two fights, the ore mine would naturally become theirs. Additionally, he knew that Jiang Chen's future would certainly be boundless. He believed that in the near future, it would be the Prefecture depending on Jiang Chen instead of the other way round. Therefore, he couldn't just watch Huang Second kill this great talent just like that.

“Yan Dongliu, get out of the way! This man has killed my son. I must shred him into a million pieces today!”

Huang Second was overwhelmed with grief and anger.

“Humph! Don't you forget that this is a competition! Huang Haoran died because of his incompetence. Didn't your family declare to kill Jiang Chen just now? Are you telling me that only you people can kill Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen isn't allowed to kill any one of your people? Huang Family may be strong, but not in front of me. So stop making excuses now. If you lose, then you

lose. If you can't accept it, get the hell out of here!"

Yan Dongliu snorted, unleashing the majestic aura of being a City Lord. Jiang Chen just stood behind him with a calm face. Yan Dongliu's act of protecting him didn't disappoint him. In fact, even if the City Lord didn't stand up against Huang Second, he would have no problem escaping from this senior.

"Huang Second, Huang Family has lost the competition. You should settle the grudges between you and Jiang Chen privately. Today's a fair battle between two major powers. If you insist in doing so, are you not putting me, the judge of the competition in your eyes?"

Nie Yiyuan's tone turned colder. Many of them could see that he was taking the side of Prefecture. In Yan City, Yi Yuan Association had always been the neutral party, but the situation had already changed. Now that the Prefecture had gotten the ore mine, their overall strength would certainly become way more powerful than Huang Family sooner or later. If he didn't choose to stand on the Prefecture's side now, he would be out of his mind.

"Second Brother, come down."

Said Huang Ying coldly. Now that Yi Yuan Association had stood on the Prefecture's side, it would be favorable to them if a fight broke out.

Huang Second gnashed his teeth. He understood that it was virtually impossible to kill Jiang Chen with Yan Dongliu protecting him. He would have to suppress his desire to take revenge for now.

"Little beast, I absolutely won't forget today's matter."

Huang Second darted a reptilian glare at Jiang Chen, threatened to take revenge on him, and flew back to Huang Family's camp.

"Let's go."

Huang Ying glanced at the ore mine. Even though he seemed

extremely reluctant, he could do nothing about it. He then ground his teeth and led his people back to Yan City. If there was only the Prefecture's forces here, he would probably do whatever it takes to snatch the ore mine. With the interference of Yi Yuan Association, he had no choice but to honor the agreement. Otherwise, his family would suffer greater losses.

Yan Dongliu and Jiang Chen descended from the sky. Jiang Chen had returned to his brilliant-looking and youthful appearance. If one didn't witness his beast form just now, one wouldn't be able to link that scary killing scene to him.

“Big Brother Jiang, you're amazing!”

Yan Qingcheng came to Jiang Chen's side with a delightful look, staring at Jiang Chen with a pair of infatuated eyes. If it wasn't because of the trace of rationality that existed in her mind, she would've straightaway put her arms around Jiang Chen.

Yuan Chengjun was absorbing everything with his eyes, it increased his hatred for Jiang Chen even more. Today, the failure of killing Jiang Chen disappointed him greatly. Anyone would be able to see that Yan Qingcheng had already fallen in love with Jiang Chen. To put bluntly, as long as Jiang Chen was here, he would never have a chance.

“Ai!”

Yuan Hong couldn't help but sigh deeply. He knew his son pretty well, but there was nothing he could really do about it.

“Big Brother Jiang, you have really surprised me. How can a genius that excels in all aspects like you and make people speechless, emerged in a small place like Yan City? If it wasn't for you today, our Prefecture would've lost its chance completely. Today, you have turn the tables around, allowing our Prefecture to gain control over the ore mine. In accordance to our previous agreement, I should give you 20 percent of the mine, however, I have decided to give you 30 percent now. Yi Yuan Association will

get 20 percent and the Prefecture will get 50 percent.”

Yan Dongliu said forthrightly. The others had no opinions in a decision like this. It was obvious that Yan Dongliu was using the extra 10 percent to build a good rapport with Jiang Chen. Spending more fortune on a genius like Jiang Chen would surely be worth it.

“I didn’t think that Big Brother Jiang has such powerful combat strength despite only having a half-step Earth Immortal cultivation base. Furthermore, he’s able to hover in the sky. If we didn’t see this with our own eyes, none of us would ever believe it.”

“That’s right. Master Jiang is truly the lucky star of the Prefecture. When he entered the Prefecture not long ago, he was able to cure City Lord’s cold poison by concocting the Ardent Yang Pill. Today, he has helped the Prefecture acquire another tremendous fortune. To me, it’s just too unbelievable!”

“Haha! Having Alchemist Jiang as a member of the Prefecture, he will certainly pave a better way for us in the future. Sooner or later, Huang Family is surely going to be defeated.”

.....

Everyone in the Prefecture’s side was smiling pleasantly. All the tension had disappeared. Each of them started to looking at Jiang Chen in a more pleasing way. Almost every one of them wanted to praise or at least flatter this young man. No one wouldn’t want to befriend such a genius.

Jiang Chen had become the spotlight while Yuan Chengjun was hiding somewhere behind people’s shadows, like a dull rat. He was once the number one genius of the Prefecture, but with Jiang Chen’s presence, no one paid him extra attention.

“Haha! Congratulations, brother Yan. Congratulations on being the owner of this ore mine. I think we will be able to start mining it any time.”

Nie Yiyuan walked over to Yan Dongliu and said with a smile.

“That’s right. When I return, I will send someone here to start mining right away, you can also send your people to keep track on the progress. As promised, you will be getting 20 percent of it, not any amount less.” Said Yan Dongliu.

“Very well. Then its decided. We will start mining Immortal Meta Stones tomorrow.”

Nie Yiyuan cupped his fists at Yan Dongliu and left with his people.

That night in the Prefecture was filled with laughter, singing and dancing. The Prefecture had never been so lively before. In the middle of the garden, a dozen of tables were placed for the banquet. This was a celebration feast and Jiang Chen was attraction in this banquet.

However, Yuan Chengjun and Yuan Hong were absent in the party. Despite their importance in the Prefecture, it seemed like they had been forgotten by everyone. No one had ever noticed their absence; the whole feast was held because of Jiang Chen.

Somewhere in the Prefecture was a courtyard that seemed pretty dull and silent compared to the lively atmosphere in the garden. There was a father and son sitting in the room with a dark face.

“Dad, I can’t accept what has happened.”

Yuan Chengjun suddenly stood up from his seat.

“What else can you do then? With you present strength, you won’t be able to kill Jiang Chen. I advise you to put all of your attention on cultivation instead of focusing on a girl.” Said Yuan Hong.

“Dad, as long as Jiang Chen is here, we won’t have a status in the Prefecture. Today, that Yan Dongliu held a feast in the garden, but he didn’t even came to invite us personally despite our absence, all of their attention has been placed on Jiang Chen. To them, we

have already become nothing despite all the hard work that you have contributed to the Prefecture.” Said Yuan Chengjun.

After hearing what his son said, he couldn't help but frown. It would be impossible to deny that he didn't feel any discomfort for being treated as such.

“Dad, given your strength, it would certainly be possible for you to form a new force in Yan City, it's pointless to follow the Prefecture anymore. Since Yan Dongliu is being ruthless to us, he shouldn't blame us for being cruel to him in the future.”

A look of ruthlessness flashed past Yuan Chengjun's face.

“What are you thinking?”

Yuan Hong looked over and asked his son.

“I have already discussed this with the Huang Family. We will eliminate the Prefecture together. At that time, the Prefecture will be ours and we shall share the Immortal Meta Stones equally.”

Yuan Chengjun's eyes glittered with a cold light.

Chapter 1090 - Golden Immortal Elder

“What?”

Yuan Hong’s facial expression changed instantly. He had never thought that his son would collude with Huang Family.

“Dad, you don’t have to be overly surprised. By following Yan Dongliu, you will never get an opportunity. Though you are willing to remain as a mediocre expert for the rest of your life, your son is reluctant to. My biggest regret is not being able to kill Jiang Chen today. If you and I combine our strengths, it won’t be a problem for us to eliminate Yan Dongliu and the rest. At that time, the whole Prefecture will be ours.”

Said Yuan Chengjun, revealing his ambitious desire.

“That means you deliberately lose to that Huang Haoifei today?”

Yuan Hong suddenly realized what happened. He knew his son’s strength very well, which was why he felt strange that his son lost to Huang Haoifei earlier. Now, it seemed that everything was planned out by his son just to create an opportunity to kill Jiang Chen.

“That’s correct. I won’t lose to Huang Haoifei. I have gained plenty of benefits during my tough-training. I lost that fight just to let Jiang Chen fight the third match. That man pose a great threat to us and has to be eliminated as soon as possible. However, I failed to imagine that he has reached such a powerful extent, he could even kill Huang Haoran with just his half-step Earth Immortal cultivation base. And he has the ability to fly. Therefore, only Heaven Immortal experts can eliminate him now. We can never allow him to continue growing. Dad, don’t hesitate anymore.”

Yuan Chengjun came closer to his dad and said in a grim tone.

“No, brother Yan and I are sworn brothers. I can’t commit such an act of betrayal behind his back.”

Yuan Hong hesitated and shook his head.

“Dad, you are being deluded. Have you not seen that both Yan Dongliu and his daughter have already placed all of their thoughts on Jiang Chen? When will they shift their focus back to us? Today’s feast is a very good example, I have already established a vengeful conflict between Jiang Chen and me. That man is ruthless. You can see it from his methods. If he gets the 20 percent of the ore mine, his cultivation base might advance once more in a very short period of time. Once he gains enough power, there won’t be any room for us in the Prefecture anymore. We will end up like Huang Xiong and Huang Haoran.”

Yuan Chengjun was tensed. Although he had been conspiring with Huang Family, he needed his father’s nod to proceed. One should know that Yuan Hong was the person that Huang Family wanted to cooperate with, not Yuan Chengjun because he didn’t have the qualification.

Yuan Hong stayed silent for a moment, pondering over his son’s words. When one’s thought had been provoked and drawn out, it would burst and pour out like a tidal wave. Take Yuan Hong for example, he had never thought of doing anything that would betray Yan Dongliu like cooperating with Huang Family, but after hearing what his son said, this thought took root in his mind automatically. He started to imagine the day when he would have his own forces. It was something that all men desired to become.

As such, he suddenly realized the rationality of his son’s words. Jiang Chen’s appearance in the Prefecture had affected their position. Their current authority and status weren’t the same as before. Besides, his son and Jiang Chen had formed a very obvious feud. Judging from Jiang Chen’s killing of Huang Xiong and Huang Haoran, he could conclude that Jiang Chen wasn’t a person to be trifled with. He could also describe this young man as a ruthless person. If this young man could grow to a powerful extent, the consequences would be unimaginable.

In the future, even if Yan Dongliu didn't create trouble for them, Jiang Chen would never let them go. Therefore, it would be better to strike first by joining hands with the Huang Family, instead of waiting for Jiang Chen to find them. If they did that, they would get a share of the ore mine, eliminate the Prefecture and Jiang Chen and became one of the overlords in Yan City.

“Don't hesitate anymore, dad.”

Yuan Chengjun saw the changes in his dad's expression and urged immediately.

“How's your discussion with Huang Family?” Asked Yuan Hong.

Yuan Chengjun's eyes sparkled after hearing this. This was the question that he had been waiting for. As long as Yuan Hong agreed to it, his plan would be executed smoothly.

“I have secretly been to Huang Family this afternoon and talked with Huang Ying about the agreement. As long as we cooperate with them to eliminate the Prefecture and Jiang Chen, they will divide the Immortal Meta Stones with us equally. At that time, we will take control of the Prefecture and eliminate Yi Yuan Association together with the Huang Family, then, half of Yan City will become ours.” Said Yuan Chengjun.

“What are you going to do?” Asked Yuan Hong with a frown.

“It's very simple. Tomorrow, when Yan Dongliu sent Qingcheng to the mine to supervise the operations, you can request going along with Yan Qingcheng and personally guard the mine. I suppose Yan Dongliu will never refuse it. At that time, I will collaborate with the Huang Family to seize the control of the ore mine and the entire Yan City, forcing Yan Dongliu into submission.”

Yuan Chengjun showed a malicious smile. Thinking about Yan Qingcheng, he couldn't help but reveal a hint of lasciviousness. In his mind, this girl would become his in no time.

Yuan Hong was lost in contemplation, but his eyes revealed a trace of ruthlessness.

.....

Jiang Chen went back to his courtyard because the banquet didn't suit him well. The laughter in the party reminded him of his brothers and friends back in Saint Origin World where Big Yellow, Han Yan, Tyrant, Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu had gotten together. That was where he felt true happiness. But today, Big Yellow was still nowhere to be found. He suddenly felt a sense of loneliness being in this strange world.

"Ah Yan, Tyrant, I hope you two will break through to the Immortal realm soon. Then, come and find me in the Immortal World. We will pave the way to our greatness just like before."

A smile surfaced on his mouth. The scenes of fighting alongside with his brothers made him fall into a trance. He liked this feeling very much because it gave him warmth.

In a person's life, there must be something that was worth reminiscing, otherwise life wouldn't be perfect.

Presently, all the soul imprint in his body had been fully refined. He didn't need to worry that Nan Bei Chao would track him down or kept using the Immortal Mark to conceal the foreign imprint in his body anymore. Furthermore, this soul imprint had given him loads of benefits. It pushed his cultivation base to half-step Earth Immortal, allowing the dragon marks in his body to reach 250 000.

Also, his foundation was very much solidified now. If he ever encountered any powerful demonic beast now, his dragon transformation skill could immediately absorb its demon soul. He would advance to early Earth Immortal realm, in no time.

"Who is it? Show yourself."

Jiang Chen frowned and clamored at his left direction. Although the person was good at hiding, he could never deceive Jiang Chen's

senses.

After being shouted by Jiang Chen, the stealthy shadow moved. Subsequently, an old man in black robe emerged from the scene.

“You have very keen senses, young man. Although this old man isn’t a stealthy type, not even ordinary Divine Immortal experts can sense my presence. It’s a miracle that you, a mere half-step Earth Immortal was able to do so.”

The elder said in a husky voice, but there was a hint of surprise within his tone.

He was standing not far away, gazing at Jiang Chen from head to toe and nodded continuously, seemingly satisfied with what he’s seeing.

While the elder was studying Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen too was studying this old man that came-out-of-nowhere. Although Jiang Chen seemed composed on the surface, he was going wild inside because this old man was too scary. He tried to use his divine sense and soul power to analyze this old man’s cultivation, but found himself entering an infinite space like the ocean.

Jiang Chen had no idea what the old man’s cultivation was, but he was sure that this old man was the scariest one that he had ever met. A Heaven Immortal expert like Yan Dongliu was nothing more than an ant in front of this old man. In other words, if this old man wanted to end his life, he would die for sure. He wouldn’t have the chance to live even if he used all of the skills that he has.

However, he didn’t sense any trace of maliciousness from this stranger. He was very confident in his senses. This stranger’s emergence wasn’t a threat to him.

What surprised him more was why would such a peerless expert appear in a small place like Yan City? Furthermore, this old man said that not even Divine Immortal experts could sense his presence. One should know that Divine Immortal realm was one

level higher than the Heaven Immortal realm. To put it bluntly, this old man must be a Golden Immortal expert which was considered as first-class existence in OneLine-Sky.

“Who are you? What is it that you want from me?”

Asked Jiang Chen composedly. He was certain that he had never seen this old man before, let alone knowing who this old man was.

“You are still able to remain so calm despite how weak you are. You are the first one to do this. Not bad, not bad.”

The elder nodded and praised.

“You didn’t come here just to praise me, right?”

Said Jiang Chen, still remaining vigilant and suspicious of this stranger’s intention. After the incident of the soul imprint attack, he had to take precaution against every stranger.

“Of course not. I have been observing you for a long time. I have seen it clearly when you killed that brat during daytime. I can say that you are the scariest genius that I have ever seen. As such, you are the genius that I have been looking for.” Said the elder with a smile.

“I think that you should just be forthright with whatever you want to tell me.” Said Jiang Chen.

“Nice, you are refreshing! I’m Ouyang He.”

The elder announced his name proudly. In OneLine-Sky, his name was the golden characters. Anyone who heard these three characters would lie prostrate on the ground and kowtow before him.

“Ouyang He, I don’t know who that is.”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“Fuck me!”

Ouyang He stumbled under his feet and almost flopped to the

ground. It was fortunate that Jiang Chen's response didn't make him spurt blood. How could there someone in OneLine-Sky who had never heard of Ouyang He before? Where were the heavenly principles?"

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen wasn't a man of OneLine-Sky. As an ascendant, he was already considered not bad for knowing so much about Yan City. Since he hadn't really stepped into OneLine-Sky before, he naturally wouldn't know who Ouyang He was.

Chapter 1091 - Ouyang He

Ouyang He was almost choked to death by his own saliva. Anyone should know that he was a well-known and great Golden Immortal expert. It had dealt him a psychological blow when he knew that there was someone in One-Line-Sky that didn't know who he was.

“Brat, I suppose you have heard of Skycloud Pavilion?”

Ouyang He said while gnashing his teeth. If Jiang Chen didn't even hear the Skycloud Pavilion, he should probably smash his head at the rockery to death.

“Skycloud Pavilion?”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He naturally didn't know any major power like Skycloud Pavilion, but this elder was a great Golden Immortal expert. Someone like him should be a top-class expert throughout the entire One-Line-Sky or the overlord of the overlords. It was conceivable that this Skycloud Pavilion was a super large sect in One-Line-Sky.

“Correct, I'm Skycloud Pavilion's.....”

Ouyang He was pretty satisfied with Jiang Chen's response and his face started to regain his pride, but when he was about to reveal his identity.....

“Never heard of it.”

Said Jiang Chen grimly.

“Fuck me!”

Ouyang He almost spurted his blood on Jiang Chen's face. This young man was revolting, he hadn't even heard of the Skycloud Pavilion. Even if this young man really hadn't heard of this sect before, could he not finish saying his word in one breath without showing that surprised look? Because that was pretty humiliating

for the old man.

“Ai!”

Ouyang He looked up at the full moon in the sky and sighed heavily. Thinking about how famous he was in One-Line-Sky, how could he imagine that he would meet such an ignorant kid elsewhere? During normal days, he wouldn't even pay attention to any half-step Earth Immortal.

Immediately, he turned to look at Jiang Chen solemnly. “Given your age, your talent and your terrifying means, not even the greatest genius in One-Line-Sky can reach your level. How could a monstrous genius like you appear in a small place like Yan City? Plus, you have no knowledge about One-Line-Sky at all. If this old man isn't guessing it wrongly, you should be an ascendant right?”

As the saying goes, old ginger was spicier, which meant that the older the person is, the wiser the person would be. Thus, Ouyang He naturally wasn't a fool. Whether it was in the aspect of eyesight or thought process, he was sharper than most of the people. He was able to guess Jiang Chen's origin in a brief moment.

After hearing this, Jiang Chen's facial expression changed slightly. In truth, there was no big deal in hiding this identity anymore. If it wasn't because of the soul imprint in his body, he would've never concealed it. But even so, it didn't make Jiang Chen nervous. He could sense that this old man didn't have any hint of hostility towards him. He also knew that the one who was hunting him was the original Nan Bei Chao. As such, he wasn't worried that this old man had seen through his identity.

“So what if is true” Jiang Chen frowned.

“Haha! I have never thought that I would have such a great harvest. Of all the ascendants I know, they are all a bunch of old men. It's the first time that I have seen such a young man like you ascend to our world. You must have incredible talent to be able to break through to the Immortal realm despite the scarcity of

cultivation resources in your world. Good, good, it seems like the Heaven hasn't giving up on me, Ouyang He."

Ouyang He burst into laughter all of a sudden. His eyes glittered as he looked at Jiang Chen, like he had seen some kind of treasure, however, this kind of gaze irritated Jiang Chen.

"What is it that you want from me?" Asked Jiang Chen.

"Jiang Chen, I don't have much time to spend with you anymore. I'm the pavilion master of Skycloud Pavilion, Ouyang He, the top figure in One-Line-Sky and an unparalleled Golden Immortal expert. I will now accept you as my disciple. Quickly kneel down and worship your master."

Ouyang He's tone and expression suddenly turned solemn. He didn't seem like joking at all. A great Golden Immortal would never pick an unfamiliar half-step Earth Immortal junior randomly and cracked a joke with him, such expert wouldn't have such a time.

"Uh..."

Jiang Chen was dumbfounded. He wouldn't have thought that a great Golden Immortal would suddenly accept him as a disciple. Judging from Ouyang He's expression and tone, it didn't seem like this old man was joking at all.

If it was another person who encountered such an opportunity, that person would probably pass out on the spot, however, Jiang Chen didn't seem interested in it at all. Although he had just arrived in the Immortal World, he was once a peerless figure, on par with the numerous old ancestors back in his world. So how could he simply call any stranger master? Besides, he doesn't need any master as he cultivated the dragon transformation art. Although Ouyang He was a peak Golden Immortal expert, the benefits that this old man could bring him definitely wouldn't surpass the dragon transformation art.

It could be said that Jiang Chen's achievement was all because of the dragon transformation art.

"Why should I worship you as my master?" Jiang Chen chuckled.

"Uh....."

After listening to Jiang Chen, Ouyang He once again almost spurted out some blood. He thought he had misheard what Jiang Chen said. He had lost count of how many youths beg and cry to become his disciple. To any youth, it was no doubt a very fortunate thing. The fact that Jiang Chen refused his offer must be a serious joke.

But Ouyang He didn't have much time to waste. He had to make Jiang Chen his disciple today no matter how reluctant Jiang Chen was. He needed to use force.

Hu.....

A wave burst out of his body, lunging towards and pressing against Jiang Chen. This Qi was only a portion of the Qi that he has. If he fully unleashed the Qi of a peak Golden Immortal realm, he would immediately crush Jiang Chen to death. He had spent so much effort to find Jiang Chen, he naturally wouldn't want to send such a rare genius to death. Who knew when and where would he find another genius like Jiang Chen?

"Brat, I'm not going to continue this nonsense with you anymore. I must accept you as my disciple today. Kneel down and worship your master this instant."

Ouyang He shouted coldly.

Cracking.....

Under the pressure of the Qi, all of the bones inside Jiang Chen's body were producing cracking sound, like a giant mountain was crushing against his body, causing him to suffocate. If Jiang Chen was replaced by any ordinary genius, that genius would instantly kneel down due to the extreme force.

But the thing that shocked Jiang Chen more was Ouyang He's present state. He couldn't sense it before Ouyang He unleashed his Qi. Now that his Qi had been released, Jiang Chen was able to see it clearly through his Great Soul Derivation Technique. He was shocked to find out that this supreme figure of One-Line-Sky was actually a dying man.

“Kneel down!”

Ouyang He shouted once more.

“Haha! How can a dying man be qualified enough to force me to my knees?”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly. He was an unrelenting person. The more others tried to force him to do something, the less he would conform. He wasn't disgusted by Ouyang He's personality, but this elder really did revolted him.

“What?”

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, his face changed and exclaimed. Then, he kept his Qi and looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief. “How did you know that I'm a dying man?”

He was truly astounded. He was a great Golden Immortal who had deliberately concealed his own state, but that wasn't enough to hide it from a mere half-step Earth Immortal. If he didn't encounter this situation himself, he would certainly not believe it.

He was certain that this wasn't because of his incompetence. It was because Jiang Chen was too monstrous. He started to look at Jiang Chen in a more discreet way.

“Your vigor is fading and your life force is approaching its end. You won't be able to live for more than a month's time. You have already burnt your own life and lost your origin completely. No one else is capable of saving you now.”

Jiang Chen said straightforwardly, and at the same time, couldn't help but sigh in his heart. He didn't know what Ouyang

He had encountered, but he knew that ordinary expert could never do this. In order for one to burn one's own life force, one had to have some kind of secret art. He suddenly understood why this elder wanted to accept him as a disciple so badly.

If it was a common kind of injury, it wouldn't be a problem to Jiang Chen regardless of how serious the injury might be. With the help of his wood essence and some pills, he could cure the person in no time, but this elder's life force no longer existed inside his body. If it wasn't because of his great cultivation base, he would've died by now.

Burning one's life force was a decision that could only be made by ruthless people. Commonly, experts wouldn't completely burn their own life force. If Ouyang He had one year of life force left, Jiang Chen might be able to save his life. Unfortunately, all the essence of life had been emptied from his body. There was no other way to save this old man.

"Brat, you are truly a rare individual, being able to discern my present state so well. Ai!"

Ouyang He felt incomparably shocked. Jiang Chen was certainly the most awesome young man that he had ever seen. Then, he sighed deeply, making him look like he had aged for a few hundred years.

"Senior is a top figure in One-Line-Sky. Could there be someone capable of forcing you into such a condition?"

Jiang Chen's softened his tone, he suddenly felt some pity for this supreme figure. He could tell it from the elder's eyes that the elder had suffered boundless humiliation and remorse.

Besides, he didn't have any bad impression of this old man.

All of a sudden, Ouyang He clenched his fists tightly, producing cracking sounds. His eyes turned fiercer as if he had fallen into some kind of insufferable memory.

“Jiang Chen, since you have already seen through my camouflage, there’s no need for me to hide it anymore. In fact, I have come because there’s something that I need to ask you for. My life will end soon and I don’t want to die unpeacefully.”

Ouyang He turned and looked at Jiang Chen. “I, Ouyang He is a renowned and top figure in One-Line-Sky, high and mighty. Everyone who saw me greets me in awe. But the biggest mistake that I had ever made in my life was to accept that heartless and unscrupulous disciple.”

As he mentioned this disciple, his eyes turned fierce again. The hatred in his eyes was so fierce that it would never diminish even in the slightest bit eternally. He had tried to forget that memory, but today he had no choice but to relive it again.

“Could it be that your current injury was caused by your disciple?” Jiang Chen said in an inquiring tone.

“That’s right. That bastard attacked me during my critical moment of trying to break through to the Immortal King realm. If it wasn’t because of the Forbidden Art that I used by burning my life force, I would have died long ago.”

Said Ouyang He mercilessly.

Chapter 1092 - Great Luo Immortal Weapon

After listening to Ouyang He's words, his anger was stirred up subconsciously inside of him. This was a kind of person that he hated the most in his life. Such a person was heartless and ungrateful. Even if you have treated that person well, that person would still stab you behind your back at the most crucial time.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything, he didn't want to interrupt Ouyang He's thoughts at this moment. By now, he could basically guess why Ouyang He had come to find him and why this old man insisted to accept him as his disciple. This would be the last wish of a dying man.

"He's called Tian Muyun. When this old man was on a journey outside, this old man passed through an old forest and mountains, and saw a young beggar with a body full of injuries and was about to be eaten by a hungry wolf. This Old man couldn't bear to watch that young beggar die, so this old man saved him. This old man noticed the marvelous bones inside his body and was sure that that young person would become a talented cultivator. Then, this old man decided to accept him as my disciple and brought him back to the Skycloud Pavilion. Ever since then, I have treated him like my own child. Due to his great talent, he was able to break through in every turn. Today, he is already forty plus years old, but his cultivation had already reached the peak of the Golden Immortal realm, which is on par with mine. He could be considered as one of the famous figures in One-Line-Sky. All along, I had always been very proud of having this disciple, but I never thought that, Ai!"

Ouyang He made another sigh. His heart began to bleed when he talked about Tian Muyun.

"Two years ago, I was in seclusion and all of the affairs in Skycloud Pavilion were handled by Tian Muyun. Sooner or later, my position as pavilion master would be his as I intended to do so. However, I failed to anticipate that he was such an ungrateful and

heartless person. He launched a deadly attack on me during my most critical time of breaking through to the Immortal King realm. It had disrupted the entire process, causing me to receive a great amount of backlash that reduced my combat power tremendously. I was only able to escape by burning my life force. If I'm not mistaken, the current Skycloud Pavilion has already been taken over by that heartless brat."

He continued. "After escaping from the calamity, I searched everywhere for a very talented young man and impart everything I had to that person young man so that he could avenge me by killing that ungrateful brat. However, I couldn't find a single talent that had a greater potential than Tian Muyun throughout the entire One-Line-Sky. I was in despair at the time so I have never thought that I would meet you here in Yan City. Comparing you to Tian Muyun, your talent is a hundred times greater than his. That was why I wanted you to become my disciple and take my last wish so that I can die in peace."

Ouyang He looked at Jiang Chen in a very serious way. Apart from the seriousness, there was also a hint of pleading in his eyes.

"Doesn't senior fear that I might just be the same as Tian Muyun?" Asked Jiang Chen.

"I don't. Ever since you entered the Prefecture, I have been observing you. You have astounding alchemy skills and heaven defying combat power. More importantly, despite being a recent member of the Prefecture, you were unwilling to do anything that would betray the Prefecture. This shows that you are a man with righteousness and love. Additionally, you kill decisively. In this cruel Immortal World, only Immortals like you will be able survive. Therefore, I have chosen you." Said Ouyang He.

"But I don't want to worship you as my master."

Jiang Chen shook his head.

"You don't have to. As long as you promise me to help get rid of

that heartless Tian Muyun, I will impart everything to you.”

Ouyang He had given up convincing Jiang Chen to be his disciple. Given Jiang Chen’s ability, someone like him would never worship anyone as his master, including the Great Luo Golden Immortal elder.

Swoosh!

Ouyang He waved his arm and a dazzling golden halberd materialized in his hand. It was 3 meters long, engraved with lines of patterns that made it looked like a lifelike majestic dragon.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled all of a sudden when he saw this weapon. He could feel its scariness. His Heavenly Saint Sword was definitely no match for this weapon or it could also be said that the current Heavenly Saint Sword was no match for this weapon. Furthermore, the surface of the halberd was full of dragon-like patterns, which made the cultivator of dragon transformation art be captivated by it.

“This is the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. It is a Great Luo Immortal Weapon that has reached the peak of Great Luo which is enough to be compared to any ordinary king grade Immortal Weapon. It is the supreme treasure of Skycloud Pavilion. Anyone who possesses this halberd will be qualified to become the master of the pavilion. I will now hand over this halberd to you so that you can inherit everything from the Skycloud Pavilion. Here’s another combat technique that can be used with the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. It’s called Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes. Given your talent, it won’t be a problem for you to comprehend this combat skill. The reason Tian Muyun attacked me was because of these two things. Too bad, he was destined not to get it. These two supreme treasures of Skycloud Pavilion belongs to you now.”

Ouyang He didn’t even hesitate in the slightest bit when he handed over the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd and the scripture of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen looked interestedly at the two treasures in front. He would be lying if he denied that he wasn't interested in them. A Great Luo Immortal Weapon was a weapon that could only be wielded by Golden Immortal experts. Anyone who encountered such a fortune would surely pass out due to over-excitement. This was the treasure that countless of Immortals in One-Line-Sky dreamt of.

However, Jiang Chen understood that he would bear a whole new responsibility after receiving these two treasures.

“Senior, you don't know me, so why do you trust me so much?” Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Because I have no other choice. I initially wanted to impart everything that I have to you, but I don't think you need them. I suppose that these two treasures are enough for you.”

Ouyang He said solemnly, but within his tone, a trace of bitterness and sadness could be heard. It couldn't be helped because the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd had always been his treasured weapon and had already become part of him. He wouldn't feel good especially when this treasure was given to another person.

“Alright, I promise you that I will eliminate Tian Muyun in the future and rebuild the Skycloud Pavilion.”

Jiang Chen rarely made promises, but every promise he made would be realized. He took the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd and the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes and kept them. This was a promise between two men.

One of the reasons he promised to help Ouyang He was because he despised someone like Tian Muyun. The other reason was that he had just arrived in the Immortal World and Yan City was certainly not a place that he should stay at for long. It was only a matter of time before he venture into One-Line-Sky. Even without this elder didn't come to find him, he would certainly have clashes

with Skycloud Pavilion. Now that the elder had given him a big mission to accomplish, he wouldn't refuse it.

“Haha! Good, this old man has nothing else to ask for. Here's my life savings. I don't have any other treasures but I have Immortal Meta Stones. I will give them to you as well.”

Ouyang He let out two laughs and tossed out a pale yellow spatial ring to Jiang Chen. Currently, he seemed more relieved, it was like the heavy burden in his heart had just been removed.

Seeing Ouyang He's condition made Jiang Chen feel heartbroken, a renowned supreme figure in One-Line-Sky ended up like this. Additionally, this was caused by the elder's most trusted disciple. It was imaginable that if Ouyang He had been slightly more vigilant at the time, he would've never been harmed by Tian Muyun.

“Senior, I have some healing treasures. Even though it can't fully heal your injuries, it can lengthen your lifespan.” Said Jiang Chen.

“No need. This old man's wish has already been fulfilled. My injury can no longer be cured. You should keep those treasures for your own use in the future.”

Ouyang He finished speaking and disappeared. The courtyard returned to its usual silence once more, it was like Ouyang He had never appeared before.

Jiang Chen put the halberd and scripture into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He didn't check the scripture now because he was crystal clear that with his current cultivation, he could never touch such a high level thing. Although he practiced the dragon transformation art and had a body rich with Immortal Qi, he couldn't wield the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd yet.

Jiang Chen's eyes fell upon the spatial ring in his hand. This was the life savings of a Great Luo Golden Immortal, it shouldn't be any worse than what he expected. What he needed the most right

now was Immortal Meta Stones. With this amount of fortune, he doesn't need to worry about Immortal Meta Stones anymore.

By using his divine sense, the spatial ring was opened. Despite being mentally prepared, he was still shocked by the scene in front.

There were so many Immortal Meta Stones that they piled up like a mountain range.

What Jiang Chen couldn't believe was that he couldn't find a single low grade Immortal Meta Stones within these Immortal Meta Stones, and even a medium grade Immortal Meta Stones. All of them were high grade Immortal Meta Stones. He did a tentative estimate and found out there were at least 200 million of them. Apart from that, there were ten thousand more Immortal Meta Stones that looked different from the rest, they were glowing with purple brilliance on the surface.

“My god! If I'm not mistaken, this 10 thousand stones are king grade Immortal Meta Stones.”

Jiang Chen felt as if the sky and land was spinning. The Immortal Meta Stones in the Immortal World were similar to Human Rank and Earth Rank Restoration Pills in Saint Origin World. Both of these had differences among them. A medium grade Immortal Meta Stone was equivalent to 10 000 low grade Immortal Meta Stones. Likewise, a high grade Immortal Meta Stone was equivalent to 10 000 medium grade while a king grade was equal to 10 000 high grade.

The fortune inside this spatial ring would make anyone's head spin. The ore mine that has emerged outside Yan City seemed like a trash compared to this spatial ring, it became insignificant if it was compared to the fortune inside of this ring.

“With so much fortune, I won't have to worry about the stones running out anymore. This much fortune is enough to bring me to the Golden Immortal realm at least. Senior Ouyang He has given me this much of benefits, I will surely repay his kindness by

fulfilling his wish.”

Resoluteness could be seen in Jiang Chen’s eyes. He had decided that the moment the matter in Yan City was fully resolved, he would head to One-Line-Sky and kill Tian Muyun, although it wouldn’t be completed in a day. The most important thing for him right now was to advance his cultivation base.

Chapter 1093 - The Crisis of the Prefecture

“Eh? What’s this?”

Jiang Chen’s divine sense twitched all of a sudden when it noticed a pale glowing crystal at the corner of the spatial ring. It was the size of a fist and emitted traces of demonic Qi.

“It’s actually an early Heaven Immortal demon soul. This is really an unexpected harvest. Ouyang He surely didn’t put this soul into his eyes and had probably casted this soul aside. However, a Heaven Immortal realm demon soul will be of great use to me. With how solid my foundation is now, it’s the perfect time to utilize this demon soul to advance my cultivation. I think there won’t be any problem to advance my cultivation now to early Earth Immortal realm.”

Jiang Chen was pleasantly surprised. A Heaven Immortal realm demon soul was useless to Ouyang He, but it was truly precious to Jiang Chen. After refining this demon soul, he would surely advance to the true Earth Immortal realm and would no longer be a half-step Earth Immortal.

Without hesitation, he retrieved the demon soul from the spatial ring and started to refine it in his room. Of all the things that Ouyang He had given him, the demon soul was the thing that he needed the most. Once he advanced to the early Earth Immortal realm, his combat strength would become much stronger.

Under the circulation of the dragon transformation art, the demon soul was refined at a high speed. To him, refining a demon soul was extremely an easy matter. The Heaven Immortal realm demon soul had energy that was beyond any ordinary Earth Immortal realm demon soul. Even though this amount of energy was negligible to Ouyang He, it was surging inside Jiang Chen’s body like waves.

Every expert should act according to one’s ability. When one

reached a certain level, one should do what was supposed to be done at that level to advance further. Given Jiang Chen's present condition, he wouldn't dare refine a Golden Immortal realm or Divine Immortal realm demon soul. As for an early Heaven Immortal realm demon soul, it suited him well.

After the advancement of his dragon transformation art, every following advancement required 50 000 dragon marks. Now that his body had a total of 250 000 dragon marks, he needed to have 300 000 dragon marks to advance to the early Earth Immortal realm.

As the dragon transformation art was being circulated, the demon soul was continuously being refined while the number of dragon marks kept soaring inside his Qi Sea. One thousand, two thousand.....

Jiang Chen's way of advancement had always been terrifying. No one could possibly accept this kind of advancement. After only one hour, the demon soul was already fully refined and 70 000 dragon marks had been condensed, making a total of 320 000 dragon marks. His current cultivation base had already advanced to the early Earth Immortal realm. With 20 000 extra dragon marks, it made his combat strength even stronger. Now, he only needed 30 000 more to hit the mid Earth Immortal realm.

Hong.....

An incomparably powerful Qi wave rushed out of his body. His current strength was many folds greater than before.

“My cultivation base has already reached the early Earth Immortal realm. I can kill any late Earth Immortal expert with ease now. With my full effort, I can even kill any half-step Heaven Immortal. If I transform, I could probably also kill an early Heaven Immortal expert. Humph! If Huang Family continues to offend me, don't blame me for being ruthless to them.”

A hint of smile was seen at the corner of his mouth. In this huge

Immortal World, his current cultivation was naturally insignificant, but in this small Yan City, no one else could defeat him anymore. Huang Family had always regarded him as a thorn in their flesh, but after advancing to early Earth Immortal realm, Huang Family was no longer qualified to be his enemy.

The next morning.

The meeting hall of the Prefecture was packed with people. Every one of them were the higher ups of the Prefecture. Yesterday's battle was a great victory. Today, the prefecture was going to send people over to start mining the ore mine. As this was a crucial event, only those who were trustworthy could undertake this task.

Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong were sitting on top ,while Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun were seated below them. The rest of the higher ups occupied the two rows.

Yan Dongliu swept across the hall but he didn't see Jiang Chen around. Then he asked. "Why hasn't Alchemist Jiang come?"

"Father, daughter has gone over to his courtyard and found that he was in seclusion. So daughter didn't interrupt him." Said Yan Qingcheng.

"En, well, Alchemist Jiang has made a great contribution to the Prefecture. So regarding the matter of mining, he naturally won't be required to be present. I have promised to give him 30 percent of the ore mine and I will make sure that I will fulfill my promise. Everyone, mining is the top priority of the Prefecture now, so who do you think is the right person to lead this activity?" Said Yan Dongliu.

"Isn't that obvious. It will be Miss Qingcheng of course. Miss has been handling all the affairs of the Prefecture all these years. She should be the one leading this activity."

"I agree. This is a crucial event and big miss can't be excluded from it. This Old man is willing to go along with Big Miss so that I

can immediately help Big Miss whenever Big Miss needs it.”

.....

Yan Qingcheng had a very high reputation. Most of them in the hall agreed that she should be in charge of the mining. With her taking charge of the operation, most of them wouldn't need to worry about it.

“In that case, Qingcheng, Chengjun, both of you will go together. The operation this time will be supervised by the two of you.”

Yan Dongliu looked over at Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun.

“Brother Yan, Huang Family suffered a terrible defeat yesterday and I'm worried that Huang Ying won't give up on the ore mine. If they plotted against us behind our backs, Qingcheng and Chengjun won't be able to deal with them. Why not I go along with them so that I can safeguard the ore mine.” Yuan Hong spoke suddenly.

“City Lord, Elder Yuan's right. He's a Heaven Immortal expert. With him going along with the two of them, the ore mine will certainly be safe.”

“Yes, Huang Family definitely won't give up on this. Anyone should know that this ore mine involves a great deal of fortune. It's the key for the two major powers in Yan City. If Huang Family launched some kind of secret attack, we will surely regret not being prepared. But with Elder Yuan's supervision, everything will become safer.”

“The factor of Huang Family must be taken into account. Therefore, it would be best if Elder Yuan can tag along.”

.....

After hearing that Yuan Hong was going to accompany the two youngsters, the rest of the higher ups expressed their approval on this decision. Yan Dongliu and Yuan Hong had been friends for many years. They could be described as buddies who had been through a lot together. Therefore, no one including Yan Dongliu

and Yan Qingcheng doubted Yuan Hong's intention.

"Alright. In that case, this matter will need to trouble you for a while brother Yuan."

Yan Dongliu cupped his fists at Yuan Hong. After so many years of being his old friend, he had regarded Yuan Hong as his own brother. So there wasn't much formalities between the two of them. In his point of view, Yuan Hong must be feeling guilty because of his son's defeat which motivated him to take the initiative in guarding the ore mine. This was a very normal act and Yan Dongliu didn't have any reason to refuse it.

However, he had failed to realize that this decision would put the entire Prefecture into an irrecoverable situation.

Yuan Hong and Yuan Chengjun exchanged a glance and smiled. The situation was going as what they had expected. Everything was under their control now.

Without making any delay, a big squad set out towards the ore mine under the lead of Yuan Hong, Yan Qingcheng and Yuan Chengjun. The squad of Yi Yuan Association were already there when they arrived.

The leader of Yi Yuan Association's squad was a fiftyish old man. He had a strong cultivation base – half-step Heaven Immortal realm. It wasn't a big squad. There were only five or six people in the squad. As a matter of fact, the Prefecture should be the only party to mine this ore mine. But due to Yi Yuan Association owning 20 percent of the total Immortal Meta Stones, they had come to invigilate their operations and know how much Immortal Meta Stones was mined.

"I had never thought that the Prefecture's squad would be personally led by Elder Yuan. It seems like the Prefecture attaches a lot of importance to this mine."

The leader of Yi Yuan Association looked over at Yuan Hong and

cupped his fists. In any case, Yuan Hong was still a Heaven Immortal expert. A top figure like him would be respected wherever he went, and no one would dare to disrespect him.

“Elder Wu, please.” Yuan Hong said with a smile.

“After you, Elder Yuan.”

The elder of Yi Yuan Association quickly gestured back. He was called Wu Chang. He had a strong position in Yi Yuan Association and was trusted by Nie Yiyuan. Otherwise, he wouldn't be sent on this mission.

Several tents had already been set up around the ore mine. To Immortal experts, it was extremely easy to set up tents. As soon as the ore mine was excavated, the mining operation could be carried out instantly. Yan Qingcheng and Wu Cheng brought their people into the mine to check the condition inside, while Yuan Hong and Yuan Chengjun stayed in the tent.

“Chengjun, are you sure you want to do this?”

Yuan Hong still hesitated. He could feel that Yan Dongliu still trusted him a lot, it would make him feel guilty if he did something that would betray his old friend.

“Dad, why are you still hesitating at this time? Our plan has already been executed. Tonight, Huang Family will launch an attack to take over this place.”

Said Yuan Chengjun viciously.

“Very well, in that case, father won't consider it anymore.”

Yuan Hong gritted his teeth and shook off all of his doubts. There were some things which you couldn't reverse once it had already been decided.

The night time!

At night, even the moon disappeared from the sky and rain started to drizzle outside. A night like this would never bring

comfort to people as it was full of dreariness and suppression. However, the inside of the ore mine was as bright as day time. No lights were needed because the glitter from the Immortal Meta Stones was enough to illuminate everything.

The experts of the Prefecture were filled with enthusiasm as they were mining the crystal clear Immortal Meta Stones, the inside of the mine was filled with their laughter, as if the weather didn't affect them at all.

However, Yan Qingcheng suddenly felt somewhat agitated, as if something bad would happen, however, she had no idea what the thing would be. She just felt that something was wrong and was about to happen.

But then again, she didn't pay too much attention to that because no matter what happens, Yuan Hong was here. This old friend of her father was powerful enough to deal with almost anything. Even if she didn't trust her own ability, she trusted this uncle of hers very much, however, this would bring the Prefecture into the maw of the enemy.

Chapter 1094 - The Late Night's Attack

Yan City, Huang Family!

Standing above the martial arena of Huang Family was a dozen black-clothed men. The killing intent that was casually released by this group of people could quiver people's heart. The expert with the lowest cultivation base among them was a late Earth Immortal realm. All of the half-step Heaven Immortal experts of the family were present here.

Huang Ying and Huang Second were the true Heaven Immortal experts. Currently, their faces looked incomparably grim as they stood in front of the line, overlooking all of the experts. Huang Haoifei and Huang Haoming were both looking belligerent. Yesterday, not only did they lost the ore mine that was supposed to be theirs but also a genius, Huang Haoran. To Huang Family, it was an unprecedented loss. The three of them had been good and close brothers. Now, the three Huang's males were reduced to only the two of them. It was conceivable how bad they felt at that time when they witnessed their brother being killed by Jiang Chen.

Both of them now hated Jiang Chen to the very core, but there was nothing that they could do about it because even Huang Haoifei would've died under his hands. Given their current strength, they absolutely weren't qualified to take revenge on Jiang Chen. As such, today was their great chance. They would erase the Prefecture off the map and kill Jiang Chen to avenge their brother's death.

"Everyone, Yuan Hong has already sent the news that they are already there at the ore mine. Yuan Hong has already joined our side, we should head over to ore mine to join them now and seize control of the ore mine. We will capture Yan Qingcheng and force Yan Dongliu into submission. We all know that Yan Dongliu's daughter was the apple of his eye and his flesh. If something were to happen to her, Yan Dongliu will certainly do anything to save

her. Although such an act isn't morally accepted, but we are forced to do so. As long as this method can conquer Yan City and retain Huang Family's existence, we'll do whatever it takes." Huang Ying said coldly.

Everyone on the scene expressed great understanding to what he said. They all knew that this wasn't going to be any kind of righteous act, but now that the mine had fallen into the Prefecture's hands, they felt compelled to do so. If they didn't take advantage of the situation now, it wouldn't take long for the Prefecture to improve their overall strength and overtake the strength of their forces. At that time, Huang Family would face its end.

Naturally, they wouldn't allow this to happen. It would be an unbearable loss if they lost the family which they had established.

"Dad, say no more. Tonight is going to be Yan Dongliu's and that Jiang Chen's end. We must shred that Jiang Chen into a million pieces today in order to avenge Sixth Uncle and Haoran's death. With Yuan Hong joining our forces, we have three Heaven Immortal experts now. That Yan Dongliu will certainly be no match for us even if he can grow two more heads and four more arms. After tonight, the entire Yan City will be ours."

Huang Haoifei said with gritted teeth. Whenever he mentioned Jiang Chen's name, all his anger would flare up inside of him. His hatred for Jiang Chen had exceeded the hatred that he had for the Prefecture.

"Alright, let's move to the ore mine now."

Huang Ying ordered. A group of experts then disappeared swiftly into the rainy night. Every place they passed turned the air into fog. Every droplet of rain that was an inch away from them evaporated into fog.

Inside the ore mine, everyone was still as spirited as before. They were constantly mining the shiny Immortal Meta Stones with

smiles on their faces.

“Haha! I have never thought that there’s such a great treasure outside Yan City. I wonder how many Immortal Meta Stones can be mined from this huge mine. If it hadn’t been for the movement of the mine itself, we wouldn’t have known it.”

“That’s right. This mine is full of sparkling Immortal Meta Stones. Every stone has unlimited gloss on it and is considered a superior item to anyone. This time, our Prefecture has really become rich. With so many Immortal Meta Stones, it’s only a matter of time before our entire forces surpasses Huang Family’s. It’s time for us to take the lead after so many years of conflicts with Huang Family.”

“However, all of these was because of Master Jiang’s effort. He’s young, extremely talented and monstrous. If it wasn’t for Master Jiang, this ore mine would’ve become Huang Family’s.”

.....

The experts of the Prefecture were mining the precious stones and were chatting happily with each other, their topic would surely involved Jiang Chen. It seemed like Jiang Chen’s popularity in the Prefecture was just ranked behind Yan Qingcheng now.

Yan Qingcheng felt very delighted in her heart after hearing what these people said about Jiang Chen. After knowing Jiang Chen for a period of time, her fondness for him had grown even more. This was what people said about the romantic period of a female youth. Once a girl allowed herself to fall in love with someone, that love would only grow deeper and deeper.

Hong Long.....

Suddenly, a loud noise rumbled into the mine from the outside, shaking the interior of the mine. Despite being inside the cavern, they were able to feel the strong shockwave clearly.

“Not good.”

Yan Qingcheng's expression suddenly changed. She whirled and headed for the exit. The rest halted their operations and followed her. Several of the Yi Yuan experts also knitted their eyebrows. All of them were selected experts. They could sense that someone had come to make trouble outside.

On an empty land outside the ore mine, the rain was heavier than before. Yuan Hong and Yuan Chengjun and some higher ups of the Prefecture were guarding the ore mine. Standing opposite of them was a few dozen black-clothed men. They were no doubt the experts of Huang Family.

Yan Qingcheng's expression darkened when she saw what happened. But fortunately, they had already prepared for this by bringing Yuan Hong here. Or else, they wouldn't be able to deal with the current situation.

"Huang Ying, what are you doing here in the middle of the night? You have already lost yesterday. This ore mine has nothing to do with the Huang Family anymore."

Yan Qingcheng said sharply.

"Haha! Miss Qingcheng, how could our family give up on such a great wealth so easily, right?" Huang Ying let out two laughs.

"Patriarch Huang, we, the Yi Yuan Association has never interfered with the conflicts between you and the Prefecture, but your abrupt act today is totally not putting our association in your eyes. We were the judge of yesterday's battle. The fact remains that you have lost the competition. Could it be Patriarch Huang could not accept defeat?"

Wu Chang of Yi Yuan Association spoke bluntly. The thought of Huang Family robbing the ore mine in this way had never crossed his mind. In his point of view, this Huang Ying must be out of his mind. One should know that such an act would not only offend the Prefecture directly, it would also make Yi Yuan Association their enemy. Where did the Huang Family got their audacity to confront

the two major powers?

“Elder Wu, calm down. Our family will never make Yi Yuan Association our enemy. The Prefecture has agreed to give you 20 percent of the Immortal Meta Stones. I, Huang Ying will grant you 30 percent of it. We won’t cause Yi Yuan Association any trouble. This is a matter between us and the Prefecture.” Said he.

After hearing this, Wu Cheng couldn’t help but frown. He wanted to say something more, but the words wouldn’t come out of his mouth. As a businessman, all he sought for was profits. Now that Huang Family had sent all of their powerful experts to seize the ore mine, they should play it safe by staying out of it, or else the whole scene would turn ugly and it wouldn’t bring them any benefits at all.

Chapter 1095 - The Desperate Qingcheng

“Your pretentious act is really disparaging!”

Yan Qingcheng said coldly. The others also had an angry look on their faces. It seemed like Yuan Hong did have a good foresight, or else they wouldn't be able to deal with the present situation.

“Since ancient times, the winner is always the king and the loser is the villain. As long as we destroy your Prefecture, Yan City will become Huang Family's. Who will care about the method used?”

Huang Ying chuckled, avoiding the question for his own integrity. What he wanted was the result. As long as he could succeed, he would do whatever that was needed. In this cruel and competitive Immortal World, not much moral principles existed. Eventually, people would only respect the strongest major power.

“Humph! Huang Ying, don't think that our Prefecture is a fragile target which you can easily oppress. Even if you have brought all the experts of your family here for a raid, so what? My dad will be here soon.”

Yan Qingcheng snorted coldly. She didn't fear Huang Family's forces as Yuan Hong was with them. She knew that this uncle, a true Heaven Immortal expert was enough to confront almost all things.

“Uncle Yuan, quickly send the distress signal back to my father. Ask him to bring reinforcements now. Since Huang Family wants to declare war against us, we will gladly accept it.” Yan Qingcheng looked over at Yuan Hong.

“I have already sent the distress signal. I believe that City Lord will be here soon. Big Miss, I'm sorry.” Yuan Hong said abruptly.

Yan Qingcheng was stunned as she couldn't grasp what Yuan Hong was trying to say. What did Yuan Hong mean by saying he was sorry while they were confronting a large group of enemy

forces? She raised her head and saw the blood-red eyes of Yuan Hong.

“Uncle Yuan, you...” Yan Qingcheng yelled.

Pa!

In an instant, Yuan Hong struck out an energy seal and wrapped it around Yan Qingcheng. Her facial expression changed drastically. She couldn't have thought that Yuan Hong would attack her at this critical juncture. She resisted it with all of her might, but the gap between them was just too great.

Barf!

Yan Qingcheng spurted out a mouthful of blood. Her mouth was pale white. She had already been taken control by Yuan Hong's energy strike, making her immobile.

“Yuan Hong, what are you doing?”

“Dammit! What's happening? Why did Yuan Hong attack Big Miss?”

“Elder Yuan, what the hell are you doing? Why did you attack Big Miss?”

.....

Everyone in the Prefecture's camp was shocked. None of them had imagined that this thing would happen. In their point of view, Yuan Hong was their biggest reliance. They thought that as long as Yuan Hong was here to defend against Huang Family's forces, it would be enough for them to hold until the City Lord arrived here. However, the thing that happened now confused all of them.

“Yan Qingcheng, do you think that the Prefecture could still stand a chance?”

Huang Ying said contemptuously.

This sudden development also shocked all the experts of Yi Yuan Association. By now, even an idiot could tell what was happening.

Yuan Hong has already joined Huang Family and had turned against the Prefecture. It explained why Huang Family had the audacity to raid the ore mine at this hour.

No one would have thought that Yuan Hong would betray the Prefecture because they knew that Yuan Hong and Yan Dongliu had been together for so many years. They thought that it would be impossible for either of them to turn against each other. However, this impossibility had just happened now, catching everyone by surprise.

“Uncle Yuan, you.....”

Yan Qingcheng stared at Yuan Hong and shook her head helplessly. She couldn't believe that this was the real thing. That sadness and despair that she was feeling right now was beyond anyone's comprehension. She felt that her heart was slowly being sliced off by a knife upon witnessing that their most trusted man had betrayed them all.

“Qingcheng, you should put the blame on you and your father. Ever since that Jiang Chen arrived at the Prefecture, all of your attention has been placed on him. We, father and son ended up being ignored despite all the contributions and dedications we have given to the Prefecture. So, we found another pathway ourselves. As soon as Yan Dongliu is killed, the Prefecture will be ours. And you, Qingcheng, as long as you serve me well, I will ensure you good treatment from then on.”

Yuan Chengjun said with a smile, finally revealing much his malevolent side.

“Utterly shameless. I'm truly wrong about you, Yuan Chengjun.”

Yan Qingcheng looked over at Yuan Chengjun. She had always regarded him as her brother. The relationship between them started since young as they grew up together. Such relationship wasn't comparable to any ordinary relationship; her eyes were currently filled with absolute hatred.

Yuan Chengjun had betrayed them and conspired with the enemy. This aspect alone made the difference between him and Jiang Chen a hundred thousand miles wide. Back when Jiang Chen was coerced by Huang Xiong, instead of joining them, he went straight to Han Village all by himself to save the villagers. This was what made him a true man.

“Damn you, Yuan Hong, Yuan Chengjun! Both of you surely don’t know what shamelessness is. The City Lord has trusted you two so much, but all he got in return is your revolting betrayal.”

An elder swore angrily. His eyes had already turned bloodshot. The others also reacted the same way. They were supposed to harvest the Immortal Meta Stones happily, and thought that they would be safe with a Heaven Immortal expert guarding them. To their surprise, this Heaven Immortal senior and his son were just pure jackals that devour humans without spitting out the bones.

Swoosh!

As soon as the old man’s voice faded, a cold light appeared in front of him all of a sudden, stabbing his heart. The attacker was Yuan Chengjun, and the thing that impaled the elder’s heart was his sword.

Barf!

The elder spewed out a mouthful of blood, his body was trembling and twitching uncontrollably. His blood-red eyes that were filled with hatred and despair were glaring at Yuan Chengjung. The elder wasn’t able to die in peace.

“This is the outcome of insulting my dad.”

Yuan Chengjun pulled out his sword and the elder fell to the ground. The elder was a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. He wasn’t supposed to be killed by Yuan Chengjun, but because he was clouded by his emotions just now and didn’t think that Yuan Chengjun would attack him, he was caught off guard when Yuan

Chengjun launched his strike.

“Yuan Chengjun, you beast!”

Yan Qingcheng got emotional when she saw that an elder of her Prefecture died in Yuan Chengjun’s hands. She wouldn’t be as emotional if the elder died fighting against Huang Family. She knew that such death was an absolute humiliation to the elder. In other words, the elder wasn’t able to pass away in peace.

Every expert of Yi Yuan Association was just looking at the scene quietly. None of them spoke a word, this scene was not related to them anymore.

On the other hand, the experts of Huang Family felt exhilarated, seeing the internal killing in the Prefecture’s camp, it felt way much better than killing the people of the Prefecture with their own hands.

“Humph! This is what happens to those who are stubborn. For the rest of you, I will give you a chance to join us now. Other than that, your outcome will be just like his.”

Yuan Chengjun gazed sharply at the remaining higher ups of the Prefecture.

Yan Qingcheng was in total despair right now. What was left in her eyes was hopelessness and tears. Despite knowing these two men for a long time, she now felt unfamiliar with them. At this moment, she had finally understood why people say that a human mind was difficult to predict.

She knew that the Prefecture was finished. Everything would be over today. Yuan Hong has already joined Huang Family, which made them have a total of three Heaven Immortal experts, leaving only Yan Dongliu alone in the Prefecture. How could the City Lord stand against three of them? She now prayed that her father and Jiang Chen wouldn’t appear here because that would be no different than going to hell.

Chapter 1096 - Blood Rain

Huang Family's motive was obvious. They had come today not only to seize control of the ore mine, but also to eliminate Yan Dongliu and the forces of Prefecture, and Jiang Chen. Yan Qingcheng knew that Huang Family's hatred for Jiang Chen was even greater than the hatred they had for the Prefecture.

“Bah! Ungrateful son of a b*tch! The Prefecture has wasted so much resources on the two of you for all these years. Even if I die today, I'll make sure that you'll die along with me.”

A passionate elder swore loudly at Yuan Chengjun, then lunged at him with his Immortal Weapon. This elder was also a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. He launched a full-fledged attack even if it would cost him his life as well. It seemed like the elder had already lost hope, but was unwilling to die in vain. So, he would rather sacrifice himself to destroy one of them.

However, the elder clearly wouldn't succeed in such a situation. Even if he had the ability to use his death to destroy Yuan Chengjun, Yuan Hong wouldn't just stand there and watch his son being killed.

Bang!

An incomparably powerful Qi wave surged out of his body like a sharp blade, landing heavily on the elder's body. The attack came from Yuan Hong. The elder couldn't resist it at all as the two of them were not on the same level. The elder was sent flying by the attack. Everyone could see the deep dent in his chest. It had to be a very serious injury. Although it wasn't enough to take his life, it had completely incapacitated the elder.

At this moment, Yuan Chengjun struck like a lightning. The sword was swiped, severing the elder's head off the body. Blood gushed out like a fountain, turning the whole rainy scene cruel and bloody

Yuan Chengjun was too violent. He had already become the demon in the darkness in the eyes of the Prefecture. The elder that he had just killed was the senior that had cradled him before when he was still young, but he just slaughtered that elder like a sheep, absolutely merciless.

Looking at the two dead experts, Yan Qingcheng was in total despair. She couldn't help but shed tears. She now understood that this was the reason that Yuan Hong, a person who rarely comes out of the Prefecture come along with her.

It turned out that Yuan Chengjun had already been plotting against Jiang Chen, colluding with Huang Family. If it wasn't because of her trust in Jiang Chen, she would've misunderstood Jiang Chen long ago and made the wrong call.

The atmosphere was incomparably stifling. The droplets of rain suddenly dropped in temperature all of a sudden, making every expert of the Prefecture shiver. They were trapped like those helpless wild animals. They now felt angry and afraid, Yuan Chengjun was ruthless despite them being his respectable seniors in the past. No one wanted to die, death was a terrible thing to anyone.

In the Prefecture, Yan Dongliu has just received the distress signal sent by Yuan Hong. He acted immediately by assembling all the experts including Jiang Chen. Today was going to be a crucial life-or-death battle between them and Huang Family. So they naturally needed to use all the forces that they had in this fight.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen was an expert that was even scarier than an ordinary half-step Heaven Immortal expert. Firstly, he had an insane combat strength that could kill a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, secondly, he had the ability to fly which would be very helpful to their forces.

“What happened, City Lord?”

Someone asked.

“I just received the signal from brother Yuan that Huang Family was attacking the ore mine in the middle of the night, seemingly wanting to seize control of the ore mine. We have to act now. I’m afraid brother Yuan won’t be able to fight them for so long.”

Said Yan Dongliu grimly.

“Dammit! I knew that Huang Family will never let this matter go. I have never thought that they would make such a move so quickly. Fortunately, Elder Yuan followed the group. Or else, Big Miss will be in real danger.”

“Huang Family is going too far with this. They couldn’t accept the defeat. However, our Prefecture isn’t an enemy they easily offend. Tonight’s going to be a life-and-death battle, we’ll see who’s stronger.”

.....

Every expert of the Prefecture was filled with bursting Qi and killing intent. The victory of yesterday’s battle had fueled their fighting spirit tremendously.

However, they wouldn’t have thought that the scenario that they were about to face would be so hard.

“Both the Yuan father and son have gone together?” Jiang Chen asked with a frown.

“That’s right. If Yuan Hong hasn’t gone together with them, they won’t be able to handle the attack of the Huang Family.” Said Yan Dongliu.

“This is bad. I’m afraid that both of them have already joined Huang Family. Qingcheng must be in grave danger now.”

Jiang Chen’s expression changed drastically. The situation was pretty obvious to Jiang Chen. Given Yuan Hong’s status, he would never take the initiative to guard the ore mine. Moreover, Huang Family had launched their attack on the first day they started the mining operation, which seemed too much of a coincidence. Also,

he was already suspicious of Yuan Chengjun's defeat to Huang Haoifei yesterday. The only explanation for these incidents was that both the father and son had already been conspiring with Huang Family without the Prefecture's knowledge.

Perhaps the people of the Prefecture trusted the father and son more than they Jiang Chen trusted. Besides, there was a spy in the Prefecture. He had already been observing the strange behavior of Yuan Chengjun and had regarded him as an enemy long ago.

“What did you say? Alchemist Jiang, is this a joke?”

Yan Dongliu's expression darkened. He and Yuan Hong had been through life and death challenges. What Jiang Chen said really displeased him.

“I'm not in the mood to joke around with you all. If I were you, I will immediately rush to the ore mine, otherwise, it will be too late.”

Said Jiang Chen coldly, then he fluttered and propelled himself towards the direction of the ore mine with the Flaming Wings.

Yan Dongliu didn't dare delay any longer, he immediately followed behind Jiang Chen. The rest of the higher ups also moved at their full speed towards their destination.

In fact, Jiang Chen was really not interested in the feud between Huang Family and the Prefecture from the very beginning, but as the matter developed, he was involuntarily sucked into such a storm. Plus, after learning the incidents about Ouyang He and Tian Muyun, he despised the act of betrayal even more. Due to him being incapable of taking revenge on Tian Muyun, he would express all of his anger on the father and son.

In addition, Yan Qingcheng was likely to be in real danger now. Although he didn't have the thought of having a relationship with this girl who admired him a lot, he would never watch her fall into the wrong hands.

On the way, Yan Dongliu and the other experts' expression were turning incomparably grim, making the atmosphere around extremely suffocating. What Jiang Chen said had baffled them because they would never believe that Yuan Hong would betray them. If what Jiang Chen said was true, the Prefecture would certainly plunge into an unprecedented and irrecoverable crisis.

The rain around the ore mine was heavier than the other palaces. Huang Family and Yuan Hong were standing together. A dozen corpses laid in front of them in a disordered way. The droplets of rain were incessantly beating the dead bodies. Blood was flowing everywhere, making the whole scene look gruesome and scary.

That was the scene that Yan Dongliu and the others saw when they reached the ore mine.

Chapter 1097 - The Extreme Fury

Yan Dongliu's heart was pounding hard when he saw the scene ahead. Not just him, but also all the experts of the Prefecture. The bodies that laid on the ground were the higher ups of the Prefecture. They were once their life-and-death brothers. Now, all of them were lying dead in the icy cold night, letting the rain lash their bodies.

What disappointed them more was seeing Yuan Hong and Huang Ying standing side by side, completely indifferent about the bodies that laid on the ground. Any fool would be able to guess what had happened and the connection between Huang Ying and Yuan Hong.

Many of them darted Jiang Chen a glance, fully impressed by his deduction ability. Nevertheless, the current scene was something that they didn't wish to see, because it signified the end of the Prefecture.

Yan Dongliu could not accept the truth. It was a huge psychological blow to him.

“Brother Yuan, you-you know what are you doing?”

Yan Dongliu spoke. Everyone could tell that his voice was quivering.

Yuan Hong's expression seemed unnatural and slightly guilty as he faced Yan Dongliu. Although he had contributed a lot to the Prefecture, he knew that the City Lord had treated him very well, but there was no turning back after what he had done now.

“Brother Yan, everyone can make their own choices. I have already made mine and will never regret it. I have agreed with Huang Patriarch that as long as you cripple your cultivation, we will spare your life. Treat this as a favor for the brotherhood that we had in the past.”

Yuan Hong said expressionlessly.

Barf!

Yan Dongliu's body shuddered in anger, then he spurted out a mouthful of blood. His face turned pale. This was because the anger had overwhelmed his mind. What Yuan Hong said pierced his heart with a blade, making his heart bleed.

"Not good, City Lord's is overwhelmed by his anger. This will severely affect him."

Someone exclaimed. Yan Dongliu couldn't accept what he was seeing. He couldn't accept that his own life-and-death brother would betray him. It was an unimaginable psychological blow, combining anger and sadness together. It affected his heart, causing him not being able to rotate the Immortal Qi properly. With his current condition, he wouldn't stand a chance against his opponent.

"Ai!"

Seeing what happened to Yan Dongliu, Jiang Chen couldn't help but sigh and shook his head. Yan Dongliu must be a person who valued friendship and love, which explained why he couldn't accept what was happening now. He had never taken any precautions against Yuan Hong, if he had done so, he wouldn't be facing today's such an incident now.

He was afraid that the current Yan Dongliu was facing the same situation as Ouyang He. Although he had never experienced such an incident before, he could understand them. If Han Yan and Tyrant betrayed him like those pricks one day, he swore that he wouldn't feel very pleasant.

Of course, Han Yan and Tyrant wouldn't do such a thing to him. The bond between them was created out of ordeals and trials.

"Yuan Hong, I, Yan Dongliu have never treated you badly and had always regarded you as my true blood brother. I can't

understand why you did this to me.”

Yan Dongliu’s expression turned colder. Even if this scene was unacceptable, he was already here. He had to accept it whether he liked it or not.

“Brother Yan, I don’t have anything else to say on that. The outcome will still be the same. I hope that you can listen to me so that you can stay alive.” Said Yuan Hong coldly.

“Yan Dongliu, I have given brother Yuan face today. As long as you cripple your cultivation, I will spare your life. After that, you can go back to live like a normal man. What do you say?”

Huang Ying showed a face of arrogance. The current scene was just like what he expected. Everything was under his control. Now that Yan Dongliu had been affected by anger, his combat strength would be enormously reduced as well. So it would be impossible for him to fight them, let alone battling against three Heaven Immortal experts.

“Bullsh*it. I, Yan Dongliu will never lower my head to you lot even if that means making the ultimate sacrifice. It won’t be easy for you lot to kill me either.”

Yan Dongliu raged. Both of his eyes turned red. Since Yuan Hong had totally ignored their brotherly relationship, he shouldn’t dwell on it anymore.

“Yan Dongliu, it’s very simple for you to die. But I wonder if your underlings are also willing to die along with you. I’ll give you all a chance now. Whoever wants can join my side now. Otherwise, all of you will have to die.”

Huang Ying’s eyes swept across those experts standing beside Yan Dongliu. All of them were the higher ups of the Prefecture.

“Everyone has the right to choose. I won’t force any of you. You can choose to join Huang Family.” Said Yan Dongliu.

“City Lord, I, Lao Wang isn’t an ungrateful person. The

Prefecture has treated me very well all these years. I won't be able to do what those betrayers did. Today, I'm willing to vanish along with the Prefecture."

"That's right. If we all join Huang Family today, we are no different than the heartless father and son. I might as well die if I'm forced to betray the Prefecture."

"City Lord, we won't join the enemy's side. Even if today's going to be the last fight of our lives, we won't feel that our deaths will be in vain."

.....

Each and every expert of the Prefecture expressed their resoluteness and righteousness. This meant that Yan Dongliu had been a very good man, because even in the face of such a desperate situation, so many of them still insisted on following him.

Nevertheless, these people weren't fools. They were crystal clear about the situation ahead. Putting aside the bonds that they had with the Prefecture, even if they joined Huang Family now, given the personality of Huang Ying and Yuan Hong, they would certainly not be treated well. So, they would rather die proudly than live like a dog in Huang Family for the rest of their lives.

"Good, it seems like I, Yan Dongliu isn't wrong in picking people."

Yan Dongliu's Qi fluctuated, but his expression changed drastically because he didn't see any trace of Yan Qingcheng in the enemy's camp.

"Yuan Hong, where's Qingcheng? What have you done to her?" Yan Dongliu shouted loudly.

"Haha! Don't worry Yan Dongliu. Chengjun will never do anything to harm miss Qingcheng. I'm afraid that two of them are having a good time now." Laughed Huang Ying loudly.

Barf!

After hearing this, Yan Dongliu spurted another mouthful of blood and scolded. “You animal! If something were to happen to Qingcheng, I’ll haunt you all when I become a ghost.”

Yan Dongliu’s emotion had gone out of control. Yan Qingcheng was his flesh. He knew that Yuan Chengjun had been admiring his daughter for a long time, but if his daughter was ruined by that prick, he feared that his daughter wouldn’t have the courage to continue living her life.

“Haha! Yan Dongliu, you had never expected to have such a day right? I’m quite pleased to see how sad you are right now.”

Huang Ying burst into laughter again. He hadn’t attacked yet because he wanted to see Yan Dongliu’s melancholic look. To him, seeing that kind of look on his enemy’s face was an enjoyment.

However, no one noticed that the Jiang Chen, who had been standing behind Yan Dongliu was already gone. Not even the expert of the Prefecture noticed, it was as if Jiang Chen had never appeared here.

Inside the ore mine was another scene. Yan Qingcheng’s cultivation base had been sealed by Yuan Hong. She was under the full control of Yuan Chengjun now, like a bird in the cage.

Chapter 1098 – I Won't Be Lenient to Kill You

“Sister Qingcheng, as long as you agree to marry me, I will make sure that no one will bully you in the future. I will love you dearly.”

Yuang Chengjun was staring at the mournful-looking Yan Qingcheng and spoke with a very gentle smile.

“Bah! You animal! My father and I have been blind. Even if I, Yan Qingcheng die today, I won't marry a beast like you.”

Yan Qingcheng was disgusted by Yuan Chengjun's face. That was a hatred that was stirred from the bottom of her heart. She had never hated someone so much.

“Humph! Yan Qingchen, what's so good about that Jiang Chen. He isn't even comparable to me. We have grown up together. You should know my feelings for you. Are you telling me that I'm inferior to that Jiang Chen who had just arrived here several days ago?”

Yuan Chengjun retorted angrily at Yan Qingcheng, he felt that his pride was hurt and was insulted severely. How could he, an extraordinary genius be inferior to Jiang Chen? Besides, Yan Qingcheng treated this new guy so well, which made him feel very unpleasant. The most depressing thing that he felt was not having the chance to kill Jiang Chen earlier on.

“You betrayer! How dare you compare yourself with Big Brother Jiang! Big Brother Jiang is a man with love and righteousness. You are merely a shameless little person. Comparing you to Big Brother Jiang will only be an insult to Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng said with a cold smile. Although her cultivation had been sealed and she was powerless now, she still had her arrogance with her. She knew that the Prefecture was going to be finished soon. Thus, her life or death didn't matter anymore.

“Brother Yuan, aren’t you being too inferior? It’s has been so long, can’t you even handle a woman?”

A mocking sound was heard from behind. Two people appeared, they were Huang Haoifei and Huang Haoming. They decided to come in here to watch a good show, but had never thought that Yuan Chengjun couldn’t even get rid of a woman.

“Brother Yuan, why are you wasting so many words on her? Now that Yan Qingcheng is under your full control. You can do whatever you want. As long as you want it, she will become your woman any time.” Said Huang Haoming complacently.

Yuan Chengjun got angrier after being teased by these Huang brothers. His eyes went bloodshot, glaring at the beautiful and delicate body of Yan Qingcheng. The lasciviousness was stirring inside of him. Erotic expression began to glow in his eyes.

“You! What do you want to do?!”

Yan Qingcheng was frightened and made two steps backwards. Both of her arms were hugging her shoulders insecurely.

“Qingcheng, since you refused to obey me, don’t blame me for using force. You will become Yuan Chengjun’s woman.”

Yuan Chengjun said, taking another step forward and grabbing Yan Qingcheng’s shoulder, tearing off a side of her sleeve, revealing her jade-white skin. Yuan Chengjun’s sexual desired was stirred up to an uncontrollable state. At this time, he had turned into a starved wolf and Yan Qingcheng was his prey.

“Ah.....”

Yan Qingcheng yelped. No matter how talented or how composed she was, she had never encountered such an incident before. She was in total disorder now, like an injured rabbit trying to find a place to hide but couldn’t do so.

“Yuan Chengjun, get your hands off of me!” Yan Qingcheng panicked.

“Didn’t you like Big Brother Jiang very much? Too bad, your Big Brother Jiang won’t come and save you now.” Yuan Chengjun face had a sneer.

“Sorry, I’m already here.”

As soon as Yuan Chengjun’s voice faded, another voice sounded from behind. Everyone turned and saw a white-clothed youth that came out of nowhere, standing at a close distance. If it wasn’t Jiang Chen, who else could it be?

“Jiang Chen!”

The Huang brothers exclaimed, not believing their own eyes. One should know that there were three Heaven Immortal experts standing outside. Even if Jiang Chen had very amazing ability, he wouldn’t be able to sneak through them unnoticeably.

“Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng couldn’t help but shed tears when she saw Jiang Chen.

“Release Qingcheng now, or else you will die miserably!”

Jiang Chen ignored the Huang brothers and gazed at Yuan Chengjun. At the same time, he turned into his dragon form. Given his current cultivation base, he wouldn’t need this form to kill them, but things were getting critical outside, he didn’t want to waste any time.

“How did you come in?” Asked Yuan Chengjun.

“No one will be able to stop me if I want to come in.” Said Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, what’s with the arrogance? You will only die for showing up today. As long as you dare to attack here, it will arouse the attention of everyone outside. At that time, you will be trapped.”

Huang Haoifei said coldly. As a matter of fact, the three of them

felt an inexplicable sense of fear when they saw Jiang Chen's dragon form. They had seen Jiang Chen's scariness before. The picture of Huang Haoran's death was still lingering in their minds.

"This place has already been completely sealed by my domain. The three of you will die for sure. Not even the Gods can save you now."

Said Jiang Chen. His body flashed and appeared between Huang Haoifei and Huang Haoming, he then clamped both of their necks with his sharp dragon claw in lightning speed.

Both of their expressions changed drastically. At this instant, they could feel a trace of death Qi from him, it was the unprecedented threat of death.

"You, you have advanced again?"

Huang Haoifei said with difficulty. He could tell that the current Jiang Chen was even more powerful than the time he fought Huang Haoran. Fighting Jiang Chen with their present cultivation would only end up them being dead. They wouldn't have the room to resist at all.

Ka Cha!

Jiang Chen didn't want to continue this nonsense with them. With the exertion of force in his hands, both necks were snapped by his claws, cutting away their life force. After that, he threw them aside without even looking at them, and strode towards Yuan Chengjun.

Both Huang brothers were snapped to death before they could even launch a strike at Jiang Chen. They died like ants being crushed by a mere finger, causing Yuan Chengjun's goosebumps to rise. An unprecedented fear was stirred in his heart. He had never felt death being as close as now.

"Big Brother Jiang."

Yan Qingcheng took the advantage of Yuan CHengjun being in a

daze and ran towards Jiang Chen. She looked at Jiang Chen with an aggrieved face, but her heart was overflowing with happiness. Being saved by the man she loved was the greatest happiness. At the moment, she had forgotten all the danger that she was in. Her eyes were now occupied by this moderately tall man who provided her with a sense of security every time.

Seeing Yan Qingcheng running towards Jiang Chen, it made Yuan Chengjun even more disappointed. If he focused on controlling Yan Qingcheng just now, he would've been able to blackmail Jiang Chen with her. But now, nothing was left. It would be an easy task for Jiang Chen to end his life now.

“Are you alright?”

Jiang Chen smiled at Yan Qingcheng, then took out a robe and draped it over her shoulder.

“I’m alright.”

Yan Qingcheng shook her head hard. She shivered slightly, thinking about the scene just now. If Jiang Chen didn’t appear on time, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Jiang Chen raised his head and looked over at Yuan Chengjun, his eyes were filled with distaste. “For someone like you, there are no other words to describe you other than revolting. Therefore, I will never be lenient when it comes to killing people like you.”

Chapter 1099 – The Biggest Unforeseen Event

Sensing the killing intent from Jiang Chen, Yuan Chengjun's face turned uglier. Despite his arrogance, he knew that he was definitely no match for Jiang Chen. He had seen how the Huang brothers died under Jiang Chen's hands, which made him shiver uncontrollably.

“Jiang Chen, you can't kill me. As long as I make a shout, my dad will hear me and you will be finished.”

Yuan Chengjun feigned, sounding brave. He was pretty confident in his dad. He believed that Jiang Chen would face the same outcome as long his dad was here, however, he had overlooked one point – how the hell did Jiang Chen slipped through the three Heaven Immortal experts and got into the ore mine without arousing their notice?

“Very well. Go ahead and shout. Don't say that I didn't give you a chance.”

Jiang Chen shrugged and said indifferently.

His confidence made Yuan Chengjun's heart pound faster. The confident Jiang Chen got, the terrified he felt, Jiang Chen had already become a demonic being in his eyes.

“Dad, dad.....”

Yuan Chengjun used all of his might to shout. Although he didn't know whether Yuan Hong would be able to hear him, there was nothing else he could do besides shouting. He couldn't fight Jiang Chen because he had already lost all of his courage.

A shout from a late Earth Immortal expert was supposed to be an ear-splitting sound that even people from a hundred miles away could hear it. However, no movement was detected outside even when Yuan Chengjun started to lose his voice.

This ore mine had already been fully sealed by Jiang Chen. Yuan Chengjun had already fallen into Jiang Chen's Five Elemental Power Spheres, preventing his voices from getting out regardless of how hard he shouted.

"Don't-don't kill me Jiang Chen."

Yuan Chengjun started to plead for mercy. He finally understood that Jiang Chen's ability was more than he could handle. He was like an ant that could be crushed any time.

Looking at Yuan Chengjun's timid and shaky appearance, Yan Qingcheng's disgust for him intensified. A man like him possessed no spirit and dignity at all. Comparing him to Jiang Chen was like day and night.

"You can't live. Your dad as well. I will kill you in front of your dad, then kill your dad. So that you two will know that there's no good end for traitors."

Said Jiang Chen as he strode towards Yuan Chengjun. Every step he made trembled Yuan Chengjun's heart, like a heavy hammer pounding on his chest.

"I'll go all out with you, Jiang Chen!"

Watching Jiang Chen getting closer to him, despair was plastered all over his face. Then all of a sudden, he turned frenzied, drew his sword and slashed at Jiang Chen's direction.

Pa!

Jiang Chen sent a casual slap to meet the sword, hurling the sword away from Yuan Chengjun's hand. Then, he strode forward and grabbed Yuan Chengjun in the neck and lifted him up. Yuan Chengjun struggled uncontrollably in the air, like a small chick that was totally powerless and defenseless.

"Big Brother Jiang, you are amazing!"

Yan Qingcheng showed a smile at last, her gaze was full of

admiration.

“Don’t worry. The Prefecture will be fine. After tonight, the Prefecture will dominate the whole Yan City.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Yan Qingcheng. After that, he walked out of the ore mine with Yuan Chengjun on his hand. Yan Qingcheng was a smart person. She dragged the corpses of the Huang brothers with her hands and followed Jiang Chen. Today was supposed to be the last night of the Prefecture, and she had been in the state of despair, however, by following behind Jiang Chen, hope started to glow in her mind. Although she was still clueless how Jiang Chen would deal with the three Heaven Immortal experts, Jiang Chen’s presence made her feel that Heaven Immortal experts weren’t as scary anymore.

Outside, it was still a desperate scene. All the experts of the Prefecture had virtually lost their hopes. Yan Dongliu was overwhelmed with anger, causing his combat power to drop significantly. Huang Ying wouldn’t delay any longer. He was about to launch an attack on them at any second.

“Everyone in the Prefecture, listen closely. I will give you all one last chance. Anyone who wants to live should come and join us now. Otherwise, all of you will have to die.”

Huang Ying’s body was enshrouded with killing intent. He was giving his enemy one last chance. If they didn’t cherish this opportunity, he would launch an all-out attack on them, eradicating them once and for all.

“Beast with the surname Huang and surname Yuan, do whatever you want! It’s going to be death anyway.”

Someone in the Prefecture bellowed. Their faces were brimming with anger and resoluteness. It seemed like none of them wanted to leave here alive.

“Alright. Since you all are being so stubborn, don’t blame me for

being ruthless. Listen up, people, kill them all.” Huang Ying gave the decisive order.

“I don’t think any one of them will die today.”

Just after Huang Ying’s voice faded, another voice sounded from the ore mine. All of them turned and saw Jiang Chen walking out of the ore mine, carrying Yuan Chengjun on his hand, followed by Yan Qingcheng who was hauling two bodies.

Thud! Thud!

Yan Qingcheng hurled the bodies to Huang Ying’s direction.

“Qingcheng?”

Yan Dongliu couldn’t help but feel excited upon seeing his daughter still in one piece.

An incident like this was totally unexpected, particularly the death of the Huang brothers.

“Fei Er, Ming Er.”

The higher ups of the Huang Family exclaimed. Looking at the two great geniuses of their family lying on the ground unmoving, it gave them the urge to spurt out blood. Then, they shifted their gaze to Jiang Chen. It went without saying that the two brother’s death was caused by Jiang Chen, but what shocked them more was how did Jiang Chen slip through their line of sight and got into the ore mine. This ought to be an impossible task.

“It’s Alchemist Jiang, this is great.”

“Master Jiang surely is powerful. He was able to sneak into the mine unnoticeably and killed the two great geniuses of Huang Family. Haha! This is exhilarating, truly exhilarating!”

“Amazing! It seems like Master Jiang’s means are way beyond our imaginations.”

.....

Everyone in the Prefecture's camp was utterly impressed by Jiang Chen. Moments ago, they were too tense. They didn't even notice that Jiang Chen had left their sight.

"Jiang Chen, were you the one who killed them?"

Huang Ying gritted his teeth and said. His body seemed to be trembling due to his surging anger.

"Of course, killing them was like slaughtering chickens."

Answered Jiang Chen flatly.

"Save me, dad."

The way Yuan Chengjun looked at his own dad was like looking at a life-saving straw, his life had already fallen completely under Jiang Chen's control. The only person who could save him now was Yuan Hong. If his own dad couldn't even do that, he would no doubt end up just like the Huang brothers. He would never believe that Jiang Chen would be so kind to spare his life.

Damn! How did this bastard got into the the ore mine?

Yuan Hong's expression turned incomparably unpleasant all of a sudden. Yuan Chengjun was his own son. If Yuan Chengjun died, anyone could imagine how his father would feel. Everyone in the scene had totally overlooked Jiang Chen's existence, thinking that this young man wasn't worth paying attention to, however, none of them thought that this young man would bring the greatest change to this incident.

Chapter 1100 – Completely Dumbfounded

No one on the scene was able to think that there would be such a great turnaround for this crisis. The supposedly calm and predictable scene had suddenly turned somewhat tensed. Whether it was Huang Family or Yuan Hong, none of them had included Jiang Chen in their plans, which explained why they didn't notice Jiang Chen's movement.

“Jiang Chen, release my child.” Said Yuan Hong grimly.

“Release him? Do you think that's possible? For a father and son like you two, the only outcome for you is death. You may think that I'm using Yuan Chengjun to blackmail you? Well, you are thinking too much about that. When I decided to deal with you, I won't need any blackmailing. Otherwise, I wouldn't have killed those two bastards, they were worth more than your son. The reason that I haven't killed Yuan Chengjun yet is that I want you to watch him die. I want you to feel the agony and know the price and outcome for betraying your own people.”

Every word that Jiang Chen said was like a blade stabbing at his heart.

“You dare?”

Yuan Hong's Qi fluctuated. It seemed like he was about to lunge forward at any second, however, the fact that his son was still in Jiang Chen's hand made him hesitate. He still believed that Jiang Chen would never kill his son. Yuan Chengjun must be the biggest trump card of the Prefecture right now. If Jiang Chen killed this only hostage, the Prefecture would lose any right to bargain with them, and the thing that would await them was their stormy attack.

In fact it wasn't just Yuan Hong that didn't believe that Jiang Chen would really kill Yuan Chengjun, but also the people of Prefecture. After all, Yuan Chengjun could still be used to force

Yuan Hong into submission.

“Humph!”

However, Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly, then he exerted force in his palm. There was only the sound of a bang and Yuan Chengjun was killed by a single palm strike before he could even let out a wail. Yuan Chengjun’s head was smashed into pieces, blood was gushing out from it. The dead body was then thrown like a trash to Yuan Hong’s feet.

Hiss!

The scene forced everyone to suck in a breath of cold air. No one thought that Jiang Chen would be so vicious, and be so decisive in killing. It was brutal, cruel and domineering. His confidence had shaken the spirit of the people of the Prefecture. They now started to gain some understanding about Jiang Chen. This young man might seem harmless during normal days, but when it came to killing, he would never even blink once. Moreover, Jiang Chen was still able to remain calm and composed in every critical situation and always created miracles. So, they all hoped that he could continue creating miracles for them.

“Chengjun.”

Yuan Hong roared in pain. Both of his eyes were stained with blood. His hands were trembling uncontrollably as he tried to touch his son’s body, however, he couldn’t muster the courage to do so. Then, a burst of anger rushed out of his body.

“I will kill you, Jiang Chen!”

Yuan Hong turned into a light ray and lunged at Jiang Chen at lightning speed.

“This damned bastard! All three geniuses of our family were killed by him. Let’s attack together! We will shred him into a million pieces!”

Huang Ying was also filled with fury. The death of his son made

him almost lose his sense. The same thing happened to Huang Second whose son, Huang Haoran had died under Jiang Chen's hands a day ago. Whenever he saw Jiang Chen, a vengeful anger would churn inside of him, causing him to release his killing intent involuntarily. Simultaneously, all three Heaven Immortal experts lunged towards Jiang Chen's direction.

"This is bad."

Yan Dongliu knew the strength of Heaven Immortal experts. With three Heaven Immortal experts launching their attacks on Jiang Chen, he would never stand a chance. The City Lord wanted to help, but found out that it was already too late. At this moment, the people of the Prefecture turned nervous.

"Haha! Bring it on, but we shouldn't hurt any innocents."

Jiang Chen laughed, then rushed skyward as his Flaming Wings fluttered. Despite being attacked by three Heaven Immortal experts simultaneously, he still didn't put them in his eyes; it was better for them to fight in the void. Otherwise, the shockwave of the battle would cause some unintended injuries and even death to the people of the Prefecture, which he didn't wish to see.

The three of them were overwhelmed by vengeance. They didn't care what Jiang Chen was doing. They flew skywards when they saw Jiang Chen flew.

Hong Long.....

The three experts launched their most powerful attack together. The colorful energy waves lit up the entire night sky, filling the atmosphere with frightening destructive waves. Later, a large net made out of three kinds of energy charged at Jiang Cheng from above. This was a devastating attack. Any Earth Immortal who was struck by this would die for certain.

However, despite having just advanced to the early Earth Immortal realm, there was a total of 320 000 dragon marks in

Jiang Chen's body. Therefore, this attack didn't concern him at all.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.”

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time, so he attacked using the Five Element Combat Dragon Seal in his first move. Dragons of different elements, Gold, Wood, Water, and Fire sparkled at the same time. The entire void was filled with the roars of true dragons, it was as if the world had suddenly become a dragon world. Every dragon was full of boundless destructive energy, then all of them collided with the huge giant web.

Hong Long.....

The Heaven and Earth trembled. The huge collision was like a tremendous thunder. All of the destructive energy waves spread all over the void. The huge energy net was supposed to be indestructible, but under the attack of Jiang Chen's Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal, it was pulverized instantly, like a waste paper that couldn't even handle a single blow.

Deng Deng Deng!

Three experts staggered several steps back before regaining their balance.

“What?”

The three of them exclaimed and stared at the majestic-looking Jiang Chen in disbelief. The incident had slightly calmed their surging anger, restoring some of their rationality. To them, being forced back by Jiang Chen's single blow was just like a dream. They would never have thought that Jiang Chen had already reached such a powerful extent.

“My god, Master Jiang has actually become so strong! Anyone should know that those three were all early Heaven Immortal experts. Despite combining their attacks, they were still sent staggering backwards by Master Jiang's single blow! I wouldn't have believed this if I wasn't seeing this with my own eyes.”

“It’s terrifying. Truly terrifying! Is he still human? Have you all noticed that Master Jiang wasn’t even affected even after using the Forbidden Art for three consecutive battles, let alone receiving any backlash? This is literally a miracle, there is actually a Forbidden Art that can raise one’s combat power by tenfold.”

“I don’t think that Master Jiang is using a Forbidden Art. It’s some kind of transformation technique that allows him to transform any time. That explained why he wasn’t affected by it, and this is what made Master Jiang so terrifying.”

.....

The people of the Prefecture had become excited. There was no way that they wouldn’t get emotionally boosted. Jiang Chen had undoubtedly created another miracle at the most critical time and had given them hope once more.

“Haha.....”

Yan Dongliu laughed loudly. He had been ready to attack, but he never expected that Jiang Chen would be able to gain the upper hand even if it was one versus three fight. The combat strength of Jiang Chen right now made him speechless for a moment.

Yan Qingchen looked at Jiang Chen feeling more obsessed. When a person could turn the tides around and the world upside down, he would be a true hero. In her heart, Jiang Chen had already become that true and great hero that has an indomitable spirit.

“How did this brat became so powerful?”

“It seems like he has advanced to another level, early Earth Immortal realm, but even so, it should be impossible for him to fight Heaven Immortal opponents. Additionally, the three of us were sent staggering backwards altogether.”

Huang Ying and Huang Second started to scrutinized Jiang Chen once more. They wouldn’t dare be neglectful anymore.

Table of Contents

[Dragon-Marked War God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001 - The Advancement to the Fifth Grade](#)

[Chapter 1002 - Replacing the Abbot](#)

[Chapter 1003 - The Monkeys Reign when There Are No Tigers in the Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1004 - Super Powerful](#)

[Chapter 1005 - Eliminating the Eighth Grade Devil Saint](#)

[Chapter 1006 - The Sixth Level of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda](#)

[Chapter 1007 - Desolate Changyun](#)

[Chapter 1008 - Exposing the Identity](#)

[Chapter 1009 - Killing Genius Once More](#)

[Chapter 1010 - Desolate Wuleng Died As Well](#)

[Chapter 1011 - Transforming the Devil World](#)

[Chapter 1012 - The Fury of the Six Major Palaces](#)

[Chapter 1013 - The News of the Devil Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1014 - Three Elders of Narang Family](#)

[Chapter 1015 - The Thirteen Guardians of Desolate Palace](#)

[Chapter 1016 - The Supreme Devil Wand](#)

[Chapter 1017 - The Heaven Defying Fortune](#)

[Chapter 1018 - The Overpowering Second Guardian](#)

[Chapter 1019 - The Slavery Contract](#)

[Chapter 1020 - Forming Alliances](#)

[Chapter 1021 - The Variable](#)

[Chapter 1022 - Despair Befall](#)

[Chapter 1023 - The Creator of Miracle](#)

[Chapter 1024 - Second Guardian Is Getting Annoyed](#)

[Chapter 1025 - Battling the Eighth Guardian](#)

[Chapter 1026 - Unaffected](#)

[Chapter 1027 - Capture Without Killing](#)

[Chapter 1028 - The Crisis Has Just Started](#)

[Chapter 1029 - Returning To the Saint Cliff Once More](#)

[Chapter 1030 - The Seventh Fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword](#)

[Chapter 1031 - The Completion of the Heavenly Saint Sword](#)

[Chapter 1032 - The Power of Han Yan](#)

[Chapter 1033 - The Domineering Return](#)

[Chapter 1034 - A One-Sided Killing](#)
[Chapter 1035 - The Wholesale Slaughter](#)
[Chapter 1036 - The Unilateral Massacre](#)
[Chapter 1037 - Successive Deaths of the Guardians](#)
[Chapter 1038 - The Formidable Big Guardian](#)
[Chapter 1039 - The Hot-Blooded Brotherhood](#)
[Chapter 1040 - The Frenzied Man](#)
[Chapter 1041 - Jiang Chen's Fury](#)
[Chapter 1042 - The Insanity of Bloodlust](#)
[Chapter 1043 - The End of the Three Palaces](#)
[Chapter 1044 - The Prelude of Destruction](#)
[Chapter 1045 - The Moment of Life or Death](#)
[Chapter 1046 - The Immortal Mark Entering the Body](#)
[Chapter 1047 - The Ultimate Counterattack](#)
[Chapter 1048 - Being Caught in One's Own Trap](#)
[Chapter 1049 - One Slash to Take Down Fifth Ancestor](#)
[Chapter 1050 - The First Man in Saint Origin World](#)
[Chapter 1051 - New Structure](#)
[Chapter 1052 - The Ascent of Ancestor Greenlotus](#)
[Chapter 1053 - The Last Three Days](#)
[Chapter 1054 - The Son of Dragon](#)
[Chapter 1055 - The Fatal Attack](#)
[Chapter 1056 - The Terrifying Law of the World](#)
[Chapter 1057 - Han Cong](#)
[Chapter 1058 - Seeing the Poisonous Toad Again](#)
[Chapter 1059 - The Ascendant](#)
[Chapter 1060 - Yan City](#)
[Chapter 1061 - Minding Other People's Business](#)
[Chapter 1062 - The Maw of a Lion](#)
[Chapter 1063 - Yan Qingcheng](#)
[Chapter 1064 - Panic-Stricken](#)
[Chapter 1065 - Two Hundred Thousand](#)
[Chapter 1066 - The Superior Foreign Elder](#)
[Chapter 1067 - The Head Alchemist](#)
[Chapter 1068 - Yan Dongliu](#)
[Chapter 1069 - Overturning Their Perception](#)
[Chapter 1070 - The Finest Grade of Ardent Yang Pill](#)
[Chapter 1071 - A Luxurious One-Million Reward](#)
[Chapter 1072 - The Major Powers in Yan City](#)

[Chapter 1073 - Yuan Chengjun](#)
[Chapter 1074 - Not Giving Face](#)
[Chapter 1075 - The Fury](#)
[Chapter 1076 - Who Would Go First?](#)
[Chapter 1077 - Heartless Slaughtering](#)
[Chapter 1078 - Battling late Earth Immortal expert](#)
[Chapter 1079 - Killing the late Earth Immortal expert](#)
[Chapter 1080 - One Move to Subdue the Enemy](#)
[Chapter 1081 - A Heavy Price](#)
[Chapter 1082 - Huang Ying](#)
[Chapter 1083 - Competing for the Ore Mine](#)
[Chapter 1084 - Competition](#)
[Chapter 1085 - Going to a Battle](#)
[Chapter 1086 - An Intentional Act](#)
[Chapter 1087 - half-step Earth Immortal](#)
[Chapter 1088 - What's the Big Deal about Flying?](#)
[Chapter 1089 - Betrayal](#)
[Chapter 1090 - Golden Immortal Elder](#)
[Chapter 1091 - Ouyang He](#)
[Chapter 1092 - Great Luo Immortal Weapon](#)
[Chapter 1093 - The Crisis of the Prefecture](#)
[Chapter 1094 - The Late Night's Attack](#)
[Chapter 1095 - The Desperate Qingcheng](#)
[Chapter 1096 - Blood Rain](#)
[Chapter 1097 - The Extreme Fury](#)
[Chapter 1098 – I Won't Be Lenient to Kill You](#)
[Chapter 1099 – The Biggest Unforeseen Event](#)
[Chapter 1100 – Completely Dumbfounded](#)